



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

GLEIG'S SCHOOL SERIES.

*In course of publication, in 18mo. price 1s. each PART, sewed;
and in Volumes, price 2s. 6d. each, cloth,*

A New Series of Elementary Books.

Each Work (in most instances) complete in itself, price 1s.
Intended to comprise a complete Course of ELEMENTARY EDUCATION.

Projected and edited by

THE REV. G. R. GLEIG, M.A.
INSPECTOR-GENERAL OF MILITARY SCHOOLS.

Assisted by

W. M'LEOD, Head Master of the Model School, and
Master of Method in the Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea.
THOMAS TATE, Kneller Training College, Twickenham.
WILLIAM HUGHES, F.R.G.S. late Professor of Geogra-
phy in the College of Civil Engineers.
W. J. REYNOLDS, B.A. Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea.
W. J. BRODERIP, Esq. F.L.S. Z.S. &c.
And other Eminent Persons.

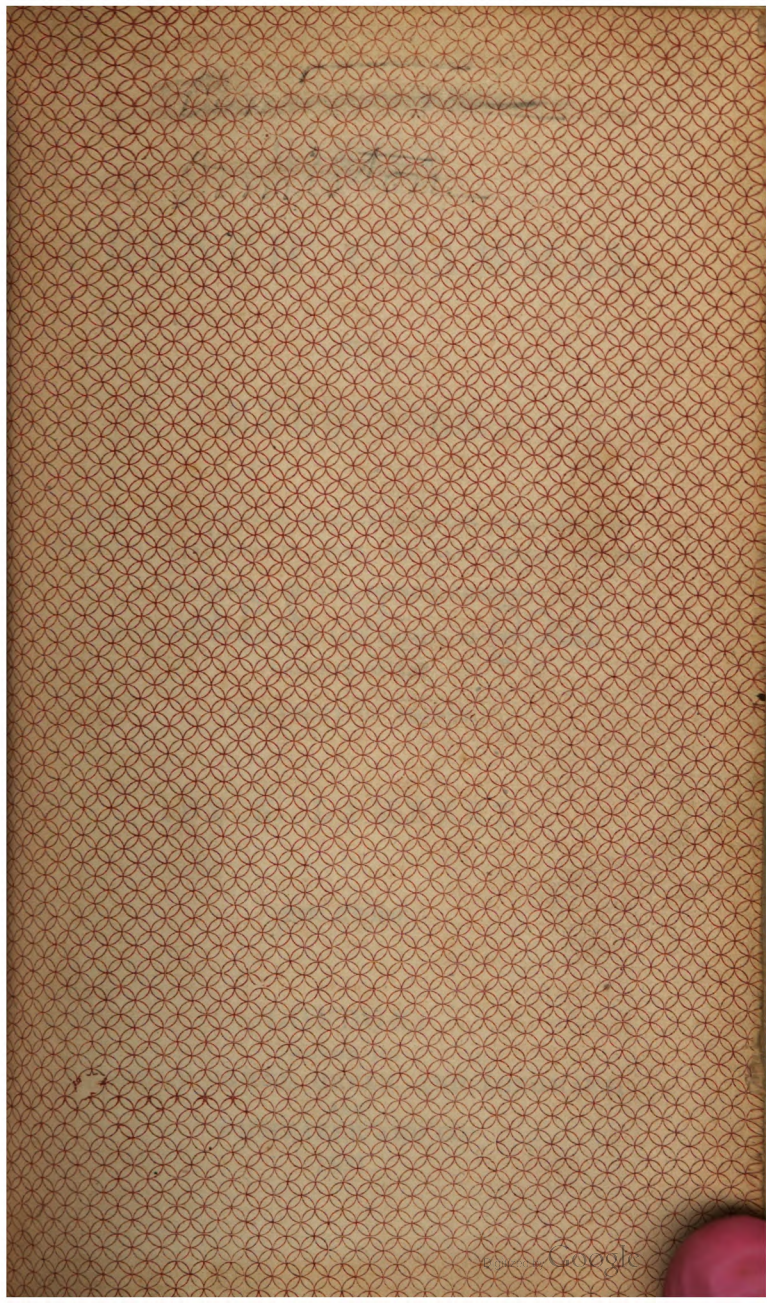
Works published.

HISTORY of ENGLAND. 2s. 6d.; or in Two Parts, 1s. each.
HISTORY of the BRITISH COLONIES. 1s.
HISTORY of BRITISH INDIA. 1s.
SACRED HISTORY. 2s. 6d.; or in Two Parts, 1s. each.
EXPLANATORY ENGLISH GRAMMAR. 1s.

Works preparing for Publication.

AGRADUATED SERIES OF COPY BOOKS	By W. M'LEOD.
ELEMENTS OF EUCLID	} By T. TATE.
MECHANICS	
HYDROSTATICS, HYDRAULICS, & PNEU-	
ASTRONOMY, AND USE OF THE GLOBES	
LIGHT, HEAT, AND MAGNETISM	
ELECTRICITY, &c.	} By W. HUGHES.
THE STEAM ENGINE	
GENERAL GEOGRAPHY	
GEOGRAPHY OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE	} By W. J. REYNOLDS.
ALGEBRA	

London: LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, and LONGMANS.



3099 e. 292

HAMEL'S
FRENCH GRAMMAR
AND
EXERCISES.

CAREFULLY CORRECTED, GREATLY IMPROVED, ENLARGED, AND
ARRANGED IN CONFORMITY WITH THE LAST EDITION OF THE
DICTIONARY OF THE FRENCH ACADEMY,
AND AGREEABLY TO THE LAST EDITION OF THE FRENCH
GRAMMAR OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF FRANCE.

BY N. LAMBERT.

New Edition.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS;
AND
WHITTAKER AND CO.
1851.

is and
it
is
is and
it
vrai
vrai
is
-ol
is and



LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODES and SHAW,
New-street-Square.

EDITOR'S PREFACE.

SINCE the appearance of the excellent, and once popular, Grammar of the learned Chambaud, no work of this kind has had so great and merited success as the Grammar of Hamel.

It would require a long preface to enumerate all its merits ; and I will merely state here, that, of all French Grammars published in England, it is decidedly the one best calculated to lead the pupil most easily and effectually from the elements up to the most intricate parts of Syntax, and to a perfect knowledge of the French tongue. The Author, keeping constantly in view the almost invariable discrepancy between the genius and the construction of the French and English languages, has framed a series of rules and examples admirably fitted to point out the peculiarities of each with accuracy and precision ; and by thus obliging the pupil to study them *analogically*, at once confirms him in the principles of his *native* tongue, and initiates him in the mysteries of the *French* idiom, more speedily and accurately than by any other plan.

After a careful examination of all the Grammars of reputation, I can honestly affirm that I know of none that can compete with Hamel's on this and every other point.

Nor is my opinion on this subject open to the suspicion of interested motives, for, in the independent exercise of my own judgment, I selected Hamel's Grammar from among

several others in repute, to make it the subject of the improvements I had in view. With all its acknowledged merits, however, the work of Hamel was far from being exempt from errors and defects; and to correct the one and supply the other has been the object of the present edition.

To a few of the leading improvements, I beg here to direct the reader's attention.

1. The Grammar and Exercises, which, in the old editions, formed two separate volumes*, have been incorporated into one; and though containing a great deal of new and important information, the works will now be sold conjointly at little more than the original price of the separate volumes.

2. The rules for Pronunciation have been greatly enlarged, and modified agreeably to the best and most recent Parisian authorities.

3. As the French like the English nouns have no change of termination to mark a variety of state in the object, the declensions, &c. have been abolished as unnecessary, and as not being recognised by the French Academy and the University of France.

4. The verbs have been thoroughly revised, increased, and arranged in four conjugations, in conformity with the Grammar of the University of France.

5. The table of the government of prepositions has been completely altered according to the rules of the French Academy.

6. New exercises have been written, and the second

* To accommodate those who might prefer having the Grammar and Exercises separately, the Publishers have also thought fit to retain the Edition in two volumes, in which all the improvements of this edition have been embodied.

person singular of verbs has been introduced — an arrangement which, it is hoped, will greatly lighten the labour of the pupil.

7. A new and complete alphabetical table of the genders — one of the greatest difficulties in the French language — has been substituted for that of Hamel ; so that the pupil will now be enabled at once to see the rule by which the gender of hundreds of words, *with few*, or no exceptions, will be determined.

Such are a few of the leading improvements which have been introduced into this Volume ; but the whole work has been subjected to a most careful and unsparing revision, and numerous emendations have been made which the reader, on comparing this with former editions, will discern at a glance. In conclusion I may state, that all these improvements and emendations have been recognised by the French Academy and the University of France, which, it must be remembered, exercise as much authority over the French language as the Parliament of England over the law of the British empire. It must not be said of any French teacher, as of the abbess of Chaucer, —

— “ Frenche she spake ful fayre and fetisly,
After the scole of Stratford atte bowe,
For Frenche of Paris was to hire unknowe.”

The French Academy and the University of France are, I repeat, the only competent and recognised authorities on this point, and all French grammars and dictionaries must, to be at all valuable, be in conformity with the decisions of these two illustrious bodies.

N. LAMBERT.

Paris, Rue Montaigne, No. 20.
20 Septembre, 1843.

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

IT is universally allowed that the only sure, and at the same time the shortest, method to attain the perfection of a language, is to study its principles after the most strict and exact rules of Grammar.

Conformably to this truth, generally acknowledged, and confirmed by daily experience, I have composed this work with sound principles and exact definitions ; and in order to promote as much as possible the learning of this useful tongue, I have drawn a parallel between the French and English languages, which at the same time will confirm the English Student in the principles of his native tongue, greatly facilitate the understanding of the French rules, and point out the different genius of each language with accuracy and precision.

The first part of this Grammar, which has for its object Pronunciation and Orthography, treats of the sound of letters, vowels, and consonants. The different sorts of accents, the proper manner of using them, and their effects upon vowels, are put in the clearest light ; the use of the apostrophe and capital letters, the different sorts of punctuation and abbreviations are treated in a method simple and concise, but at the same time so comprehensive,

that I know not any thing which could be added on the same subject.

The idea that it would be an encouragement to a pupil, if he could easily treasure in his mind a great collection of words, prompted me to compare the analogy between the two languages; and, after mature consideration, I have devised four fundamental rules, whereby the scholar may, in a few lessons and without much trouble, acquire several thousand French words (page 31.).

The rules by which we distinguish the gender of nouns are simple and comprehensive. Thus, in a short time, that important point may be perfectly attained, in which most Grammarians are very defective, and which many do not even attempt to explain.

The formation of the plural of nouns, and of the feminine of adjectives, is placed in a new light (the first, pages 55. and 56.; and the second, pages 56—59.).

On the verb I have been very extensive and methodical: having explained its nature and different species, I have fully conjugated a verb of each regular and irregular conjugation; to this explanation I have added (pages 126—130.) a new method, grounded upon principles by which all regular and irregular verbs may be learnt with uncommon facility.

Having explained the different parts of speech in the manner which seemed the most natural, simple, and methodical, I proceed to the syntax, in which I treat of the union, concord, and disposition of words, in the same order as I had previously adopted in treating of their nature and conjugation.

This part, as the most essential and difficult, I have explained at large, in a series of clear, short, and accurate rules for the most part illustrated by instructive examples

from good authors. The principles depend successively on each other, and the knowledge of the preceding leads usually to the understanding of that which follows. The rules which I have given for the construction of the language are set in numerical order, and so disposed, that they may be found as easily as a word in a dictionary; an advantage peculiar to this Grammar.

The most difficult points of the language, such as the construction of pronouns, the different modes of negation and interrogation, the distinction of tenses, the use of the subjunctive mood, the government of verbs, &c. are particularly and fully explained.

The Grammar contains an alphabetical series of the French verbs most in use, denoting, at once, of what conjugation they are, and the preposition they govern, by which two great difficulties in the French language will be removed.

My first object was to render this work fit for the use of schools, and so to adapt it to the capacities of the youngest learners, that in beginning to learn French they may begin it grammatically. For this purpose I have used my utmost endeavours to unite simplicity of method with clearness and precision; and having in some measure succeeded in this point, I may assert from experience, that most of the rules and principles of this Grammar may, with the help of a good master, be understood and learnt by a child of six or seven years of age. Of this those will be easily convinced who will attend to the natural order which exists in the different parts, to the precision of the rules, to the clearness of the style, and, in a word, to the work taken altogether, which, according to the opinion of several learned gentlemen, is executed on a plan new, simple, and much improved.

-A-

TABLE

OF

THE CONTENTS.

THE true definition of Grammar	-	-	Page 1
Division of this work	-	-	ib.

PART I *Of Pronunciation and Orthography.*

CHAP. 1. Of Pronunciation	-	-	2
Of the French alphabet	-	-	ib.
Of the French accents	-	-	4
Of vowels	-	-	6
Of diphthongs	-	-	7
Of consonants	-	-	8
Observations upon some consonants	-	-	10
Remarks on the pronunciation of some words	-	-	14
A vocabulary	-	-	15
CHAP. 2. Of Orthography	-	-	22
Of the apostrophe	-	-	23
Of the hyphen and cedilla	-	-	24
Of the <i>tréma</i> , parenthesis, quotations, and abbreviations	-	-	25
Of punctuation	-	-	26
Of capital letters	-	-	27
An alphabetical series of kingdoms, provinces, and towns, which have a different denomination in French and in English	-	-	28

	Page
A method to learn the French denomination for the proper names of persons taken from the Latin and Greek - - - - -	30
A method to learn easily a great collection of French words - - - - -	31

PART II. *Different Parts of Speech.*

CHAP. 1. Of the French articles - - -	33
CHAP. 2. Of substantives - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of the nature and kinds of substantives - - -	34
Of nouns with the definite article - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of nouns with the indefinite article - - -	35
How to distinguish when a noun is masculine or feminine - - -	36
A table of genders - - -	39
Of substantives masculine in one signification, and feminine in another - - -	52
Rules to form the plural of nouns - - -	54
List of irregular plurals - - -	55
CHAP. 3. Of adjectives - - -	56
How to form the feminine of adjectives - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of the plural of adjectives - - -	59
Of comparatives and superlatives - - -	60
Of cardinal numbers - - -	61
Of ordinal numbers - - -	65
CHAP. 4. Of pronouns - - -	70
Of personal pronouns - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of possessive pronouns - - -	72
Of demonstrative pronouns - - -	74
Of relative pronouns - - -	76
Of interrogative pronouns - - -	77
Of indeterminate pronouns - - -	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. 5. Of verbs and their species - - -	80
Of moods, tenses, numbers, and persons of verbs - - -	82
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb <i>avoir</i> - - -	84

	Page
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb <i>être</i> -	86
Verbs conjugated with <i>to have</i> in English, and with <i>être</i> in French - - -	88
Verbs which take <i>avoir</i> in one signification and <i>être</i> in another - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of regular conjugations - - -	89
Conjugation of all the irregular verbs - -	99
Conjugation of impersonal verbs - - -	120
Several ways of using a verb - - -	121
Conjugation of a reflected verb - - -	122
Observations on the reflected verbs - -	125
Verbs reflected in French - - -	<i>ib.</i>
An easy method to learn verbs - - -	126
A table of the terminations of the primitive tenses	128
An alphabetical series of French verbs, regular and irregular, showing what prepositions they govern, and those that do not govern any -	130
Several manners of conjugating verbs - -	193
Of adverbs - - - -	200
Different sorts of adverbs - - -	201
Of prepositions - - - -	203
Prepositions which govern <i>de</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Prepositions which govern no other prepositions -	204
Prepositions joined to a verb - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Verbs composed with a preposition - -	205
Of conjunctions - - - -	206
Of interjections - - - -	208

PART III. *Of Syntax.*

CHAP. 1. Use of the French articles -	210
Article used in French and in English -	211
Article used in French, and not in English -	212
Articles used in English, and not in French -	214
No article used either in French or in English -	215
CHAP. 2. Syntax of substantives -	229
How compound words form their plural -	230

NEW GRAMMAR

OF THE

FRENCH LANGUAGE.



GRAMMAR is the art which teaches to *speak* and to *write* correctly.

A Grammar ought to treat of the sounds and characters of a language; of the nature of the words of which it is composed; and of the union and arrangement which is to be made of them in speech.

As I propose to consider these objects in their different points of view, this work is naturally divided into three parts. The first has for its object Pronunciation and Orthography. The second explains the nature or etymology of the different parts of speech and the conjugation of Verbs. The third contains a series of clear, short, and accurate rules for the construction or syntax of the language, and is completed by a collection of the most familiar French idioms and proverbs.

PART I.

OF PRONUNCIATION AND ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

PRONUNCIATION.*

PRONUNCIATION is reading aloud, or speaking, the words of a language correctly.

Words consist of one or more syllables; and syllables, consist of one or more letters: the letters of the French tongue are the following, named nearly according to the letters in English placed below each.

FRENCH ALPHABET

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, J, K, L, M,
ah, bay, say, day, a, eff, gey, ahsh, e, jee, ka, el, emm,

N, O, P, Q, R, S, T, U, V, X, Y, Z, &.
enn, o, pay, qu, air, s, tay, u, vay, ex, egrec, zed, &.

These five, *a, e, i, o, u*, are called vowels, because they represent a distinct sound; we will speak of *y* hereafter.

The others are called consonants, because they cannot be sounded without a vowel.

* As the English cannot of themselves learn the French pronunciation (because the true sounds cannot be conveyed by rules), and as they easily obtain this very essential point with the help of a good master, a long treatise would be useless; therefore, I will only give the rules, and make the observations, which to this day have been found the most clear, simple, and useful, and which I have selected from the authors most generally esteemed.

The vowels and consonants can be joined together as follows :

ba,	be,	bi,	bo,	bu,	.....	ab,	eb,	ib,	ob,	ub,
ca,	ce,	ci,	co,	cu,	.....	ac,	ec,	ic,	oc,	uc,
ça,	—	—	ço,	çu,	.....				
da,	de,	di,	do,	du,	.....	ad,	ed,	id,	od,	ud,
fa,	fe,	fi,	fo,	fu,	.....	af,	ef,	if,	of,	uf,
ga,	ge,	gi,	go,	gu,	.....	ag,	eg,	ig,	og,	ug,
ha,	he,	hi,	ho,	hu,	.....	ah,	eh,	ih,	oh,	uh,
ja,	je,	ji,	jo,	ju,	.....				
ka,	ke,	ki,	ko,	ku,	.....	ak,	ek,	ik,	ok,	uk,
la,	le,	li,	lo,	lu,	.....	al,	el,	il,	ol,	ul,
ma,	me,	mi,	mo,	mu,	.....	am,	em,	im,	om,	um,
na,	ne,	ni,	no,	nu,	.....	an,	en,	in,	on,	un,
pa,	pe,	pi,	po,	pu,	.....	ap,	ep,	ip,	op,	up,
qua,	que,	qui,	quo,	qu,	.....				
ra,	re,	ri,	ro,	ru,	.....	ar,	er,	ir,	or,	ur,
sa,	se,	si,	so,	su,	.....	as,	es,	is,	os,	us,
ta,	te,	ti,	to,	tu,	.....	at,	et,	it,	ot,	ut,
va,	ve,	vi,	vo,	vu,	.....	av,	ev,	iv,	ov,	uv,
xa,	xe,	xi,	xo,	xu,	.....	ax,	ex,	ix,	ox,	ux,
za,	ze,	zi,	zo,	zu,	.....	az,	ez,	iz,	oz,	uz,

The letters of the French alphabet, like those of the English, are not so numerous as the elementary sounds they are used to represent.

The deficiency is made up, in some measure, by the use of marks called *accent*, *tréma*, *cedille*; and partly by combining two or more letters in a diphthong.

There is a class of sounds, too, called nasal, and represented by a vowel or diphthong followed by *N* or *M*; as :

an,	en,	in,	on,	un,	ain,	ein,
am,	em,	im,	om,	um,	aim,	oin.

The whole number of simple and articulate sounds in French may be reduced to thirty-seven elementary ones, with which every variety of syllable is formed.

The capital letters in the following words serve to mark the thirty-seven elementary sounds :

A-h,	E'-pi,	U-rie,	UN,
A-llez,	I-da,	AN-dré,	OU,
E-tre,	O-s,	IN-de,	EU-x,
E-sther,	O-ptez.	ON,	gru-E*,

* The *e* mute never begins a word.

PST! [*]	Jeu,	Peu,	Z-inc,
H-ache,	Feu,	Bœu-fa,	Te-nez,
H-abit,	Vœu,	Re-nais,	Deuz,
QUœu-e,	Me-nu,	Le-vain,	Mou-ILL-e,
Gœu-x,	Nœu-d,	Se,	Bai-GN-e.
CH-ut!			

OF THE FRENCH ACCENTS.†

There are three different accents in French, called *acute*, *grave*, and *circumflex*.

The *acute* accent (') gives to the vowel under it an acute sound, much resembling that of *a* in the English alphabet, as in the words *vérité*, truth, *probité*, probity, *prémédité*, premeditated.

The *grave* accent (`) gives to the vowel under it a broad and open sound, as in the words *accès*, access, *progrès*, progress, *succès*, success.

The *circumflex* accent (^) gives a long sound to the vowel under it, as in the words *âme*, soul, *tête*, head, *gîte*, lodging, *dôme*, cupola, *flûte*, flute.

The Acute Accent is used,

1. Over the *é* final, in a substantive which ends in *té* in French, and in *ty* in English; such are, *impiété*, impiety, *charité*, charity, *humanité*, humanity, &c.

2. Over the first *é*, when there are two joined at the end of a noun, as in the words, *armée*, army, *pensée*, thought, *année*, year, *trophée*, trophy, *mausolée*, mausoleum.

3. Over *é* followed by another vowel, which does not belong to the same syllable, as in the words, *réel*, real, *créateur*, creator, *réunion*, reunion, *préoccupé*, preposessed, &c.

4. Over the *é* final in the participles of all verbs of the first conjugation, that is, which end in *er* in the infinitive mood, such are *parlé*, *chanté*, *acheté*, *aimé*, *donné*, from

* *Pst* is intended to mark, that in some cases a faint *e* mute follows each consonant.

† I treat here of accents, because they give to the vowels several sounds which cannot be easily distinguished without some notion of them.

parler, to speak, *chanter*, to sing, *acheter*, to buy, *aimer*, to love, *donner*, to give.

5. Over the *é* final of the first person singular of the indicative present in all verbs of the first conjugation, when they are used interrogatively, but not in other cases: thus we write, *je donne*, I give, *je porte*, I carry, *je préfère*, I prefer, &c. without accent, and *donné-je*, *porté-je*, *préféré-je*, with an accent.

The Grave Accent is used,

1. Over the open *è*, followed by the final *s*, as in the words *auprès*, near, *exprès*, express, *progrès*, progress, &c.; but practice alone can teach when *e* is open or not.

2. Over *à*, preposition, to distinguish it from the third person of the verb *avoir*, *il a*, he has. Example: *il y a moins de gloire à vaincre un ennemi, qu'à lui pardonner quand on l'a vaincu*. There is less glory in conquering an enemy, than in pardoning him after he has been conquered.

3. Over *là*, adverb, to distinguish it from *la*, article or pronoun. Example: *où la vertu finit, là le vice commence*; where virtue ends, there vice begins.

4. Over *dès*, preposition or conjunction, to distinguish it from *des* article. Example: *dès que j'aurai de l'argent, j'achèterai des livres*; as soon as I have money, I will buy books.

5. Over *où*, adverb, to distinguish it from *ou* conjunction: as *où êtes-vous?* where are you? *vous ou moi nous irons*, you or I shall go.

6. Over the vowel *e*, when it is followed by a mute syllable, except *ge*: as, *sincè-re*, *fidè-le*, *espè-rent*.

The Circumflex Accent is used,

1. Over the penultimate or last vowel but one of all verbs, in the first and second persons plural of the preterite of the indicative. Example: *nous parlâmes*, we spoke, *vous parlâtes*, you spoke, *nous agîmes*, we acted, *vous agîtes*, you acted, *nous reçûmes*, we received, *vous reçûtes*, you received.

2. Over the last vowel of the third person singular of

the imperfect of the subjunctive, but not of the preterite of the indicative: thus, *il agit*, he acted, *il fit*, he did, *il vendit*, he sold, *il reçut*, he received; without accent in the preterite of the indicative; and *il agit*, he might act, *il fit*, he might do, *il vendit*, he might sell, *il reçût*, he might receive, with a circumflex accent in the imperfect of the subjunctive.

3. Over the syllables which are long, and were formerly written with an *s*: such are *pâte*, paste, *honnête*, honest, *tempête*, storm, *impôt*, tax, *gîte*, lodging.

4. Over *dû*, participle of *devoir*, to owe, to distinguish it from *du*, of the, article. Over *crû*, participle of *croître*, to grow, to distinguish it from *cru*, participle of *croire*, to believe. Over *sûr*, sure, adjective, to distinguish it from *sur*, upon, preposition: as, *je suis sûr que le livre est sur la table*, I am sure that the book is upon the table.

5. Over *î* when followed by *t* in the verbs which have their infinitive in *oître* or *aitre*; as, *croître*, to grow, *paraître*, to appear, *disparaître*, to disappear, *connaître*, to know, *naître*, to be born, &c.

The other circumstances in which these accents must be used in French, cannot be explained by any general rules.

OF VOWELS.

When the vowels have an accent, they have a sound either acute, open, or long, according as the accent is acute, grave, or circumflex.

When they have no accent, they generally keep their natural sound, that is, the sound we have given them, in the alphabet, except *e*, which is often mute at the end of a word of several syllables, such as *modestie*, modesty, *justice*, justice, *il étudie*, he studies, &c., and also in the future and conditional of many verbs; thus, *je serai*, I shall be, *je serais*, I should be, *je prierai*, I shall pray, *je prierais*, I should pray, are pronounced pretty nearly as if they were written *je srai*, *je srais*, *je prirai*, *je prirais*.

But the unaccented vowels are not always pronounced in one way: for the *a* of *allez* is not that of *espace*, *gagner*, &c.; and *o* sounds very differently in *corps*, *optez*, from the *o* in *os*, *clos*. The right pronunciation must be learned

by close attention to a correct speaker, as it cannot be conveyed by general rules.

Y has the sound of *i* simple between two consonants; thus the word *mystère*, mystery, *asyle*, asylum, are pronounced as if they were written, *mistère*, *asile*.

When *y* is between two vowels, it has usually the sound of *ii*: thus, *essayer*, to try, *employer*, to employ, are pronounced as if they were written, *essaiier*, *emploiiier*.

OF DIPHTHONGS.

A Diphthong is the meeting of two or more vowels in the same syllable, which convey to the ear a double sound, as, *Dieu*, God, *miel*, honey, in which we distinctly hear the sound of *i*, and the sound of *eu*, and *e* grave; but being pronounced rapidly, they form only one syllable.

Diphthongs ought not to be confounded with a coalition of two or more vowels, which produce only one single sound, as *vous*, you, *deux*, two, &c.: they are called compound vowels. The following are sounded in French as follows:

1. *AO* is sounded like *a* in the words *paon*, *paonne*, peacock, peahen; and like *o* in the words *aoriste*, an aorist, and *taon*, a dun-fly. *Août*, August, is sounded like *oo* in *book*.

2. *EAI* and *AI* are sounded like an *é* acute in the preterite of all verbs of the first conjugation; thus, *je parlai*, I spoke, *je mangeai*, I ate, *je donnai*, I gave, *je changeai*, I changed, are pronounced as if they were written, *je parlé*, *je mangé*, *je donné*, *je changé*.

3. *AI*, *EAI*, *AIE*, in the middle or at the end of nouns, are sounded pretty much like an *è* with a grave accent; such are the words *maison*, house, *démangeaison*, itching. *haie*, hedge, *plaie*, wound.

4. *OI* is sounded in one emission of voice, but distinctly pronouncing the two sounds *o* and *è* grave in the words ending in *oi*, *oie*, *oir*, *oire*: such are the words *moi*, I, *emploi*, employ, *voie*, way, *vouloir*, to be willing, *oratoire*, oratory.

5. *IE* is sounded like an *i*, and *ue* like an *û*, in the different tenses and persons of the verbs which end in *ier* and

uer, in the infinitive present : thus, *je prie*, I pray, *je prierai*, I shall pray, *je prierais*, I should pray, are pronounced, *je pri*, *je prirai*, *je prirais*; and *je remue*, I move, *je remuerai*, I shall move, *il remuerait*, he should move, are pronounced as if they were written, *je remû*, *je remûrai*, *il remûrait*.

6. *AU* and *EAU* at the end of a word, have the sound of *o* : thus, *couteau*, knife, *chapeau*, hat, are pronounced *couto*, *chapo*.

7. *GEA*, *GEO*, *GEURE*, without an accent over *e*, are always sounded *ja*, *jo*, *jure* : thus, *George*, *il changea*, he changed, *nous jugeons*, we judge, *gageure*, wager, are pronounced as if they were written, *Jorge*, *chanja*, *ujons*, *gajure*.

8. *EU* is uniformly sounded more open than the English *u* in *burden*, excepting the words *gageure*, *mangeure*, and some parts of the verb *avoir*, to have, where it has the sound of *u*, as *eut*, *eu*, *eurent*, had.

OF CONSONANTS.

B.

B is sounded as in English in *babil*, *bobine*, &c., but is not heard in *plomb*, à *plomb*; but it is heard in *radoub*, *rumb*, and in proper names, as in *Jacob*, *Job*, &c.

When double, as in *sabbat*, *abbé* and derivatives, *rabbin*, &c., one only is heard.

C.

C sounds in general as in English, but it has the sound of *g* in *second* and its derivatives, in *cicogne*, now spelt *ci-gogne*, and in *Reine-Claude*, spelt also *Reine-Glaude*.

C is not heard when followed by *q*, as in *acquérir*, &c.; when double only one generally is heard, as in *accabler*, *accomplir*, &c.; when both are sounded, the first sounds like *k*, and the second like *s*, as in *accent*, pronounce *ak-sent*; the two *c* are heard only when followed by *e* or *i*.

It sounds also like *s* hard before *a*, *o*, *u*, when there is a cedilla under it, as in *façade*, *façon*, *reçu*; pronounced *fassade*, *fasson*, *ressu*. It has the sound of *k* at the end of the following words, *bec*, *éche*, *estoc*, *aqueduc*, *syndic*,

trictac, avec, de bric et de brac, ab hoc et ab hac, and when followed by a vowel in compound words, as *franc étourdi, du blanc au noir, clerc à maître, &c.* *Ch*, see *H*.

D.

D is sounded as in English.

It is not heard at the end of words except in proper names, as *David, Obed, Joad*, and in *sud* (south).

Final *d* takes the sound of *t* when the next word begins with a vowel or an *h* mute, as *grand homme, grand arbre*, which are pronounced *gran tomme, gran tarbre, &c.*; when double, one only is heard, except in *addition, reddition, adducteur*.

F.

F is sounded as in English.

But it is not heard in *clef, éteuf, œuf frais, œuf dur, nerf de bœuf, cerf volant, cerf dix cors, chef-d'œuvre, bœuf gras*, and in *neuf* when followed by a consonant, as *neuf chevaux*; but it takes the sound of *v* before a vowel, as *neuf ans*, pronounced *neu vans*. When double only one is sounded.

G.

G before *e* and *i* is sounded like *j*, but softer: thus, *genou, knee, gibier, game, mangeant, eating*, are pronounced *'jenou, jibier, manjant*; not *djenou, djibier, mandjant*.

G has a strong and harsh sound when it is followed by *a, o, u, l, r*, as in the words *gâteau, cake, gosier, gullet, aigu, acute, glorieux, glorious, grandir, to grow tall, &c.*

Gn has a liquid sound resembling the last syllable of the English word *onion*. As this sound is attended with some difficulty, it must be heard from the master.

H.

H is mute in the following words, their derivatives, and proper names, except *la Hollande, la Hongrie, héros*, and a few more: it is aspirated in others.

habile,
habit,

able.
a dress.

habiter,
habitude,

to inhabit.
habit.

haleine,	<i>breath.</i>	hommage,	<i>homage.</i>
hameçon,	<i>a fish-hook.</i>	homme,	<i>man.</i>
harmonie,	<i>harmony.</i>	homogène,	<i>homogeneous.</i>
hebdomadaire,	<i>weekly.</i>	honnête,	<i>honest.</i>
héberger,	<i>to harbour.</i>	honneur,	<i>honour.</i>
hébété,	<i>blockhead.</i>	hôpital,	<i>hospital.</i>
hécatombe,	<i>hecatomb.</i>	horizon,	<i>horizon.</i>
hégire,	<i>hegira.</i>	horloge,	<i>clock.</i>
héliotrope,	<i>sun-flower.</i>	horoscope,	<i>horoscope.</i>
hémisphère,	<i>hemisphere.</i>	horreur,	<i>horror.</i>
hémistiche,	<i>hemistich.</i>	horrible,	<i>horrid.</i>
hémorragie,	<i>hemorrhage.</i>	hospice,	<i>hospital.</i>
herbage,	<i>pasturage.</i>	hospitalier,	<i>hospitable.</i>
herbe,	<i>grass.</i>	hostie,	<i>victim.</i>
hériter,	<i>to inherit.</i>	hostilité,	<i>hostility.</i>
hérésie,	<i>heresy.</i>	hôte,	<i>landlord.</i>
hermétique,	<i>alchemy.</i>	hôtel,	<i>hotel.</i>
hermine,	<i>ermine.</i>	hôtellerie,	<i>inn.</i>
hermite,	<i>a hermit.</i>	hôtesse,	<i>landlady.</i>
héroïne,	<i>a heroine.</i>	huile,	<i>oil.</i>
héroïque,	<i>heroic.</i>	huissier,	<i>usher.</i>
héroïsme,	<i>heroism.</i>	huitre,	<i>oyster.</i>
hésiter,	<i>to hesitate.</i>	humain,	<i>human.</i>
hétérodoxe,	<i>heterodox.</i>	humble,	<i>humble.</i>
hétérogène,	<i>heterogenous.</i>	humecter,	<i>to moisten.</i>
heure,	<i>hour.</i>	humeur,	<i>humour.</i>
heureux,	<i>happy.</i>	humidité,	<i>dampness.</i>
hexagone,	<i>hexagon.</i>	humilité,	<i>humility.</i>
hexamètre,	<i>hexameter.</i>	hyacinthe,	<i>hyacinth.</i>
hier,	<i>yesterday.</i>	hydre,	<i>hydra.</i>
hiéroglyphe,	<i>hieroglyphic.</i>	hydromel,	<i>mead.</i>
hirondelle,	<i>swallow.</i>	hydropisie,	<i>dropsy.</i>
histoire,	<i>history.</i>	hymen,	<i>hymen.</i>
histrion,	<i>buffoon.</i>	hymne,	<i>hymn.</i>
hiver,	<i>winter.</i>	hyperbole,	<i>hyperbole.</i>
holocauste,	<i>burnt-offering.</i>	hypocrisie,	<i>hypocrisy.</i>
homélie,	<i>a homily.</i>	hypothèque,	<i>mortgage.</i>
homicide,	<i>homicide.</i>	hypothèse,	<i>hypothesis.</i>

There are some more words in which *h* is mute, but they are so seldom used, that I have thought proper to omit them; and in the words where *h* is said to be aspirated, the breathing is scarcely audible, and never so strong as in *house*, and other English words.

Ch sound like *k* in *Acheloüs*, *Achmet*, *archétype*, *anachronisme*, *anachorète*, *archange*, *archontes*, *archiépiscopal*, *eucharistie*, *chœur*, *choléra*, *choriste*, *chaos*, *orchestre*, *écho*, &c. &c.

Ch have the sound of *g* hard in *drachme*, and are not sounded in *almanach*.

It may be considered as a general rule that *ch*, followed by a consonant, are sounded like *k*, as *Christ*, *Chrétien*, *chronique*, *technique*, &c.

J.

J is always sounded as *s* in pleasure.

K.

K is sounded like *q*, or as the same letter in English in the word king.

L.

L, in general, is sounded as in English.

It is not heard in *baril*, *chenil*, *coutil*, *fusil*, *outil*, &c.

But *l* preceded by *i*, when doubled or final, is ordinarily liquid, and is sounded as in the English words, brilliant, valiant, in such words as, *babil*, *soleil*, *cil*, *grésil*, *péril*, *gentil*, &c. That sound, being rather difficult, must be heard from the master.

L is heard, as in English, in *fil*, *vil*, *mil*; but is liquid in *fille*, *famille*, &c., pronounced nearly as in the English word billiard.

It is not liquid in *mille*, *ville*, *tranquille*, nor in the beginning of words, as in *illustre*, *illégitime*, &c.

When double, one only is heard, except in *allusion*, *beligérant*, &c.

It is not heard in *fil*s (a son).

M.

M is sounded as in English.

But when double, one only is generally heard; except in *immodeste*, *immense*, *imminent*, &c., where both are heard.

M has the sound of *n* in *faim*, *nom*, *comte*, &c. &c.

M is sounded as an *n*, when it is followed by *b*, or *p*: thus, *ambition*, ambition, *comparer*, to compare, are pronounced, *anbition*, *conparer*.

N.

N is sounded as in English; but is often nasal.

N in the words *en*, thereof, *on*, they, when they precede

a verb, in *bien*, well, *rien*, nothing, followed by an adjective or a participle; in adjectives, ending in *n*, placed before a substantive, and in the preposition *en*, in, is sounded on the next word, when it begins with a vowel: thus, *on apprend*, *en étudiant avec méthode*, people learn, when studying methodically; *mon bon ami*, *vous n'avez rien appris*, my good friend, you have learned nothing; are pronounced as if they were written, *on napprend*, *en nétudiant avec méthode*, *mon bon nami*, *vous n'avez rien napppris*.

When the letter *n* is the final of a substantive, it is not sounded on the next word, though it begins with a vowel: thus the following, *une intention excellente*, an excellent intention, *un pain exquis*, excellent bread, *un vin agréable*, an agreeable wine, are pronounced in two distinct words.

When *n* is double, one only is generally sounded, except in *annexe*, *annal*, *annuel*, *annuler*, and a few more.

P.

P is sounded as in English.

P is not sounded at all in *baptême*, baptism, *baptiser*, to baptise, *baptistaire*, certificate of baptism, *compte*, account, and its derivatives; in *corps*, body, *exempt*, exempt, *exempter*, to exempt, *prompt*, quick, and its derivatives; in *sculpter*, to carve, and its derivatives; in *sept*, seven, *septième*, seventh, *septièmement*, seventhly, *temps*, time, and in the persons of the verb *rompre*, to break, and its derivatives, in which it is followed by *s* or *t*, as *je romps*, I break, *il corrompt*, he corrupts.

P is silent at the end of a word, except in *cap*, *jalap*, *julep*. It is heard in *trop* and *beaucoup* when followed by a vowel. In *laps*, *relaps*, and *rapt*, the two last letters are sounded.

When double, only one is heard.

PH are always sounded as an *f*: thus *philippe*, *philosophie*, are pronounced, *filippe*, *filosofie*.

Q.

Q has generally the hard sound of *k*.

QU have commonly the sound of a *k*: thus, *quatre*, four, *qualité*, quality, *marque*, mark, are pronounced *katre*, *kalié*, *mark*.

But *qu* have the sound of *cou* in *aquatique*, aquatic, *équateur*, equator, *in-quarto*, a quarto, *quadrupède*, quadruped, and a few less common words.

Qu in some other words have the sound of *ku* before *e* or *i*, as *équestre*, *équiangle*, &c.

R.

R is sounded as in English, but stronger.

R is not sounded at the end of verbs ending in *er*, unless when followed immediately by a vowel.

Er is sounded in some adjectives and substantives, as *cher*, *cuiller*, *fer*, *ver*, *mer*, *fier*, *hier*, *hiver*, *amer*, *cancer*, *enfer*, &c.

In all other substances in *er* it is sounded like *é* acute.

When *r* is doubled, only one is sounded, except in *aberration*, *abhorrer*, *horreur*, *errer*, *torréfier*, and their derivatives, in words beginning with *irr*, and in the future and conditional of the verbs *acquérir*, *courir*, *mourir*, and their derivatives.

S.

S has generally the sound of a *z* between two vowels, and, in some words, after the syllable *tran*: thus, *oser*, to dare, *raisonner*, to reason, *transition*, transition, are pronounced, *ozér*, *raizonner*, *tranzition*, &c.

Some compounded words are excepted from this rule: as *préséance*, *vraisemblable*.

In other circumstances, *s* has the hissing sound assigned to it in the alphabet, and particularly when it is double, or begins a word: as, *assiduité*, *superstition*, &c.

Final *s* is heard in *as*, *atlas*, *argus*, *blocus*, *bolus*, *jadis*, *gratis*, *lis*, *vis*, *tournevis*, and several more of less common use.

It is also heard at the end of foreign proper names.

T.

T is generally sounded as in English.

Ti not preceded by *x*, or *s*, are sounded as *si*, 1. in all words ending in *tion*; 2. in adjectives ending in *tial*, *tiel*, *tient*, *tieux*, and their derivatives; 3. in the names of persons or people, ending in *tien*; 4. in all the tenses of the verbs *balbutier*, to stammer, and *initier*, to initiate; 5. in

the following words ending in *tie*; *facétie*, pleasantry, *impéritie*, ignorance, *ineptie*, folly, *inertie*, idleness, *minutie*, trifle, *primatie*, primacy, *prophétie*, prophecy, and *suprématie*, supremacy.

T is sounded at the end of the following words, *apt*, *rapt*, *fat*, *malt*, *mat*, *pat*, *opiat*, *exeat*, *transeat*, *vivat*, *fret*, *aconit*, *déficit*, *granit*, *préterit*, *transit*, *dot*, *brut*, *lut*, *Christ*, *fest*, *l'ouest*, *lest*, but not in *Jésus Christ*, nor the conjunction *et*.

When double only one is sounded.

V.

V is sounded as in English.

X.

X is sounded, 1. like *ks*, in the middle of words, and in words beginning with *ex*, followed by a consonant, as *maxime*, *maxim*, *extase*, *ecstasy*; 2. like *gz*, in words beginning with *ex*, followed by a vowel, as *exemple*, *example*, *exiger*, to *exact*; 3. like *k* in all words beginning with *exc* followed by *e* or *i*, as *excellent*, *excellent*, *exciter*, to *excite*; 4. like *ss*, *Aix*, *Bruxelles*, *soixante*, and a few more proper names; 5. like *z* in *deuxième*, *sixième*, *dixième*, *dix-huit*, *dix-neuf*, and at the end of words when followed by a vowel or *h* mute.

Z.

Z is generally pronounced as in English, except in a few words, as *assez*, *chez*, *nez*, and some proper names.

In the second person plural of verbs it is heard when followed by a word beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, otherwise not.

REMARKS ON THE PRONUNCIATION OF SOME WORDS.

1. There are several substantives or adjectives which are spelt absolutely like the third person plural of some verbs. They are not to be mistaken, as in the substantives and adjectives the final *ent* is pronounced like *ant*, and in the verbs it is entirely mute. Such are the following :—

SUBST. OR ADJECT.		VERBS.	
adhérent,	<i>adherent.</i>	ils adhèrent,	<i>they adhere.</i>
affluent,	<i>flowing.</i>	ils affluent,	<i>they resort.</i>
content,	<i>content.</i>	ils content,	<i>they relate.</i>
différent,	<i>different.</i>	ils diffèrent,	<i>they differ.</i>
parent,	<i>relation.</i>	ils parent,	<i>they adorn.</i>
président,	<i>president.</i>	ils président,	<i>they preside.</i>
violent,	<i>violent.</i>	ils violent,	<i>they violate.</i>

2. Some other words spelt alike, differ by the pronunciation on account of the accent. Such are—

{ il bat,	<i>he beats.</i>	{ un pécheur,	<i>a sinner.</i>
{ un bât.	<i>a pack-saddle.</i>	{ un pêcheur,	<i>a fisherman.</i>
{ il boîte,	<i>he limps.</i>	{ jeune,	<i>young.</i>
{ un boîte,	<i>a box.</i>	{ jeûne,	<i>fast.</i>
{ il chasse,	<i>he hunts.</i>	{ matin,	<i>morning.</i>
{ une chasse,	<i>a shrine.</i>	{ matin,	<i>mastiff-dog.</i>
{ un foret,	<i>a gimlet.</i>	{ tache,	<i>a spot.</i>
{ une forêt,	<i>a forest.</i>	{ tâche,	<i>task.</i>
{ pêcher,	<i>to sin.</i>	{ tacher,	<i>to spot.</i>
{ pêcher,	<i>to fish.</i>	{ tâcher,	<i>to endeavour, &c.</i>

A VOCABULARY.

1. Days.

DIMANCHE,	<i>Sunday.</i>
lundi,	<i>monday.</i>
mardi,	<i>tuesday.</i>
mercredi,	<i>wednesday.</i>
jeudi,	<i>thursday.</i>
vendredi,	<i>friday.</i>
samedi,	<i>saturday.</i>

2. Months.

janvier,	<i>january.</i>
février,	<i>february.</i>
mars,	<i>march.</i>
avril,	<i>april.</i>
mai,	<i>may.</i>
juin,	<i>june.</i>
juillet,	<i>july.</i>
août,	<i>august.</i>
septembre,	<i>september.</i>
octobre,	<i>october.</i>
novembre,	<i>november.</i>
décembre,	<i>december.</i>

3. Seasons.

le printemps,	<i>spring.</i>
l'été,	<i>summer.</i>
l'automne,	<i>autumn.</i>
l'hiver,	<i>winter.</i>

4. Elements.

le feu,	<i>fire.</i>
l'eau,	<i>water.</i>
la terre,	<i>earth.</i>
l'air,	<i>air.</i>

5. Eating.

le déjeuner,	<i>breakfast.</i>
le dîner,	<i>dinner.</i>
le souper,	<i>supper.</i>
du pain,	<i>bread.</i>
de la croûte,	<i>crust.</i>
de la mie,	<i>crum.</i>
du beurre,	<i>butter.</i>
de la viande,	<i>meat.</i>
du rôti,	<i>roast meat.</i>

du bouilli,	<i>boiled meat.</i>
du bœuf,	<i>beef.</i>
du veau,	<i>veal.</i>
du mouton,	<i>mutton.</i>
du porc,	<i>pork.</i>
du lard,	<i>bacon.</i>
du gras,	<i>fat.</i>
du maigre,	<i>lean.</i>
une volaille,	<i>a fowl.</i>
du gibier,	<i>game.</i>
un lièvre,	<i>a hare.</i>
des perdrix,	<i>partridges.</i>
un faisan,	<i>a pheasant.</i>
une bécasse,	<i>a woodcock.</i>
une bécassine,	<i>a snipe.</i>
des pigeons,	<i>pigeons.</i>
un chapon,	<i>a capon.</i>
un dindon,	<i>a turkey.</i>
une oie,	<i>a goose.</i>
un canard,	<i>a duck.</i>
du poisson,	<i>some fish.</i>
une morue,	<i>a cod.</i>
du saumon,	<i>salmon.</i>
un turbot,	<i>a turbot.</i>
un merlan,	<i>a whiting.</i>
une sole,	<i>a sole.</i>
un maquereau,	<i>a mackerel.</i>
un hareng,	<i>a herring.</i>
une anguille,	<i>an eel.</i>
un brochet,	<i>a pike.</i>
une plie,	<i>a plaice.</i>
une truite,	<i>a trout.</i>
une tortue,	<i>a turtle.</i>
un chou,	<i>a cabbage.</i>
des navets,	<i>turnips.</i>
des carottes,	<i>carrots.</i>
des pommes de terre,	<i>potatoes.</i>
des artichauts,	<i>artichokes.</i>
des asperges,	<i>asparagus.</i>
des pois,	<i>pease.</i>
de la chicorée,	<i>succory.</i>
des laitues,	<i>lettuce.</i>
du céleri,	<i>celery.</i>
une pomme,	<i>an apple.</i>
une poire,	<i>a pear.</i>
une orange,	<i>an orange.</i>
un citron,	<i>a lemon.</i>
un abricot,	<i>an apricot.</i>
une pêche,	<i>a peach.</i>
une olive,	<i>an olive.</i>

une cerise,	<i>a cherry.</i>
des groseilles,	<i>gooseberries.</i>
des fraises,	<i>strawberries.</i>
des framboises,	<i>raspberries.</i>
des noix,	<i>walnuts.</i>
du raisin,	<i>grapes.</i>
des châtaignes,	<i>chestnuts, &c.</i>

6. *Drinking.*

du vin,	<i>wine.</i>
de la bière,	<i>beer.</i>
du cidre,	<i>cyder.</i>
de l'eau,	<i>water.</i>
du thé,	<i>tea.</i>
du café,	<i>coffee.</i>
du chocolat,	<i>chocolate.</i>
du cacao,	<i>cocoa, &c.</i>

7. *Things used at Table.*

la nappe,	<i>the table-cloth.</i>
un plat,	<i>a dish.</i>
une assiette,	<i>a plate.</i>
un couteau,	<i>a knife.</i>
une cuillère,	<i>a spoon.</i>
une fourchette,	<i>a fork.</i>
du sel,	<i>salt.</i>
une salière,	<i>a salt-cellar.</i>
de la moutarde,	<i>mustard.</i>
du poivre,	<i>pepper.</i>
du vinaigre,	<i>vinegar.</i>
un verre,	<i>a glass, &c.</i>

8. *Furniture of a Room.*

un lit,	<i>a bed.</i>
un matelas,	<i>a mattress.</i>
des draps,	<i>sheets.</i>
une couverture,	<i>a blanket.</i>
des rideaux,	<i>curtains.</i>
une chaise,	<i>a chair.</i>
un tapis,	<i>a carpet.</i>
un miroir,	<i>a looking-glass.</i>
une caisse,	<i>a chest.</i>
une commode,	<i>chest of drawers.</i>
un tableau,	<i>a picture.</i>
une chandelle,	<i>a candle.</i>
un chandelier,	<i>a candlestick.</i>
des mouchettes,	<i>snuffers.</i>
un livre,	<i>a book.</i>
du papier,	<i>paper.</i>
de l'encre,	<i>ink.</i>
des plumes,	<i>pens, &c.</i>

9. *Of the Body.*

le corps,	<i>the body.</i>
le sang,	<i>the blood.</i>
la peau,	<i>the skin.</i>
les os,	<i>the bones.</i>
la moëlle,	<i>the marrow</i>
les veines,	<i>the veins.</i>
le pouls,	<i>the pulse.</i>
les nerfs,	<i>the nerves.</i>
la tête,	<i>the head.</i>
le front,	<i>the forehead.</i>
le visage,	<i>the face.</i>
les yeux,	<i>the eyes.</i>
les paupières,	<i>the eyelids.</i>
les sourcils,	<i>the eyebrows.</i>
le nez,	<i>the nose.</i>
les oreilles,	<i>the ears.</i>
la bouche,	<i>the mouth.</i>
les lèvres,	<i>the lips.</i>
la langue,	<i>the tongue.</i>
les dents,	<i>the teeth.</i>
les joues,	<i>the lips.</i>
le menton,	<i>the chin.</i>
la gorge,	<i>the throat.</i>
le cou,	<i>the neck.</i>
l'épaule,	<i>the shoulder.</i>
le bras,	<i>the arm.</i>
la main,	<i>the hand.</i>
le pouce,	<i>the thumb.</i>
les doigts,	<i>the fingers.</i>
le sein,	<i>the bosom.</i>
le cœur,	<i>the heart.</i>
le dos,	<i>the back.</i>
la ceinture,	<i>the waist.</i>
le côté,	<i>the side.</i>
la hanche,	<i>the hip.</i>
le genou,	<i>the knee.</i>
la jambe,	<i>the leg.</i>
le pied,	<i>the foot.</i>
le talon,	<i>the heel, &c.</i>

10. *Dress.*

un chapeau,	<i>a hat.</i>
un habit,	<i>a coat.</i>
une veste,	<i>a waistcoat.</i>
une culotte,	<i>breeches.</i>
des bas,	<i>stockings.</i>
des souliers,	<i>shoes.</i>
des boucles,	<i>buckles.</i>

des bottes,	<i>boots.</i>
un ruban,	<i>a riband.</i>
un collier,	<i>a necklace.</i>
des pendants	
d'oreille,	<i>ear-rings.</i>
une robe,	<i>a gown.</i>
une jupe,	<i>a petticoat.</i>
un tablier,	<i>an apron.</i>
une montre,	<i>a watch.</i>
des gants,	<i>gloves.</i>
un manchon,	<i>a muff.</i>
un parapluie,	<i>an umbrella.</i>
un mouchoir,	<i>a handkerchief,</i>
	<i>&c.</i>

11. *Relations.*

père,	<i>father.</i>
mère,	<i>mother.</i>
grand'père,	<i>grandfather.</i>
grand'mère,	<i>grandmother.</i>
beau-père,	<i>father-in-law.</i>
belle-mère,	<i>mother-in-law.</i>
frère,	<i>brother.</i>
sœur,	<i>sister.</i>
beau-frère,	<i>brother-in-law.</i>
belle-sœur,	<i>sister-in-law.</i>
fil,	<i>son.</i>
filie,	<i>daughter.</i>
petit-fils,	<i>grandson.</i>
petite-fille,	<i>grand-daughter.</i>
parrain,	<i>godfather.</i>
marraine,	<i>godmother.</i>
filieul,	<i>godson.</i>
filieule,	<i>god-daughter.</i>
époux,	<i>husband.</i>
épouse,	<i>wife.</i>
oncle,	<i>uncle.</i>
tante,	<i>aunt.</i>
neveu,	<i>nephew.</i>
nièce,	<i>niece.</i>
cousin,	<i>cousin (male).</i>
cousine,	<i>cousin (female).</i>

12. *Professions.*

barbier,	<i>barber.</i>
bijoutier,	<i>toyman.</i>
boucher,	<i>butcher.</i>
boulangier,	<i>baker.</i>
brasseur,	<i>brewer.</i>
carrossier,	<i>coach-maker</i>

chapelier,	<i>hatter.</i>	bataille,	<i>battle.</i>
charpentier,	<i>carpenter.</i>	bateau,	<i>boat.</i>
cocher,	<i>coachman.</i>	bâton,	<i>stick.</i>
cordier,	<i>rope-maker.</i>	bonté,	<i>goodness.</i>
cordonnier,	<i>shoe-maker.</i>	bordure,	<i>frame.</i>
coutelier,	<i>cutler.</i>	boue, <i>f.</i>	<i>mud.</i>
cuisinier,	<i>cook.</i>	brouillard,	<i>fog.</i>
doreur,	<i>gilder.</i>	bruit,	<i>noise.</i>
drapier,	<i>draper.</i>	butin,	<i>booty.</i>
épicier,	<i>grocer.</i>	Cabinet,	<i>closet.</i>
faïencier,	<i>chinaman.</i>	cachet,	<i>seal.</i>
fondeur,	<i>founder.</i>	campagne, <i>f.</i>	<i>country.</i>
forgeron,	<i>blacksmith.</i>	caractère, <i>m.</i>	<i>temper.</i>
horloger,	<i>clock-maker.</i>	carrosse,	<i>coach.</i>
jardinier,	<i>gardener.</i>	chair,	<i>flesh.</i>
imprimeur,	<i>printer.</i>	chaleur,	<i>heat.</i>
jouailler,	<i>jeweller.</i>	chambre, <i>f.</i>	<i>room.</i>
laboureur,	<i>ploughman.</i>	champ,	<i>field.</i>
libraire,	<i>bookseller.</i>	chanson,	<i>song.</i>
maçon,	<i>bricklayer.</i>	charbon,	<i>coal.</i>
meunier,	<i>miller.</i>	charrue, <i>f.</i>	<i>plough.</i>
orfèvre,	<i>goldsmith.</i>	chasse,	<i>hunting.</i>
pâtissier,	<i>pastrycook.</i>	chaux,	<i>lime.</i>
peintre,	<i>painter.</i>	chemin,	<i>road.</i>
perruquier,	<i>hairdresser.</i>	chute, <i>f.</i>	<i>fall.</i>
relieur,	<i>bookbinder.</i>	ciel,	<i>heaven.</i>
savetier,	<i>cobbler.</i>	cire, <i>f.</i>	<i>wax.</i>
sellier,	<i>saddler.</i>	ciseaux,	<i>scissors.</i>
serrurier,	<i>locksmith.</i>	cloche, <i>f.</i>	<i>bell.</i>
tailleur,	<i>taylor.</i>	clou,	<i>nail.</i>
tanneur,	<i>tanner.</i>	colère, <i>f.</i>	<i>anger.</i>
tapissier,	<i>upholsterer.</i>	conduite, <i>f.</i>	<i>conduct,</i>
teinturier,	<i>dyer.</i>	confiance,	<i>confidence.</i>
tisserand,	<i>weaver.</i>	corps,	<i>body.</i>
tonnelier,	<i>cooper.</i>	cuir,	<i>leather.</i>
tourneur,	<i>turner.</i>	cuire, <i>m.</i>	<i>copper.</i>
vitrier,	<i>glazier, &c.</i>	Danse,	<i>dance.</i>
		débat,	<i>debate.</i>
		débauche, <i>f.</i>	<i>debauchery.</i>
		défiance,	<i>distrust.</i>
		délicatesse,	<i>delicacy.</i>
		déluge, <i>m.</i>	<i>flood.</i>
		dépens,	<i>expense.</i>
		désir,	<i>desire.</i>
		deuil,	<i>mourning.</i>

13. *A Series of Substantives.**

Amertume, <i>f.</i>	<i>bitterness.</i>
ardoise, <i>f.</i>	<i>slate.</i>
astre, <i>m.</i>	<i>star.</i>
attrait,	<i>charm.</i>
avarice, <i>f.</i>	<i>covetousness.</i>
Bagatelle,	<i>trifle.</i>

* The substantives not followed by *m.* or *f.* are masculine or feminine, according as the final is masculine or feminine; for which see the table of terminations, p. 39.

devoir,	<i>duty.</i>	Haine, <i>f.</i>	<i>hatred.</i>
disette,	<i>scarcity.</i>	haleine, <i>f.</i>	<i>breath.</i>
domaine, <i>m.</i>	<i>dominion.</i>	hardiesse,	<i>boldness.</i>
douceur,	<i>sweetness.</i>	herbe, <i>f.</i>	<i>grass.</i>
durée,	<i>duration.</i>	homme,	<i>man.</i>
Eau,	<i>water.</i>	honneur,	<i>honour.</i>
école, <i>f.</i>	<i>school.</i>	honte, <i>f.</i>	<i>shame.</i>
écriture,	<i>writing.</i>	horloge, <i>f.</i>	<i>clock.</i>
église, <i>f.</i>	<i>church.</i>	huitre, <i>f.</i>	<i>oyster.</i>
énigme, <i>f.</i>	<i>riddle.</i>	Idée,	<i>idea.</i>
éperon,	<i>spur.</i>	impôt,	<i>tax.</i>
épine, <i>f.</i>	<i>thorn.</i>	injure,	<i>abuse.</i>
épingle, <i>f.</i>	<i>pin.</i>	jour,	<i>day.</i>
épreuve, <i>f.</i>	<i>trial.</i>	jugé, <i>m.</i>	<i>judge.</i>
espérance,	<i>hope.</i>	justesse,	<i>exactness.</i>
espion,	<i>spy.</i>	Lait,	<i>milk.</i>
esquisse,	<i>sketch.</i>	langue, <i>f.</i>	<i>tongue.</i>
état,	<i>state.</i>	lecture,	<i>reading.</i>
étoile, <i>f.</i>	<i>star.</i>	lettre, <i>f.</i>	<i>letter.</i>
étude, <i>f.</i>	<i>study.</i>	lien,	<i>tie.</i>
éventail,	<i>fan.</i>	lieu,	<i>place.</i>
Faiblesse,	<i>weakness.</i>	lune, <i>f.</i>	<i>moon.</i>
famille,	<i>family.</i>	lunettes,	<i>spectacles.</i>
faute, <i>f.</i>	<i>fault.</i>	luxé, <i>m.</i>	<i>luxury.</i>
femme,	<i>woman.</i>	Maître,	<i>master.</i>
fenêtre, <i>f.</i>	<i>window.</i>	maladie,	<i>illness.</i>
fer,	<i>iron.</i>	malheur,	<i>misfortune.</i>
fermé, <i>té,</i>	<i>firmness.</i>	matin,	<i>morning.</i>
feu,	<i>fire.</i>	mer,	<i>sea.</i>
feuille,	<i>leaf.</i>	mois,	<i>month.</i>
fidélité,	<i>faithfulness.</i>	moisson,	<i>harvest.</i>
fièvre, <i>f.</i>	<i>fever.</i>	moulin,	<i>mill.</i>
flèche, <i>f.</i>	<i>arrow.</i>	mouvement,	<i>motion.</i>
fleur,	<i>flower.</i>	mur,	<i>wall.</i>
fleuve, <i>m.</i>	<i>river.</i>	Naissance,	<i>birth.</i>
foi, <i>f.</i>	<i>faith.</i>	neige, <i>f.</i>	<i>snow.</i>
foin,	<i>hay.</i>	nid,	<i>nest.</i>
force, <i>f.</i>	<i>strength.</i>	nuit,	<i>night.</i>
foule, <i>f.</i>	<i>crowd.</i>	Oiseau,	<i>bird.</i>
fromage,	<i>cheese.</i>	ombre, <i>f.</i>	<i>shadow.</i>
fumée,	<i>smoke.</i>	ongle, <i>m.</i>	<i>nail.</i>
fureur,	<i>fury.</i>	ordre, <i>m.</i>	<i>order.</i>
Gâteau,	<i>cake.</i>	orge, <i>m.</i>	<i>barley.</i>
gazon,	<i>turf.</i>	orgueil,	<i>pride.</i>
gelée,	<i>frost.</i>	orient,	<i>east.</i>
glace,	<i>ice.</i>	occident,	<i>west.</i>
gloire,	<i>glory.</i>	Paille,	<i>straw.</i>
goût,	<i>taste.</i>	paix,	<i>peace.</i>
graine, <i>f.</i>	<i>seed.</i>	palais,	<i>palace.</i>
grandeur,	<i>greatness.</i>	panier,	<i>basket.</i>
guerre,	<i>war.</i>	paysage,	<i>landscape.</i>

peigne, *m.*
 perfidie,
 perte, *f.*
 peste, *f.*
 peuple, *m.*
 pierre,
 pillage,
 pitié, *f.*
 plomb,
 pluie,
 plume, *f.*
 poche, *f.*
 poids,
 pont,
 porte,
 poudre, *f.*
 pré,
 présage,
 présent,
 prix,
 progrès,
 pudeur,
 Raison,
 rasoir,
 ravage,
 rayon,
 règle, *f.*
 repas,
 réponse, *f.*
 reproche, *m.*
 rêve, *m.*
 ronce, *f.*
 roue, *f.*
 Sac,
 savon,
 serment,
 serrure,
 soir,
 sort,
 soumission,
 souris, *f.*
 suffrage,
 Tableau,
 tache, *f.*
 tapis,
 témérité,
 titre, *m.*
 travail,
 tristesse,
 trou,
 troupe, *f.*

comb.
treachery.
loss.
plague.
people.
stone.
plunder.
pity.
lead.
rain.
pen.
pocket.
weight.
bridge.
door.
powder.
meadow.
omen.
gift.
price.
progress.
modesty.
reason.
razor.
havoc.
ray.
rule.
meal.
answer.
reproach.
dream.
bramble.
wheel.
bag.
soap.
oath.
lock.
evening.
fate.
submission.
mouse.
vote.
picture.
blot.
carpet.
rashness.
tile.
work.
sadness.
hole.
troop.

troupeau,
 Vaisseau,
 vent,
 ver,
 verge, *f.*
 vérité,
 vertu, *f.*
 vie,
 univers,
 voisin,
 voix,
 voyage,
 usage,

stock.
ship.
wind.
worm.
yard.
truth.
virtue.
life.
universe.
neighbour.
voice.
travel.
custom.

14. A Series of Adjectives.

Absolu,
 adroit,
 affable,
 affreux,
 aimable,
 aise,
 aisé,
 amer,
 ancien,
 assidu,
 aveugle,
 avide,
 Barbare,
 bas,
 beau,
 blanc,
 bleu,
 bon,
 bossu,
 Capricieux,
 chaud,
 chauve,
 cher,
 clair,
 conforme,
 contagieux,
 content,
 convenable,
 coupable,
 cru,
 curieux,
 Dangereux,
 dédaigneux,
 dégoûtant,
 dernier,
 désagréable,

absolute.
dexterous.
courteous.
frightful.
amiable.
glad.
easy.
bitter.
old.
assiduous.
blind.
greedy.
barbarous.
low.
fine.
white.
blue.
good.
crooked.
whimsical.
hot.
bald.
dear.
clear.
conformable.
contagious.
satisfied.
fit.
guilty.
raw.
curious.
dangerous.
disdainful.
loathsome.
last.
unpleasant.

difficile,	<i>difficult.</i>	infidèle,	<i>unfaithful.</i>
digne,	<i>worthy.</i>	ingrat,	<i>ingrateful.</i>
douloureux,	<i>painful.</i>	injurieux,	<i>injurious.</i>
douteux,	<i>doubtful.</i>	injuste,	<i>unjust.</i>
doux,	<i>sweet.</i>	inquiet,	<i>restless.</i>
droit,	<i>straight.</i>	insensé,	<i>mad.</i>
Éclatant,	<i>bright.</i>	inutile,	<i>useless.</i>
effroyable,	<i>frightful.</i>	ivre,	<i>drunk.</i>
ennuyeux,	<i>tedious.</i>	Jaloux,	<i>jealous.</i>
enroué,	<i>hoarse.</i>	jaune,	<i>yellow.</i>
entêté,	<i>stubborn.</i>	jeune,	<i>young.</i>
envieux,	<i>envious.</i>	joli,	<i>pretty.</i>
épais,	<i>thick.</i>	juste,	<i>just.</i>
étonnant,	<i>wonderful.</i>	Lâche,	<i>coward.</i>
étrange,	<i>strange.</i>	large,	<i>broad.</i>
étranger,	<i>foreign.</i>	las,	<i>tired.</i>
étroit,	<i>narrow.</i>	lent,	<i>slow.</i>
exquis,	<i>exquisite.</i>	libre,	<i>free.</i>
Fâcheux,	<i>sad.</i>	Maigre,	<i>lean.</i>
facile,	<i>easy.</i>	malaide,	<i>sick.</i>
faible,	<i>weak.</i>	malaisé,	<i>hard.</i>
fameux,	<i>famous.</i>	malheureux,	<i>unhappy.</i>
faux,	<i>false.</i>	mauvais,	<i>bad.</i>
féroce,	<i>fierce.</i>	méchant,	<i>wicked.</i>
fertile,	<i>fruitful.</i>	méprisable,	<i>contemptible.</i>
flatteur,	<i>flattering.</i>	muët,	<i>dumb.</i>
fort,	<i>strong.</i>	Nécessaire,	<i>necessary.</i>
frais,	<i>fresh.</i>	net,	<i>clean.</i>
Généreux,	<i>generous.</i>	neuf,	<i>new.</i>
glorieux,	<i>glorious.</i>	noir,	<i>black.</i>
gracieux,	<i>graceful.</i>	nombreux,	<i>numerous.</i>
grand,	<i>great.</i>	nouveau,	<i>new.</i>
gras,	<i>fat.</i>	nuisible,	<i>hurtful.</i>
gros,	<i>big.</i>	Obéissant,	<i>obedient.</i>
Habile,	<i>able.</i>	odieux,	<i>odious.</i>
hardi,	<i>bold.</i>	orageux,	<i>stormy.</i>
haut,	<i>high.</i>	ordinaire,	<i>usual.</i>
heureux,	<i>happy.</i>	Parfait,	<i>perfect.</i>
honnête,	<i>honest.</i>	perfidé,	<i>perfidious.</i>
honteux,	<i>shameful.</i>	périlleux,	<i>perilous.</i>
humain,	<i>humane.</i>	pesant,	<i>heavy.</i>
humide,	<i>damp.</i>	petit,	<i>little.</i>
Illustre,	<i>illustrious.</i>	pieux,	<i>pious.</i>
imparfait,	<i>imperfect.</i>	plaintif,	<i>mournful.</i>
impie,	<i>impious.</i>	plein,	<i>full.</i>
importun,	<i>troublesome.</i>	poli,	<i>civil.</i>
incommode,	<i>inconvenient.</i>	profond,	<i>deep.</i>
incrédule,	<i>incredulous.</i>	prodigue,	<i>prodigal.</i>
indigne,	<i>unworthy.</i>	Réel,	<i>real.</i>
industriel,	<i>industrious.</i>	régulier,	<i>regular.</i>
infâme,	<i>infamous.</i>	respectueux,	<i>respectful.</i>

rêveur,	<i>thoughtful.</i>	téméraire,	<i>rash.</i>
rusé,	<i>cunning.</i>	timide,	<i>fearful.</i>
Sage,	<i>wise.</i>	tranquille,	<i>quiet.</i>
saint,	<i>holy.</i>	triste,	<i>sad.</i>
sauvage,	<i>wild.</i>	Vert,	<i>green.</i>
sec,	<i>dry.</i>	véritable,	<i>true.</i>
sérieux,	<i>serious.</i>	vieux,	<i>old.</i>
superflu,	<i>superfluous.</i>	voluptueux,	<i>voluptuous.</i>
Tel,	<i>such.</i>	vrai,	<i>true.</i>

SOUNDS OF BIRDS AND BEASTS.

Les oiseaux chantent,	<i>birds sing.</i>
le perroquet parle,	<i>the parrot talks.</i>
le merle siffle,	<i>the blackbird whistles.</i>
la colombe gémit,	<i>the dove cooes.</i>
le pigeon roucoule,	<i>the pigeon cooes.</i>
le coq chante,	<i>the cock crows.</i>
la poule glousse,	<i>the hen clucks.</i>
le corbeau croasse,	<i>the raven croaks.</i>
le cheval hennit,	<i>the horse neighs.</i>
l'âne brait,	<i>the ass brays.</i>
le bœuf meugle,	<i>the ox lows.</i>
le taureau mugit,	<i>the bull roars.</i>
le lion rugit,	<i>the lion roars.</i>
le serpent siffle,	<i>the snake hisses.</i>
la brebis bêle,	<i>the sheep bleats.</i>
le chat miaule et file,	<i>the cat mews and purrs.</i>
le chien aboie,	<i>the dog barks.</i>
le lièvre crie,	<i>the hare squeaks.</i>
le loup hurle,	<i>the wolf howls.</i>
le cerf brame,	<i>the stag brays.</i>
la grenouille coasse,	<i>the frog croaks.</i>

CHAP. II.

OF ORTHOGRAPHY.

ORTHOGRAPHY is the art and manner of spelling correctly, according to the custom established, the words of a language.

In this chapter I will speak, 1. of the proper spelling of words; 2. of the apostrophe; 3. of the hyphen, and cédilla; 4. of the parenthesis, quotations, diæresis, and abbreviations; 5. of punctuation; and, 6. of the use of capital letters.

OF THE PROPER SPELLING OF FRENCH WORDS.

I will here only make some observations which are conformable to the practice of good authors.

1. A simple or radical word has usually for its final that consonant which begins the next syllable of the word derived from it: thus, *plomb*, lead, has *b* for its final, *blanc*, white, *c*, *camp*, camp, *p*, &c. because the second syllable of *plomber*, to lead, begins with *b*, of *blancheur*, whiteness, with *c*, and of *camper*, to encamp, with *p*.

2. We usually write *am*, *em*, *im*, *om*, *um*, and pronounce *an*, *en*, *in*, *on*, *un*, in the words in which *m* is followed by *b*, *p*, or another *m*; such are *chambre*, room, *emporter*, to take away, *emmener*, to carry away, &c.

3. We write *dont* with a *t*, when it is a relative pronoun, and with a *c* when it is a conclusive conjunction: as, *les avantages dont nous jouissons viennent de Dieu*; *nous devons donc lui en rendre des actions de grâce*; the advantages which we enjoy come from God; we ought then to thank him for them.

4. The word *quand* has a *d* for its final, when it signifies *when*; as, *quand viendrez-vous*? *when* will you come? and a *t* when it signifies *as for*. Example: *quant à moi, je le blâme*; *as for* me, I blame him.

5. We double the consonants in most words derived from the *Latin*, when they are double in that language: thus, *approuver*, to approve, is spelt with *pp*, and *offrir*, to offer, with *ff*, because they come from the Latin verbs, *approbare*, *offerre*, in which these consonants are double.

6. The consonants *l*, *m*, *n*, *t*, are often doubled after *a* and *e*, when the syllable is to be sounded short or open, whether the words are derived from the Latin or not. Thus we write with a double consonant, *salle*, *chandelle*, *femme*, *canne*, *colonne*, *patte*, *assiette*, &c.

7. *P* is often double when it comes after *a* or *o*; as *apprendre*, to learn, *opprimer*, to oppress, &c.

OF THE APOSTROPHE.

The apostrophe is a kind of comma, formed thus ('), which is put between two letters, to denote the elision of one vowel before another.

A and *e* suffer elision in the *monosyllables*, *le, la, je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, que*, when the word following begins with a vowel or *h* mute: thus, we write, *Poiseau*, bird, *l'amitié*, friendship, *l'homme*, man, *j'ai*, I have, &c. instead of *le oiseau, la amitié, le homme, je ai*; but *ce* and *je* joined to a verb preceding are not cut short: as, *est-ce à moi?* is it mine? *ai-je été avide?* was I greedy?

They do not suffer elision before *oui*, yes, *huit*, eight, *huitième*, eighth, *onze*, eleven, *onzième*, eleventh, nor after a verb in the imperative mood: thus we write *il n'y a que oui ou non*; there is nothing but yes or no; *de onze, il n'en resta que huit*; out of eleven, eight only remained: *dites-le à mon père*, tell it to my father; and not *il n'y a qu'ou ou non*; nor *d'onze, il n'en resta qu'huit*; *dites l'à mon père*.

I suffers elision in the conjunction *si*, if, before the personal pronouns *il*, he, or *ils*, they, but not before *elle*, she, nor any substantive whatever: thus we write, *s'il vient*, if he comes, with an apostrophe; and *si elle vient*, if she comes, without elision.

A vowel never suffers elision in a word of more than one syllable, unless it be a conjunction composed of *que*, as *quoiqu'il dise*, though he says; but the preposition *entre*, between, joined with the pronouns, *eux, elles*, and some verbs, as *entr'eux, entr'ouvrir*, also the adjective *grande*, when joined to some words, as, *grand'mère*, suffer elision by the apostrophe.

OF THE HYPHEN AND CEDILLA.

The *Hyphen* (in French, *le trait d'union*) is a line across thus (-), which is used—

1. After a verb followed by the pronouns, *je, moi, tu, toi, nous, vous, il, ils, elle, elles, le, la, les, lui, leur, y, en, ce, on*; as *parlé-je?* do I speak? *viens-tu?* dost thou come? *dis-moi*, tell me, *voyez-les*, see them, &c.

2. Between several words so joined, that they make but one; as, *avant-coureur*, forerunner, *arc-en-ciel*, rainbow, *cure-dent*, toothpick; and with *très* joined to an adjective, as, *très-haut*, very high.

3. Between the particles *ci* or *là*, and the word which

precedes them ; as, *celui-ci*, this, *celui-là*, that, *cet homme-ci*, this man, *cette femme-là*, that woman.

N.B. When a verb interrogatively used ends with a vowel, we put a *t*, with two *hyphens*, between it and the pronoun *il*, *elle*, or *on* : thus, *A-t-il*? Has he? *Parle-t-elle*? Does she speak? *Viendra-t-on*? Will they come? &c.

4. The *hyphen* is used at the end of a line, when there is no room to write the whole word. The syllables of a word are then divided, but not the letters of the same syllable : thus, for instance, if you cannot write the word *moment* in the same line, you may end it with *mo-*, and begin the other with *ment* ; but you cannot end one line with *mom*, and begin the other with *ent*.

The *Cedilla* is a little mark, thus (*ç*) which is put under *ça*, *ço*, *çu*, when they must be sounded *sa*, *so*, *su* : thus, *menaçant*, threatening, *conçu*, conceived, *leçon*, lesson, with a cedilla, are pronounced as if they were written *menâssa*, *consu*, *lessou*.

When *c* has the sound of an *s*, in the present of the infinitive, it has the same sound in all the tenses and persons of the same verb, and therefore must have a *cedilla* when it is followed by *a*, *o*, or *u*.

OF PARENTHESES, GUILLEMETS, DIERESSES, AND ABBREVIATIONS.

1. A *Parenthesis* is made thus (*)*, and is used to enclose an occasional sentence, interposed in the middle of the principal one. The use of *parentheses* must not be too frequent.

2. A *Guillemet* is a double inverted comma (*“*) put at the beginning, and at the end, or at the beginning of each line of a passage extracted from another author. Example : *L'avarice est un vice infâme ; voici ce qu'en dit Bourdaloue : “ L'avarice corrompt tout, elle renverse tout, elle domine les hommes, elle en fait des esclaves, et les abrutit.”*

3. The *Dieresis* (in French, *le tréma*) is two dots, thus, (*¨*), put over the vowels *ë*, *ï*, or *ü*, when they are not of the same syllable as the vowel preceding ; such are *Noël*, Christmas, *haï*, hated, *Saül*.

But the *tréma* is not applied to all cases of this sort, though it would serve as a guide to the pronunciation of

<i>aiguille,</i>	needle,	<i>argua,</i>	argued,
<i>aiguillon,</i>	goad,	<i>Guise,</i>	Guise,
<i>aiguiser,</i>	to whet,	<i>Le Guide,</i>	Guido,
<i>arguer,</i>	to argue,		

as is the custom with *aiguë*, acute, *ciguë*, hemlock, &c.

4. The *Abbreviations* the most used in French are, *Mr.* or *M.* for *Monsieur*. *Mde.* for *Madame*. *Mlle.* for *Mademoiselle*. *MM.* for *Messieurs*. *S. M.* for *Sa Majesté*. *S. M. Imp.* for *Sa Majesté Impériale*. *S. M. T. C.* for *Sa Majesté Très-Chrétienne*. *S. M. Cath.* for *Sa Majesté Catholique*. *S. M. Brit.* for *Sa Majesté Britannique*. *S. A. R.* for *Son Altesse Royale*. *S. A. E.* for *Son Altesse Electorale*. *J. C.* for *Jésus Christ*. *CP.* for *Constantinople*. *MS.* for *Manuscrit*. *Sept. or 7bre.* for *Septembre*. *Oct. or 8bre.* for *Octobre*. *Nov. or 9bre.* for *Novembre*. *Dec. or 10bre.* for *Décembre*.

OF PUNCTUATION.

Punctuation is used in writing and printing, to distinguish one sentence from another, and to mark the different parts of a sentence.

The *stops* are of six sorts, of which the names and figures are as follow:—

- (,) une virgule.....a comma.
- (;) un point et une virgule.....a semicolon.
- (:) deux points.....a colon.
- (.) un point.....a full stop.
- (?) un point d'interrogation.....a note of interrogation.
- (!) un point d'admiration.....a note of admiration.

These *stops* are necessary to avoid obscurity, to prevent misconstructions, and for the better understanding of what we read or write.

A *Comma* is used, 1. within a sentence, to distinguish the things enumerated: as, *Les parties du discours sont, le substantif, l'adjectif, le pronom, le verbe, l'adverbe, &c.* the parts of speech are, the substantive, the adjective, the pronoun, the verb, the adverb, &c.: 2. to distinguish the different parts of a sentence, when they require no subdivision into subordinate classes: as, *il est bien difficile, quelque philosophie qu'on ait, de souffrir longtemps sans se plaindre;* it is very difficult, whatever philosophy we may have, to suffer long without complaining.

The placing of full stops must determine whether the punctuation of a sentence can be *graduated*; and then the *comma* serves to subdivide the parts distinguished by a colon or semicolon, if they require it.

A *Semicolon* is used to distinguish the two parts of a sentence of a pretty good length, when the first has a complete sense of itself: as, *on est coupable quand on garde son argent sans vouloir s'en servir au besoin; c'est là ce qu'on appelle avarice*; men are guilty when they keep their money, without being willing to apply it to the supply of their wants; this is what is called avarice.

The *Colon* is used after part of a sentence which might stand alone, because it makes a complete sense of itself, but which is, however, followed by another, which explains or extends it: as, *il ne faut point se moquer des malheureux: peut-on se flatter de ne l'être jamais soi-même?* people ought not to laugh at the unfortunate: can they flatter themselves that they shall never be so themselves?

A *Full Stop* is used when the sentence is complete: as, *la charité est la première des vertus Chrétiennes*; charity is the first of Christian virtues.

A *Note of Interrogation* is used at the end of a sentence which expresses a question: as, *Mr. votre père est-il à la maison?* is your father at home?

A *Note of Admiration* is put at the end of a sentence which expresses admiration or surprise: as, *que vous êtes heureux!* how happy you are!

N.B. In reading a book, you must stop a little at every comma, a little longer at a semicolon, more at a colon than at a semicolon, and more at a full stop than at a colon.

OF CAPITAL LETTERS.

Capital or great letters are used,

1. At the beginning of every sentence in prose: they are, besides, used at the beginning of every verse in poetry.

Example: —

Prose. { La vertu est aimable. Le vice est odieux.
 { *Virtue is amiable. Vice is odious.*

Poetry. { Choisissez des amis de qui la piété
 { Vous soit un sûr garant de leur fidélité.

2. All Christian and proper names of persons, kingdoms, provinces, towns, places, rivers, ships, mountains, and also

the names of heathen gods and goddesses, are written with a capital letter : as, *Mars, Venus, Cicéron, César, Londres, la Tamise, les Alpes, la France, l'Angleterre, la Bourgogne, &c.*

Observe that *je, I*, is not written with a capital in the body of a sentence, as in English.

AN ALPHABETICAL SERIES

OF THE KINGDOMS, REPUBLICS, PROVINCES, AND PRINCIPAL TOWNS, WHICH HAVE A DIFFERENT DENOMINATION IN FRENCH AND IN ENGLISH.

* * * The letter E. denotes an Empire, K. a Kingdom, P. a Province, T. a Town, and R. a Republic.

<i>English.</i>	<i>French.</i>	<i>English.</i>	<i>French.</i>
Africa,	<i>Afrique.</i>	Corsica,	<i>Corse.</i>
America,	<i>Amérique.</i>	Corunna, T.	<i>Corogne.</i>
Antioch, T.	<i>Antioche.</i>	Cracow, T.	<i>Cracovie.</i>
Antwerp, T.	<i>Anvers.</i>	Cyprus,	<i>Cypre.</i>
Apulia, P.	<i>la Pouille.</i>	Damascus, T.	<i>Damas.</i>
Athens, T.	<i>Athènes.</i>	Dauphiny, P.	<i>Dauphiné.</i>
Attica, P.	<i>Attique.</i>	Denmark, K.	<i>Danemark.</i>
Austria, E.	<i>Autriche.</i>	Dover, T.	<i>Douvres.</i>
Babylon, T.	<i>Babylone.</i>	Dunkirk, T.	<i>Dunkerque.</i>
Basil, T.	<i>Bâle.</i>	Edinburgh, T.	<i>Edimbourg.</i>
Bavaria, K.	<i>Bavière.</i>	Egypt, K.	<i>Egypte.</i>
Bern, T.	<i>Berne.</i>	England, K.	<i>Angleterre.</i>
Bohemia, K.	<i>Bohème.</i>	Ephesus, T.	<i>Ephèse.</i>
Bologna, T.	<i>Bologne.</i>	Epidaurus, T.	<i>Epidaurre.</i>
Brasil, P.	<i>Brésil.</i>	Epirus, K.	<i>Epire.</i>
Bremen, T.	<i>Brême.</i>	Flanders, P.	<i>Flandres.</i>
Brittany, P.	<i>Bretagne.</i>	Frankfort, T.	<i>Francfort.</i>
Britain, K.	<i>Bretagne.</i>	Gascony, P.	<i>Gascogne.</i>
Brussels, T.	<i>Bruzelles.</i>	Geneva, R.	<i>Genève.</i>
Burgundy, P.	<i>Bourgogne.</i>	Genoa, R.	<i>Gènes.</i>
Cairo, T.	<i>le Caire.</i>	Germany, E.	<i>Allemagne.</i>
Calabria, P.	<i>Calabre.</i>	Ghent, T.	<i>Gand.</i>
Canterbury, T.	<i>Cantorbéry.</i>	Greece, K.	<i>Grèce.</i>
Cappadocia, P.	<i>Cappadoce.</i>	Guelderland, P.	<i>Gueldres.</i>
Calcedonia, T.	<i>Calcédoine.</i>	Hague, T.	<i>La Haie.</i>
Cologne, T.	<i>Cologne.</i>	Hanover, P.	<i>Hanovre.</i>
Copenhagen, T.	<i>Copenhague.</i>	Holland, K.	<i>Hollande.</i>
Corinth, T.	<i>Corinthe.</i>	Hungary, K.	<i>Hongrie.</i>
Cornwall, P.	<i>Cornouailles.</i>	Japan, E.	<i>Japon.</i>

<i>English.</i>	<i>French.</i>	<i>English.</i>	<i>French.</i>
Iceland,	<i>Islande.</i>	Palermo, T.	<i>Palerme.</i>
Ireland, K.	<i>Irlande.</i>	Persia, K.	<i>Perse.</i>
Italy,	<i>Italie.</i>	Pharsalia, T.	<i>Pharsale.</i>
Lacedæmon, T.	<i>Lacédémone.</i>	Picardy, P.	<i>Picardie.</i>
Lancaster, T.	<i>Lancastre.</i>	Poland, K.	<i>Pologne.</i>
Leghorn, T.	<i>Livourne.</i>	Prussia, K.	<i>Prusse.</i>
Leyden, T.	<i>Leyde.</i>	Ratisbon, T.	<i>Ratisbonne.</i>
Lisbon, T.	<i>Lisbonne.</i>	Saguntum, T.	<i>Sagonte.</i>
Lisle, T.	<i>Lille.</i>	Sardinia, K.	<i>Sardaigne.</i>
Lombardy, P.	<i>Lombardie.</i>	Sardia, T.	<i>Sardes.</i>
London, T.	<i>Londres.</i>	Savoy,	<i>Savoie.</i>
Lorrain, P.	<i>Lorraine.</i>	Saxony, P.	<i>Saxe.</i>
Lucca, R.	<i>Luques.</i>	Scotland, K.	<i>Ecosse.</i>
Lyons, T.	<i>Lyon.</i>	Sicily, K.	<i>Sicile.</i>
Mantua, T.	<i>Mantoue.</i>	Sluys, T.	<i>L'Ecluse.</i>
Mecca, T.	<i>La Mecque.</i>	Spain, K.	<i>Espagne.</i>
Mechlin, T.	<i>Malines.</i>	Sparta, T.	<i>Sparte.</i>
Mentz, T.	<i>Mayence.</i>	Suabia, P.	<i>Souabe.</i>
Mexico, P.	<i>Mexique.</i>	Sweden, K.	<i>Suède.</i>
Miletus, T.	<i>Milet.</i>	Tarsus, T.	<i>Tarse.</i>
Minorca,	<i>Minorque.</i>	Thebaid, P.	<i>Thébaïde.</i>
Mogul, E.	<i>Mogol.</i>	Thessaly, P.	<i>Thessalie.</i>
Morocco, E.	<i>Maroc.</i>	Toledo, T.	<i>Tolède.</i>
Muscovy, E.	<i>Moscovie.</i>	Triers, T.	<i>Trèves.</i>
Nantz, T.	<i>Nantes.</i>	Troy, T.	<i>Troie.</i>
Nimeguen, T.	<i>Nimègue.</i>	Turkey, E.	<i>Turquie.</i>
Nineveh, T.	<i>Ninive.</i>	Tuscany,	<i>Toscane.</i>
Normandy, P.	<i>Normandie.</i>	Valencia, T.	<i>Valence.</i>
Norway, K.	<i>Norvège.</i>	Venice, R.	<i>Venise.</i>
Odenburg, T.	<i>Odembourg.</i>	Vicenza, T.	<i>Vicence.</i>
Ostend, T.	<i>Ostende.</i>	Wales, P.	<i>Galles.</i>
Otranto, T.	<i>Otrante.</i>	Warsaw, T.	<i>Varsovie.</i>
Padua, T.	<i>Padoue.</i>	York, T.	<i>York.</i>

OBSERVATIONS.

1. All other names of kingdoms, provinces, and towns, ending in *a* English, become French by changing *a* into *e* mute. Examples :—

English: Asia, Arabia, Cesarea, Carolina, &c.

French: Asie, Arabie, Césarée, Caroline, &c.

2. The other names of towns, ending in *burg*, become French by changing *burg* into *bourg*, thus :—

English: Ausburg, Friburg, Hamburg, Brandenburg, &c.

French: Ausbourg, Fribourg, Hambourg, Brandebourg, &c.

3. Most of the other names not here specified are the same in both languages.

A METHOD

TO LEARN THE FRENCH DENOMINATION OF HEATHEN GODS,
AND OF NAMES TAKEN FROM THE GREEK OR LATIN :
AND IN WHAT THEY DIFFER FROM THE ENGLISH.

1. The proper names of men ending in English in *a* are the same in both languages ; thus we say,

English : Agrippa, Dolabella, Nerva, Caligula, &c.

French : Agrippa, Dolabella, Nerva, Caligula, &c.

2. The proper names of women and goddesses ending in *a*, become French by changing the final *a* into *e* mute.
Examples : —

English : Julia, Cleopatra, Octavia, Agrippina, Diana, &c.

French : Julie, Cléopâtre, Octavie, Agrippine, Diane, &c.

3. The greater number of proper names ending in English in *as*, become French by changing *as* into *e* mute.
Examples : —

English : Mecenas, Eneas, Pythagoras, &c.

French : Mécène, Enée, Pythagore, &c.

4. The proper names ending in English in *es*, become French by changing that final into *e* mute. Examples : —

English : Demosthenes, Ulysses, Socrates, &c.

French : Démosthène, Ulysse, Socrate, &c.

5. The proper names ending in *o* in English, become French by changing *o* into *on*. Examples : —

English : Dido, Cicero, Cato, Plato, Scipio, &c.

French : Didon, Cicéron, Caton, Platon, Scipion, &c.

6. The proper names ending in English in *us* or *ius*, are the same in French when they are of two syllables only.
Examples : —

English : Brutus, Cyrus, Croesus, Venus, &c.

French : Brutus, Cyrus, Crésus, Vénus, &c.

7. Most proper names ending in *us*, *eus*, or *ius*, become French by changing that final into *e* mute, when they are composed of three or more syllables. Examples : —

English : Camillus, Orpheus, Esculapius, &c.

French : Camille, Orphée, Esculape, &c.

8. Most proper names ending in English in *is* or *al*, are the same in both languages. Examples :—

English : Sesostris, Juvenal, Annibal, Asdrubal, &c.

French : *Sésostris, Juvénal, Annibal, Asdrubal, &c.*

9. Most proper names ending in English in *ander*, become French by changing *ander* into *andre* : as,

English : Alexander, Leander, Lysander, &c.

French : *Alexandre, Léandre, Lysandre, &c.*

A METHOD

FOR LEARNING WITH EASE SEVERAL THOUSAND
FRENCH WORDS.

RULE I.

Most nouns, substantive and adjective, which end in English with any of the seven following syllables, *ble*, *ce*, *de*, *ge*, *ne*, *ion*, and *ent*, are the same in French as in English. Thus we say in both languages, but without accents in English :

1. *ble*, Fable, visible, incapable, noble, sensible, &c.
2. *ce*, Province, distance, vica, évidence, force, &c.
3. *de*, Servitude, habitude, prélude, &c.
4. *ge*, Charge, passage, siège, fébrifuge, &c.
5. *ne*, Machine, scène, famine, doctrine, &c.
6. *ion*, Nation, opinion, union, éducation, religion, &c.
7. *ent*, Prudent, diligent, patient, content, &c.

RULE II.

Most English words ending in any of the seven following syllables, *ary*, *ory*, *cy*, *ty*, *ous*, *our*, and *or*, become French by changing the final, thus :—

1. *ary*, into *aire*, as military, *militaire*, &c.
2. *ory*, ... *oire*, as glory, *gloire*, &c.
3. *cy*, ... *ce*, as clemency, *clémence*, &c.
4. *ty*, ... *té*, as humanity, *humanité*, &c.
5. *ous*, ... *eux*, as dangerous, *dangereux*, &c.
6. *our*, ... *eur*, as favour, *faveur*, &c.
7. *or*, ... *eur*, as doctor, *docteur*, &c.

RULE III.

Most English verbs ending in *ise*, *use*, *ute*, become French by adding an *r* to the final : thus, to

ENGLISH.

FRENCH.

1. *ise*, add *r*, as baptise, realise, *baptiser, réaliser, &c.*
2. *use*, ... *r*, as abuse, excuse, *abuser, excuser, &c.*
3. *ute*, ... *r*, as dispute, refute, *disputer, réfuter, &c.*

RULE IV.

Most English verbs ending in *ate*, *fy*, or *ish*, become French by changing the final, as follows :—

ENGLISH.

FRENCH.

1. *ate*, into *er*, as accelerate, abrogate, *accélérer, abroger, &c.*
2. *fy*, ... *fier*, as justify, liquefy, *justifier, liquéfier, &c.*
3. *ish*, ... *ir*, as abolish, accomplish, *abolir, accomplir, &c.*

Note 1. Most nouns which end in *y*, except those mentioned in Rule 2., become French by changing that final into *ie*, and have the plural alike in both languages, thus :

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

English : folly, tragedy, fury ; follies, tragedies, furies.

French : *folie, tragédie, furie ; folies, tragédies, furies.*

Note 2. The verbs ending in *bute* and *tute* are excepted from Rule 3., and become French by changing *ute* into *uer* : as, to attribute, *attribuer*, to substitute, *substituer*.

Note 3. There are some exceptions to these four rules, particularly to the words ending in *ty* ; as pity, *pitié* ; amity, *amitié* ; but they are very few, and a great advantage will certainly be derived from learning these finals by heart.

PART II.

OF THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH.

THERE are in French nine parts of speech, called *article substantive, adjective, pronoun, verb, adverb, preposition conjunction, and interjection*: the first five are variable and the four others invariable.

CHAP. I.

OF THE ARTICLE.

THE article is a word, placed before a noun*, to specify the extent of the signification in which it is taken. There are in French three sorts of articles : *viz.*

1. definite : *le, m. la, f. les, pl. the.*
 2. indefinite : *un, m. une, f. no pl. a or an.*
 3. partitive : *du, m. de la, f. des, pl. some or any.*
-

CHAP. II.

OF SUBSTANTIVES.

THIS chapter is divided into four sections : *the first* explains the nature and the different kinds of substantives ; *the second* speaks of the different articles ; *the third* treats of their gender, and shows how to distinguish the masculine from the feminine ; *the fourth* teaches the plural of nouns, and its formation from the singular number.

* The word noun is applied to both substances and adjectives, but more commonly to the former.

SECTION I.

OF THE NATURE AND KINDS OF SUBSTANTIVES.

A *Substantive* is a word which expresses the name of a person, or an object, material, spiritual, or ideal : such as, *homme*, man ; *femme*, woman ; *cheval*, horse ; *maison*, house ; *vertu*, virtue, &c.

There are three sorts of substantives : viz. *proper*, *common*, and *collective*.

The *substantive proper* expresses some individual person or thing which cannot be divided into species : such are, *Pierre*, Peter ; *Londres*, London ; *Caton*, Cato ; *Paris*, Paris, &c.

The *substantive common* comprehends all objects of the same kind : such are, *royaume*, kingdom ; *rivière*, river ; *soldat*, soldier.

A *noun collective* represents the whole object : such are, *la nation*, the nation ; *l'armée*, the army ; *la flotte*, the fleet ; *le parlement*, the parliament.

N.B. See the use of substantives, Rules 21. and following, in the Syntax.

SECTION II.

OF NOUNS WITH THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

1. A Noun Masculine.

le roi, *the king*.

du roi, *of or from the king*.

au roi, *to the king*.

les rois, *the kings*.

des rois, *of or from the kings*.

aux rois, *to the kings*.

2. A Noun Feminine.

la reine, *the queen*.

de la reine, *of or from the*.

à la reine, *to the queen*.

les reines, *the queens*.

des reines, *of or from the*.

aux reines, *to the queen*.

3. A Noun beginning with a Vowel.

l'ami, *the friend*.

de l'ami, *of or from the*.

à l'ami, *to the friend*.

les amis, *the friends*.

des amis, *of or from the*.

aux amis, *to the friends*.

4. *A Noun beginning with an h mute.*

<i>l'homme, the man.</i>	<i>les hommes, the men.</i>
<i>de l'homme, of or from the.</i>	<i>des hommes, of or from the.</i>
<i>à l'homme, to the man.</i>	<i>aux hommes, to the men.</i>

5. *A Noun preceded by tout.*

SINGULAR.

<i>tout le monde, every body.</i>
<i>de tout le monde, of or from every body.</i>
<i>à tout le monde, to every body.</i>

PLURAL.

<i>tous les enfants, all the children.</i>
<i>de tous les enfants, of or from all the children.</i>
<i>à tous les enfants, to all the children.</i>

OF NOUNS WITH THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

MASCULINE.

<i>un jardin, a garden.</i>
<i>d'un jardin, of or from a.</i>
<i>à un jardin, to a garden.</i>

FEMININE.

<i>une maison, a house.</i>
<i>d'une maison, of or from.</i>
<i>à une maison, to a house.</i>

OF NOUNS WITH THE PARTITIVE ARTICLE.

SINGULAR, MASC.

<i>du pain, some bread.</i>
<i>à du pain, to some bread.</i>

PLURAL, MASC.

<i>des poissons, fishes.</i>
<i>à des poissons, to fishes.</i>

SINGULAR, FEM.

<i>de la viande, some meat.</i>
<i>à de la viande, to some meat.</i>

PLURAL, FEM.

<i>des oranges, oranges.</i>
<i>à des oranges, to oranges.</i>

OF PROPER NAMES.

<i>Londres, London.</i>	<i>Paris, Paris.</i>
<i>de Londres, of or from.</i>	<i>de Paris, of or from Paris.</i>
<i>à Londres, to London.</i>	<i>à Paris, to Paris.</i>
<i>Pierre, Peter.</i>	<i>Annibal, Annibal.</i>
<i>de Pierre, of or from Peter.</i>	<i>d'Annibal, of or from.</i>
<i>à Pierre, to Peter.</i>	<i>à Annibal, to Annibal.</i>

REMARKS.

1. *Du* and *des* are used by a contraction for *de le*, *de les*; and *au*, *aux*, for *à le*, *à les*, which contraction does not take place when a noun is preceded by *tout*, as above.

2. That all the nouns which begin with a vowel or *h* mute, take *l'*, *de l'*, and *à l'*, whether they be masculine or feminine, in order to avoid the hard sound which would result from the meeting of two vowels: thus, we say, *l'âme*, the soul, instead of *la âme*; *l'ambition*, the ambition, instead of *la ambition*, &c.

SECTION III.

OF THE GENDER OF NOUNS.

All words masculine and neuter in Latin, are masculine in French; as all words feminine in Latin, are feminine in French. Those derived from the Latin admit but of few exceptions, such as *arbor*, *avis*, *dolor*, *fons*, *os*, and a few others. We do not pretend to give in this place all the exceptions: it does not form a part of our plan.

1st. "Gender, in all languages, marks the distinction of sex; the French have but two genders, the masculine and feminine: the neuter they do not admit. The masculine gender denotes the male kind, as *un homme*, a man; *un lion*, a lion.

"The feminine gender expresses the female kind, as *une femme*, a woman; *une lionne*, a lioness; *un tigre*, *une tigresse*. In general, the final *e* mute indicates the feminine gender. There are many exceptions, but all are to be found in the following explanations, and in the alphabetical list of the terminations of all the nouns of the usual tongue.

" SUBSTANTIVES DENOTING SPECIES,

"Which have a fixed gender independently of termination.

"2d. God, his angels, cherubim and seraphim, are of the masculine gender.

"3d. All terms seeming to constitute an appellation, and all proper names of men and women, are of the gender of the sex to which they respectively belong, as are likewise all names of animals, when the male is distinguished from the female by a different denomination.

"When the same name is used for both male and female, as *un éléphant, un zèbre, une panthère, un vautour, un cygne, une caille, une perdrix, un barbeau, une truite, un congre*, its gender must then, like that of any inanimate object, be determined by an article or an adjective. Here the only difficulty remains with substantives ending in *e* mute, all the rest being of the masculine gender, with such exceptions as will be seen hereafter.

"4th. All *diminutives of animals*, when there is but one common denomination for both sexes, are of the masculine gender, whatever may be the gender of the original from which they are derived, as *un lionceau, un soriceau, un perdreau, un corcornillas, un carpillon, un couleuvreau, un vipereau, un bécasseau, &c.*, except *bécassine*; but these two latter, although derived from the word *bécasse*, and belonging to the genus, are not of the same species. In other cases the diminutives follow the gender their sex indicates; as, *un poulain, une pouliche, un cochet, une poulette*.

"5th. Diminutives of inanimate objects more generally follow the gender of their root, as *batelet, maisonnette, globule*, from *bateau, maison, globe, &c.*; however, *corbillon, soliveau, cruchon, savonnette, trousseau*, from *corbeille, solive, cruche, savon*, and *trousse*, and many others, do not.

"6th. All the names of the days, months, and seasons of the year are of the *masculine gender*, except *automne*, which is of both genders; when, however, the diminutive *mi* (half) is prefixed to the name of a month, the compound word then takes the feminine gender, as *la mi-Mai, la mi-Août, la mi-Septembre, &c.*, except also *la mi-carême*, and saint-days, as *la Saint-Jean, la Toussaint, &c.*

"7th. Nouns belonging to the decimal calculation, as *centime, décime, gramme, kilogramme, kilomètre, stère, &c.* are of the masculine gender, and nouns of number, as *un, deux, trois, &c.*: the only exception is *une*.

"8th. All names of *trees and shrubs* are masculine, except *yeuse, ébène, épine, ronce, viorne, vigne, aubépine, bourdaine, and hièble*. The names of *fruits, grains, plants, and flowers*, follow pretty generally the gender of their terminations. But there are too many exceptions to be introduced here: they are to be found in the table.

"All names of *metals*, without excepting *platine* and *manganèse*, formerly feminine, are masculine.

"All names of *minerals*, a few excepted, are masculine.

"All names of *colours*.

"All names of *mountains*, except those chains which have no singular, as *Alpes*, *Pyrénées*, &c.

"All names of *winds*, except *la bise*, *la tramontane*, *la brise*, and *les moussons*, are masculine.

"All names of *towns*, except those which necessarily take the article *la* before them, as *la Rochelle*, *la Ferté-sur-Aube*, &c., and some others, are masculine.

"9th. Ordinal, distributive, and proportional numbers, adjectives, and infinitives of verbs, prepositions, and adverbs,—all these, when used substantively, are masculine, as *le tiers*, *le quart*, *un cinquième*, *le quadruple*, *le beau*, *le sublime*, *le boire*, *le manger*, *le mieux*, *le pour*, *le contre*, *un parallèle* (a comparison), &c., except *la moitié*, and the elliptical forms of speech,—*une courbe*, *une tangente*, *une perpendiculaire*, *une parallèle*, *une antique*, used for *une ligne courbe*, *une ligne tangente*, &c. *Antique* is feminine, for the same reason, the word *médaille*, or *statue*, appearing to be understood. All names of *states*, *empires*, *kingdoms*, and *provinces*, are of the gender which their terminations indicate, except *le Bengale*, *le Mexique*, *le Péloponèse*, *le Maine*, *le Perche*, *le Rouergue*, *le Bigorre*, *le Vallage*, *la Franche-comté*, and perhaps a few more. In proper names of towns, where there is not an article to show the gender, the word *ville* (fem.) might be put to avoid doubt.

"10th. All names of *virtues* are of the feminine gender, except *courage*, *mérite*.

"GENDERS OF NOUNS MOSTLY DEPENDING ON THEIR TERMINATION.

"11th. There are a great many proper names of females, which, though they may not have the feminine termination, are of that gender, as the learner, from their nature, will easily comprehend; such are, among the heathens, *Pallas*, *Cérès*, *Thétis*, *Vénus*, *Junon*, *Didon*, &c.; among Christian names, *Sara*, *Debora*, *Elizabeth*, *Agnès*, &c.

"12th. All substantives compounded of a verb and a substantive are masculine, as *un porte-feuille*, *un portemouchettes*, &c., except *perce-feuille*, *perce-neige*, *perce-pierre*; viz. *la fleur qui perce la neige*, *serre-chaude*," &c.

TABLE

BY WHICH THE GENDER OF ANY NOUN IS KNOWN ACCORDING TO ITS TERMINATION; AND ALSO THE NUMBER OF WORDS EACH TERMINATION CONTAINS.

. All the letters of the French Alphabet are *masc.* according to the new plan; but we have followed here the old appellation as the most practicable.

A, 48.* Words ending in <i>a</i> are <i>masculine</i> , except <i>seppia</i> .	abre, <i>masc.</i> 3. <i>Exc.</i> escadre,
abe, <i>masc.</i> 10. <i>Exc.</i> syllabe.	afe, <i>fem.</i> 5. <i>Exc.</i> parafe.
able, <i>masc.</i> 11. <i>Exc.</i> étable, fable, table.	afe, <i>fem.</i> 1. afre, } <i>fem.</i> 4. affres, }
abre, <i>masc.</i> 5.	<i>Exc.</i> safre.
ac, act, acht, <i>masc.</i> 30.	ag, <i>masc.</i> 1.
ace, <i>fem.</i> 30. <i>Exc.</i> espace.	age, <i>masc.</i> 364. <i>Exc.</i> cage, image, nage (à la), plage, rage, page (of a book).†
ach, <i>masc.</i> 1.	agme, <i>fem.</i> 3. <i>Exc.</i> diaphragme.
ache, <i>fem.</i> 28. <i>Exc.</i> bravache, panache, relâche, rest.	agne, <i>fem.</i> 7. <i>Exc.</i> bague, champagne, wine, pagne.
achme, <i>fem.</i> 1.	agre, <i>masc.</i> 4. <i>Exc.</i> chiragre.
acle, <i>masc.</i> 10.	ague, <i>fem.</i> 6. <i>Exc.</i> vague, space, ossifrague.
acre, <i>masc.</i> 7. <i>Exc.</i> acre, nacre de perle, polacre, a vessel.	ai, <i>masc.</i> 22.
acte, <i>masc.</i> 5. <i>Exc.</i> épacte, cataracte.	
ade, <i>fem.</i> 145. <i>Exc.</i> grade.†	

* The figure indicates the number of nouns contained in each termination.

† For *alcade*, and *camarade*, see Rule I.

‡ And these words, very little used: — *enallage*, *passerage*, and *saxifrage*.

aide, *m. and f.*

aide, *helper, assistant, masc.*

aide, *help, assistance, fem.*

aides, *fem. 1.*

aie, *fem. 37.*

Exc. pagaie.

aier, or ayer; *see er.*

aigle, *m. and f. 1.*

aigle, *eagle, masc.*

aigle, *colours, fem.*

aigne, *fem. 1.*

aigre, *masc. 1.*

ail,

ails, } *masc. 28.*

aile, *fem. 2.*

aille, } *fem. 64.*

ailles,

aim, *masc. 4.*

Exc. faim.

ain, *masc. 60.*

Exc. main, nonnain.

aine, *fem. 39.*

*Exc. domaine.**

aint, *m. and f.*

saint, *masc.*

toussaint (la), *fem.*

ainte, *fem. 3.*

air, *masc. 8.*

Exc. chair.

aire, *masc. 238.*

*Exc. affaire, aire, chaire, glaire,
grammaire, haire, paire, ser-
pentaire, snake-root.*

ais, ais, *masc. 30.*

aise, *fem. 11.*

aisse, *fem. 3.*

ait, *masc. 17.*

aite, *fem. 5.; faite, is masc.*

aitre, *masc. 2.*

aive, *masc. 1.*

aix, *m. and f. 2.*

faix, *masc.*

paix, *fem.*

* For *capitaine*, *see Rule I.*

† And alike from the Greek.

§ For *bigame* and *hippopotame*, *see Rule I.*

|| For *maman*, *see Rule I.*

¶ For *âne*, *bibliomane*, *Anglomane*, *profane*, *masc.*, *see Rule I.*

al, *masc. 30.*

ale,

alle, } *fem. 51.*

*Exc. astragale, dédale†, inter-
valle, ovale, pétale, régale, a
revenue, scandale, and the
comp. of balle.*

âle, *masc. 6.*

alme, *masc. 3.*

Exc. palme, victory.

alque, *masc. 3.*

alse, *fem. 1.*

alte, *masc. 3.*

Exc. halte.

alve, *fem. 2.*

am, *masc. 2.*

ambe, *masc. 5.*

Exc. jambe.

ambre, *fem. 3.*

Exc. ambre.

ame,

amme, } *fem. 32.*

*Exc. amalgame, blâme, dic-
tame, drame, gramme‡, pro-
gramme, réclame, the calling
back a hawk.§*

amp, *masc. 2.*

ampe, *fem. 5.*

amphre, *masc. 1.*

ampre, *masc. 1.*

an, *masc. 91.||*

anc, *masc. 5.*

ance, *fem. 137.*

anche, *fem. 12.*

*Exc. dimanche, manche, a han-
dle.*

ancre, *masc. 3.*

Exc. ancre.

and, *masc. 8.*

ande, *fem. 25.*

Exc. multiplicande.

andre, *fem. 3.*

ane,¶

anne, } *fem. 43.*

† *Cannibale*, *see Rule I.*

ang, *masc.* 4.
 ange, *fem.* 18.
Exc. change, échange, rechange, mélange.*
 angle, and its derivative, *masc.*
Exc. sangle.
 angue, *fem.* 2.
 anle, *masc.* 3.
 anque, *fem.* 5.
Exc. saltimbanque, manque.
 ans, *masc.* 5.
 anse, *fem.* 5.
 ant, *masc.* 114.; *see* mant.†
 ante, *fem.* 36.
Exc. sycophante, adiante.
 antre, *masc.* 3.
 anvre, *m. and f.* 1.
 ao, *masc.* 1.
 ap, *masc.* 5.
 ape, † } *fem.* 20.
 appe, }
 aphe, *masc.* 28.
Exc. orthographe, épitaphe, épigraphe.
 apre, *m. and f.* 3.
 capre, sort of fruit, *fem.*
 capre, a privateer, *masc.*
 malapre, *masc.*
 aps, *masc.* 2.
 apt, *masc.* 1.
 aque, *fem.* 21.
Exc. abaque, braque, cloaque, laque, a kind of varnish, pâque, Easter, zodiaque. § *See* Rule I.
 ar, *masc.* 12.
 arbe, *fem.* 5.
Exc. barbe, a Barbary horse, *masc.*

arbre, *masc.* 2.
 arc, *masc.* 3.
 arce, *fem.* 2.
 arche, *fem.* 5.
Exc. patriarche.
 ard, *masc.* 74.
 arde, *fem.* 29.
Exc. corps-de-garde. ||
 are, }
 arre, } *fem.*
 arrhes, }
Exc. are, bécare, cigare, hectare, lares, phare. ¶
 arge, *fem.* 8.
 argue, *fem.* 5.
Exc. large. **
 arme, *masc.* 7.
Exc. alarme, arme, larme.
 arne, *fem.* 2.
 arpe, *fem.* 4.
 arque ††, *fem.* 12.
 ars, *masc.* 1.
 art, *masc.* 13.
Exc. part, hart, a kind of rope.
 arte, *fem.* 7.
 artre, *fem.* 4.
Exc. tartre.
 arves, *masc.* 1.
 as, *masc.* 71.
 ase, *fem.* 14.
Exc. gymnase, Pégase, ukase, vase, a vase, *masc.*
 asme, *masc.* 6.
Exc. plasme,
 aspe, *masc.* 1.
 asque, *fem.* 6.
Exc. casque, masque.

* For *ange*, and *exchange*, *masc.*, *see* Rule II.

† *Enfant*, applied to a girl, belongs to Rule I., and cannot be considered as an exception.

‡ *Esculape*, *pape*, *satrape*, *masc.*, nouns of men, belong to Rule I.

§ *Polaque*, *masc.*, a Polish officer, *see* Rule I.

|| For *barde*, a poet, *garde*, a keeper, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

¶ For *avare*, *barbare*, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

** *Subrécargue*, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

†† *Aristarque*, *exarque*, *hérésiarque*, *monarque*, *tétrarque*, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

asse, *fem.* 35.

Exc. Parnasse, paillasse, a merry-andrew, the compounds of casse and chasse; casse-noisette and chasse-marée.

aste, *masc.* 9.

Exc. caste.

asthme, *masc.* 1.

astre, *masc.* 6.

Exc. piastre.

at-s, *masc.* 110.

ate-s; } *fem.* 33.
atte, }

Exc. atte, *fem.* without exception; aromate, automate, and scientific words, as acousmate, carbonate, &c.*

atre, *masc.* 11.

Exc. marâtre.

au, *masc.* 212.

Exc. eau, peau.

aube, *fem.* 3.

auce, *fem.* 4.

aud, aut, *masc.* 30.

aude, *fem.* 11.

auffa, *fem.* 1.

aufre, *fem.* 1.

auge, *fem.* 4.

augue, *fem.* 1.

aule, *fem.* 3.

Exc. Saule.

aume, *masc.* 5.

Exc. paume, and comp.

aune, *masc.* 4.

Exc. aune, an ell.

aupe, *fem.* 2.

aure, *masc.* 3.

Exc. taure.

ause, *fem.* 2.

ausse, *fem.* 3.

aut; *see* aud.

aute, *masc.* 3.

Exc. faute.

autre, *masc.* 1.

auve, *fem.* 3.

Exc. chauve.

auvre, *masc.* 1.

aux, *masc.* 15.

Exc. chaud, faux, or faulx, a scythe.

ave, *fem.* 15.

Exc. conclave, esclave, octave. †

avre, *masc.* 2.

ax, *masc.* 6.

axe, *fem.* 4.

Exc. axe and its derivatives.

aye; *see* aie.

ays; *see* ais.

az, *masc.* 1.

aze, *fem.* 2.

B, *masc.*

bé; *see* é.

D, *masc.*

É, é, *masc.* 76.

Exc. words ending in ié and té; *see* ié and té.

eau; *see* au.

èbe, *fem.* 1.

èbres, *fem.* 4. ‡

ec, *masc.* 7.

èce, *fem.* 6.

èche, } *fem.* 15.
èche, }

Exc. prêche, a protestant church, on the Continent.

ècle, *masc.* 1.

ect, *masc.* 2.

ecte, *masc.* 7.

Exc. collecte, pandectes, secte.

ectre, *masc.* 1.

ède, *masc.* 4.

èdre, *masc.* 3.

ée, *fem.* 219.

Exc. apogée, caducée, hyménée, lycée, mausolée, prytnée, périgée, scarabée, spon-

* Acrobat, aristocrat, &c., Mithridate, cravate, a soldier, are *masc.* and belong to Rule I.

† Brave, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

‡ Zèbre, *masc.*, *see* Rule I.

- dée, trophée, and some others
of the same sort.*
- ef-s, masc. 13.
Exc. clef and nef.
- effe, m. and f.
greffe, the rolls, a register, masc.
greffe, a graft, fem.
- èfle, m. and f. 2.
trèfle, masc.
nèfle, fem.
- ége, } masc. 10.
ège, }
- ègle, m. and f. 2.
Exc. règle, fem.†
- ègne, masc. 3.‡
ègue, masc. 3; one fem. is obso-
lete.
- ega, masc. 1.
eige, m. and f. 2.
pleige, masc.
neige, fem.
- eigle, masc. 1.
eigne, fem. 5.
Exc. peigne.§
- eil, masc. 25.
eille, fem. 14.; for the compounds,
see Rule XII.
- ein, masc. 6.
eine, fem. 8.
eing, masc. 1.
eint, masc. 1.
einte-s, fem. 7.
el, masc. 50.
èle, }
elle, } fem. 125.
êle, }
- Exc. érysipèle, libelle, modèle,
a comparison, and in geogra-
phy, poêle, a stove, zèle.
- en, masc. 1.
- embre, masc. 5.; see Rule VIII.
for the fem.
- ème, }
ême, } masc. 30
emme, }
- Exc. birème, and words alike
belonging to ancient ships,
crème. ||
- emble, masc. 1.
empe, fem. 3.
emple, masc. 3.
Exc. exemple, a copy, fem.
- ems, }
emps, } masc. 5.
en, }
- end, } masc. 7.
eng, }
- ence, fem. 122.
Exc. silence.
- enere, fem. 1.
ende, fem. 7.
Exc. dividende.
- endre, m. and f.
gendre, masc.
cendre, fem.
- ène, }
enne, } fem. 35.
- Exc. chène, frène, pène (of a
lock), phénomène.¶
- enre, masc. 1.
ens, masc. 12.
Exc. gens, when an adjective,
not common, is placed be-
fore it.
- ens, fem. 5.
ent, masc. 55.; see ment.
Exc. dent, and gent, a race.
- ente, fem. 21.
enthe, fem. 3.
entre, masc. 2.

* *Athée, morphée, proté, pygmée, &c. masc.*, Rule I. For *chasse-marée, rez-de-chaussée, &c.*, see Rule XII.

† *Espiègle, masc.*, see Rule I.

‡ *Duègne, fem.*, see Rule I.

§ *Enseigne, masc.*, officer, see Rule I.

|| *Femme*, see Rule I.

¶ For *catéchumène, évergumène, indigène, masc.*, see Rule I. *Hydrogène, oxigène*, scientific expressions, and *paratipomènes* and *protégomènes*, little used.

ep, *masc.* 3.épe, *fem.* 3.*Exc.* crêpe, a crape.éphe, *fem.* 2.épre-s, *fem.* 3.vêpre, *evening, masc.*; a provincialism.vêpres, *vespers, fem.*eps, *masc.* 4.epse, *fem.* 2.epte, *masc.* 2.eptre, *masc.* 2.èque, *fem.* 4.èque, *masc.* 2.er-s, *masc.* 584.*Exc.* cuiller, mer.erbe, *masc.* 7.*Exc.* herbe, gerbe.erce, *masc.* 10.*Exc.* berce, cow-parsnip, perce-feuille, perce-neige, perce-pierre; see Rule XII., tierce.erche, *fem.* 3.ercl, *masc.* 2.erd, *masc.* 1.ère, *fem.* 165.*Exc.* baptistère, caractère, cautère, cratère, hémisphère, ministère, monastère, mystère, planisphère presbytère, réverbère, comp. of sphère, viscère, ulcère, arrière, cimetière, derrière.erre, *masc.* 15.*Exc.* guerre, serre, talon, and serre hothouse, terre; for the comp., see Rule XII.ergue, *m. and f.* 2.exergue, *masc.*vergue, *fem.*erle, *m. and f.* 2.merle, *masc.*perle, *fem.*erme-s, *masc.* 7.*Exc.* ferme.erne, *fem.* 18.*Exc.* terne.erpe, *fem.* 2.

ers; see er.

erse, *fem.* 1.ert, *masc.* 7.erte, *fem.* 4.ertre, *masc.* 1.erve, *fem.* 5.es, ès, *masc.* 22.èse, *fem.* 16.*Exc.* diocèse and dièse.esque-s, *fem.* 2.esse, *fem.* 69.*est, *masc.* 5.este, *masc.* 12.*Exc.* conteste, peste, sieste, veste.estre, *masc.* 7.*Exc.* palestre.et, }
êt, } *masc.* 295.
ets, }*Exc.* forêt.ête, }
ète, } *fem.* 28.*Exc.* serre-tête, and others comp of tête; see Rule XII.†ette, *fem.* 235.*Exc.* amulette.‡être, }
ettre, } *masc.* 30..*Exc.* lettre, guêtre, fenêtre.eu, *masc.* 26.euble, *masc.* 2.eud, *masc.* 1.eue, *fem.* 4. The comp. are *masc.*; see Rule XII.euf, *masc.* 6.eugle, *masc.* 1.

* *Permesse, masc.*, is a proper name, but not always used in that sense.

† *Anachorète, athlète, interprète, poète, prophète, masc.*, belong to Rule I., and cannot be considered as exceptions.

‡ *Cornette*, a standard bearer, *trompette*, a trumpeter, *masc.*, belong to Rule I. *Porte-mouchettes* and other comp. are *masc.* See Rule XII.

euil, *masc.* 8.

euille, *masc.* 4.

Exc. feuille; for the comp. see Rule XII.

eul, *masc.* 8.

eule, *fem.* 10.

Exc. gueule, *gules*, in heraldry.

euple, *masc.* 1.

euque, *masc.* 2.

1st eur-s, *masc.* 892.

Expressing a profession or any thing like it, — a place, an office, an employment, a dignity.

2d eur, expressing a quality, property, is *fem.* 76.; as teneur, a *tenour*, *fem.*

3d eur, *masc.*

The following words not being exactly applicable to either of the Rules above, a list of them is given: — *antérieur*, *bonheur*, *cœur* and derivatives, *chœur* and derivatives, *déshonneur*, *équateur*, *chou-fleur*, *honneur* and derivatives, *labeur*, *malheur*, *multiplicateur* and such words, *pleurs*, *extérieur*, *intérieur*.

eure, *fem.* 9.

eurre, *masc.* 2.

eurt, *masc.* 1.

eurtre, *masc.* 1.

euse, *fem.* 224.

eute, *fem.* 2.

eutre, *masc.* 3.

euve, *fem.* 4.

Exc. fleuve.

œuvre-s, *m. and f.*

œuvre, *fem.*

chef-d'œuvre, *masc.*

grand œuvre, *masc.*

couœuvre, *fem.*

manceuvre, a labourer, *masc.*; the working of a ship, or military evolutions, *fem.*

eux, *masc.* 3.

ève, *fem.* 9.

Exc. élève, rêve.

èvre, *fem.* 10.

Exc. bièvre, genièvre, lièvre, orfèvre.

ex, *masc.* 1.

èxe, *masc.* 6.

Exc. annexe.

exte, *masc.* 4.

Exc. pretexte, *pretext*.

extre, *fem.* 2.

ey, *masc.* 2.

ez, *masc.* 2.

èze, *fem.* 3.

Exc. trapèze.

F, *fem.*

G, *masc.*

ger; see er.

H, *fem.*

I, *masc.* 63.

Exc. fourmi; see Rule I.; merci, pity, mercy, après-midi.*

ibe, 2.

bribe, *fem.*

scribe, *masc.*

ible, *masc.* 5.

Exc. bible, cible.

ibre, *masc.* 4.

Exc. fibre.

ic, *masc.* 14.

ice, *masc.* 96.

Exc. avarice, cicatrice†, épice, haute-lice, immondices, injustice, justice, lice, milice, *fem.*; nourrice, see Rule I.; notice, office, pantry or larder, police, prémices, varice, and words in eur, which have their feminine in ice, as acteur, actrice.

* Nouns comp. of *mi* are *fem.*, see Rule VI.

† *Délices*, *fem.* in the plural. For *nourrice*, see Rule I.

iche, *fem.* 17.

Exc. acrostiche, hémistichie, pastiche. *

icle-s, *masc.* 4.

Exc. besicles.

ict, *masc.* 1.

icte, *fem.* 2.

id, *masc.* 1.

ide, *fem.* 30.

Exc. parricide, and the words formed in the same manner, fluide, subside, vide. †

idre, } *fem.* 3.
ydre, }

Exc. cidre.

ie, *fem.* 436.

Exc. incendie, génie, and scolie in geometry. ‡

ié, *fem.* 4.

ied, *masc.* 6.

ien, } *masc.* 40.
yen, }

ier; see er.

ière; see ère.

ierge; see erge.

ieu; see eu.

ieuse; see euse.

if, *masc.* 33.

iffe, *masc.* 5.

Exc. chiffé, griffe.

iffle, *fem.* 1.

iffre, } *masc.* 4.
ifre, }

ige, *masc.* 9.

Exc. tige, volige.

igle, *masc.* 3.

igme, *masc.* 3.

Exc. énigme.

igne, *fem.* 10.

Exc. cygne, signe, interligne, *masc.* and *fem.*; in printing, *fem.*

igre, *masc.* 1.

igue, *fem.* 8.

Exc. bec-figue; see Rule XII.; sarigue.

il-s, *masc.* 40.

ile, *masc.* 25.

Exc. argile, bile, file, île, and comp., pile, sebile, and vigile.

ille, *fem.* 98.

Exc. codicille, mille, quadrille, quadrille at cards, vaudeville, volatille. §

ilphe, *masc.* 1.

iltre, *masc.* 2.

imbe, *masc.* 3.

imbre, *masc.* 3.

ime, *fem.* 31.

Exc. abîme, centime, crime, millésime, régime, synonyme. ||

impe, *fem.* 1.

imphe, *fem.* 3.

imple, *fem.* 1.

in-s, *masc.* 190.

Exc. fin.

inc, *masc.* 1.

ince, *fem.* 3.

Exc. prince.

inct, *masc.* 1.

inde, *fem.* 3.

Exc. pinde.

indre, *masc.* 2.

ine-s, *fem.* 190.

Exc. platine, *masc.* and *fem.*; platine, a round copper plate, the brass plate to which the lock of a gun is fixed, the scutcheon of a lock, *fem.*; platine, or blanc, platina, *masc.*

inge, 4.

coming, méninge, *fem.*

linge, singe, *masc.*

ingle, *fem.* 2.

ingue, *fem.* 2.

* For derviche, fétiche, *masc.*, see Rule I.

† *Druide* and *guide*, are *masc.*, and belong to Rule I.

‡ *Messie*, *masc.*, see Rule I.; *paraphras*, *masc.*, Rule XII.

§ *Gille*, *masc.*, and *pupille*, *masc.* and *fem.*, belong to Rule I.

|| *Mime*, *pantomime*, *masc.*, actor. See Rule I.

inte, }
 inthe, } *fem.* 11.

Exc. labyrinthe.

intre, *masc.* 2.

inx, *masc.* 3.

ion, }
 yon, } *see on.*

ipe, }
 ippe, } *fem.* 12.
 ype, }

Exc. participe, principe, polype, type, and its derivatives.

iphe, }
 yphe, } *masc.* 2.

iple, *masc.* 2.

ipse, *fem.* 4.

ique, *fem.* 102.

Exc. attique, an attic, cantique, distique, émétique, lévitique, lexique, panégyrique, pique, *spade at cards*, portique, spécifique, topique, tropique, viatique.*

ir, *masc.* 19.

ire, }
 yre, } *masc.* 27.

Exc. cire, hégire, ire, lyre, mire, myrrhe, satire, tirelire.†

irque, *masc.* 1.

is, *masc.* 80.

Exc. brebis, iris, *spring-crystal*, souris, a mouse, chauve-souris, vis.

isc, *masc.* 1.

ise, }
 yse, } *fem.* 50.

Exc. cytise, remise, a glass coach.

isme, *masc.* 82.

isse, *fem.* 12.

Exc. narcisse.‡

isque, *masc.* 6.

Exc. bisque, brisque.

ist, *masc.* 2.

iste, *masc.* 98.

Exc. batiste, liste, piste. Words in *iste*, expressing a profession, are *fem.* when they relate to a woman.

isthme, *masc.* 1.

istre, *masc.* 4.

it, }
 ith, } *masc.* 40.

ite, *fem.* 25.

Exc. démerite, gîte, hermite, lévite, mérite, orbite, rite, satellite, site, vélite.

ithme, *masc.* 4.

itre, *masc.* 13.

Exc. épître, huître, litre (of a church), mitre, vitre.

ive, *fem.* 26.

Exc. convive.

ivre, *masc.* 5.

Exc. givre, *serpent in heraldry* livre, a pound.

ix, *masc.* 7.

Exc. perdrix.

ixe, *fem.* 1.

ixme; *see* ime.

iz, *masc.* 1.

J, *masc.*

K, *masc.*

L, *fem.*

li; *see* i.

M, *fem.*

mant, }
 ment, § } *masc.* 710.

mi, *fem.*; *see* page 45.

* *Cacique*, a chief, *masc.*, and *domestique*, *masc.* and *fem.*, belong to Rule I.

† The comp. of *tire* are *masc.*, as *tire-balle*, &c.

‡ *Suisse*, a porter. *See* Rule I.

§ *Jument*, a mare, *fem.* *See* Rule I.

N, *fem.*
ni; see I.

O, *masc.* 32.
Exc. albugo, quasimodo.*

ob, *masc.* 1.
obe, *masc.* 5.
Exc. robe, garde-robe.

oble, *masc.* 2.
obre, *masc.* 2.
oc, } *masc.* 12.
oq, }
oce, *masc.* 3.

Exc. noce.
oche, *fem.* 25.
Exc. coche, a sort of coach, mé-
dianoche, reproche, tourne-
broche.

ocle, *masc.* 2.
ocque, *masc.* 1.
ocre, *masc.* 1.
ode, *fem.* 15.
Exc. antipodes, code, épisode,
mode, mood, method, période,
summit, synode.

œurs, *fem.* 1.
œuvre; see euvre.
offe, *fem.* 1.
ophe†, *fem.* 6.
offre, *fem.* 3.
Exc. coffre.

oge, *masc.* 10.
Exc. horloge, loge, épitoge,
toge.
ogme, *masc.* 1.
ogne, *fem.* 12.
Exc. ivrogne, vigogne, animal.

ogre, *masc.* 1.
ogue, *masc.* 22.
Exc. drogue, églogue, pirogue,
synagogue, vogue.

oi, } *masc.* 20.
oy, }
Exc. foi, loi, paroi.
oid, oigt; see ois, oit.

oie, } *fem.* 11.
oye, }

Exc. foie.
oid, oids, oigt; see oit.
oif, *fem.* 1.
oiffe, *fem.* 1.
oil, *masc.*

poil, and derivatives.
oile, *fem.* 4.
Exc. voile, a veil, voile, sail, m.

oin-g-t, *masc.* 27.
oine, *fem.* 15.
Exc. antimoine, patrimoine, pé-
ritoine, pivoine, a bird. ‡

oint; see oin.
ointe, *fem.*
pointe, and derivatives.
oir, *masc.* 124.

oire, *fem.* 69.
Exc. auditoire, ciboire, conser-
vatoire, consistoire, déboire,
directoire, grimoire, inter-
locutoire, interrogatoire,
ivoire, laboratoire, mémoire,
memoir, a bill, (mémoire, me-
mory, is *fem.*) observatoire,
oratoire, prétoire, promon-
toire, purgatoire, réflectoire,
répertoire, réquisitoire, ter-
ritoire, vésicatoire.

ois, t, *masc.* 30.
Exc. fois.

oise, *fem.* 9.
oite, *fem.* 2.
ôitre, *masc.* 1.
oivre, *masc.* 1.
oix, *fem.* 5.
Exc. choix.

ol, *masc.* 20.
olde, *fem.* 1.
ole, } *fem.* 74.
ôle, }
olle, }

Exc. monopole, pôle, protocole,
symbole, môle, a pier, rôle;
olle, *fem.* no excep.

* For virago, see Rule I.

† For philosophe, see Rule I.

‡ Chanoine and moine, *masc.*, belong to Rule I.

olfe, *masc.* 1.

om, } *masc.* 5.
omb, }
ombe, *fem.* 8.

Exc. lombes, rhombe.

omble, *masc.* 2.

ombre, *masc.* 8.

Exc. ombre, *shade, shadow, pé-nombre.*

ome, *masc.* 11.

omme, *fem.* 17.

Exc. somme, *nap or slumber, masc.; a sum of money, fem., homme: see Rule I.*

omne, *fem. and masc.* 1.

ompe, *fem.* 2.

omphe,
triomphe, *a triumph, masc.*
triomphe, *a trump, fem.*

omte, } *masc.* 6.
ompte, }

on, 1527.

1st. on, *fem.* when preceded by
ais, as *maison, raison, saison,*
&c., 35.

2d. on, ion, *fem.* 1132.

General Rule. Words ending
in *ion* which are abstract are
gen. fem.; words ending in
ion not abstract are *masc.* in
general, such as *bastion, pion,*
&c.

Exc. bastion, bestion, croupion,
camion, gabion, galion, ho-
rion, lampion, manicordion,
morian, million, orion, pion,
scion, scorpion, septentrion,
talion, tremion; centurion,
espion, lion, and derivat. ta-
bellion, belong to Rule I.

3d. on, yon, *masc.* 8.

4th. on, *masc.* 312.

Exc. boisson, chanson, cuisson,
cloison, façon and derivatives,
foison, garnison, guérison,
leçon, moisson, moisson, mous-
son, païsson, pamoison, prison,
rançon, salisson; dondon, lai-

deron, salisson, souillon, ta-
tillon, *fem.*; see Rule I.

5th. on, illon, *masc.* 40.

Exc. souillon, tatillon.

once, *fem.* 9.

Exc. quinconce; nonce, *m.*; see
Rule I.

oncle, *masc.* 3.

Exc. pétoncle.

ond, *masc.* 7.

onde, *fem.* 10.

Exc. nonde.

ondre, *masc.* 3.

onds, *masc.* 1.

one, } *fem.* 15.
ône, }

Exc. cône, pentagone, and words
compounded in the same man-
ner, prône and trône.

onge, *fem.* 8.

Exc. conge, mensonge, songe.

ongle, *masc.* 1.

ongue, *fem.* 3.

onne, *fem.* 26.

Exc. personne (when a pro-
noun), anybody, nobody.

onque, *fem.* 1.

onstre, *masc.* 1.

ont, *masc.* 7.

onte, *fem.* 6.

Exc. conte, ponte, *punto at cards.*

ontre, *fem.* 5.*

onze, *masc.* 2.

op, *masc.* 2.

ope, } *masc.* 20.
oppe, }

Exc. échoppe, enveloppe, Eu-
rope, héliotrope, *a precious*
stone, hysope, syncope, var-
lope.

opte, *masc.* 1.

oque, *fem.* 10.

Exc. colloque, phoque, soli-
loque, ventriloque.

or -s, -c, -d, } *masc.* 48.
orps, }

orbe, *masc.* 4.

Exc. sorbe.

* Contre agrees with its substantive.

D

orce, } *fem.* 9.
orse, }

Exc. divorce, torse.

orche, 2.

porche, *masc.*

torche, *fem.*

orde, *fem.* 10.

Exc. exorde, monocorde, and words compounded in the same manner.

ordre, *masc.* 4.

ore, *masc.* 20.

Exc. amphore, aurore, man-dore, métaphore, pécore, pléthore.

orge, *fem.* 5.

Exc. coupe-gorge, rouge-gorge; see Rule XII.

orgue, 2.

morgue, *fem.*

orgue, *masc.*; plural, *fem.*

orme, *fem.* 7.

Exc. corme, orme, uniforme.

orne, *fem.* 6.

Exc. capricorne, morne.

ors, orps; see or.

orque, *fem.* 1.

orse; see orce.

ort, *masc.* 16.

Exc. mort, death.

orte, *fem.* 10.

Exc. cloporte.*

orve, *fem.* 1.

os, *masc.* 23.

ose, *fem.* 16.

Exc. chose (if preceded by *quelque*), ose, virtuose, *masc.* and *fem.*

osme, *masc.* 1.

osque, *masc.* 1.

osse, *fem.* 10.

Exc. carosse, colosse.

ost, or toast, *masc.* 1. toste.

oste, *fem.* 4.

Exc. poste, a military station, a post.

ot, } *masc.* 92.
ôt, }

Exc. dot.

ote, } *fem.* 52.
ôte, }
otte, }

Exc. hôte, garde-côte, *m.* (see Rule I.), tire-botte, *m.*; see Rule XII.

ôtre, 2.

apôtre, *masc.*

patenôtre, *fem.*

ou, *masc.* 38.

oube, *masc.* 1.

ouble, *masc.* 1.

ouc, *masc.* 1.

ouce, *masc.* 1.

ouche, *fem.* 14.

Exc. gobe-mouche, *m.* (see Rules I. and XII.), scaramouche, cartouche, a scroll, or ornament in painting.

oucle, *fem.* 2.

oude, *m.* and *f.* 2.

coude, *masc.*

soude, *fem.*

oudre, *fem.* 4.

foudre, figuratively, is *masc.*, as also foudre, a large cask of wine.

oue, *fem.* 18.

oufle, *masc.* 6.

Exc. moufle, a sort of gloves, pan toufle, maroufle, a sort of glue.

oufre, *masc.* 1.

ouffre, *masc.* 1.

oug, *masc.* 1.

ouge, *masc.* 4.

Exc. gouge.

ougue, *fem.* 2.

ouil, *masc.* 1.

ouille, *fem.* 12.

oul, *masc.* 2.

oule, *fem.* 7.

Exc. moule, a mould or cast.

oulpe, *fem.* 2.

ouls, *masc.* 1.

oup, *masc.* 4.

* The comp. of porte are *masc.*; see p. 44.

oupe, } *fem.* 12.*
 ouppe, }

Exc. groupe.

ouple, *m. and f.* 1.

couple, *a couple, man and wife,*
masc.

couple, *a brace, a pair, fem.*

ouque, *fem.* 2.

our, *masc.* 28.

Exc. cour and comp. and tour
 (see Rule XII.), *a tower, and*
amours, when it means an in-
trigue.

ourbe, *fem.* 3.

ource, *fem.* 2.

ourche, *fem.* 1.

ourde, *fem.* 4.

oure, } *fem.* 4.
 ourre, }

Exc. tirre-bourre.

ourg, *masc.* 2.

ourge, *fem.* 1.

ourme, *fem.* 2.

ourpre, *m. and f.* 1.

pourpre, a colour, a fever, masc.

pourpre, a dye, fem.

ourque, *fem.* 1.

ourse, *fem.* 3.

ourte, *fem.* 2.

ous, } *masc.* 15.
 oux, }

Exc. toux.

ouse, *fem.* 6.

ousse, *fem.* 10.

Exc. mousse, *a cabin-boy;*

Rule I.

ouste, *fem.* 1.

out, } *masc.* 15, comp. of bout,
 out, } *masc.* also; Rule XII.

oute, } *fem.* 19.
 outte, }

Exc. doute. The comp. of
 boutte are *masc.*

outre, *fem.* 6.

Exc. coudre; Rule XII.

ouve, *fem.* 2.

ouvre, *masc.* 1.

oux; see *ous.*

ove, *m. and f.*

alcove, *masc.*

ove, *fem.*

oxe, *masc.* 4.

oyer; see *er.*

P, *masc.*

Q, *masc.*

S, *fem.*

T, *fem.*

Té, *fem.* 512.

Exc. aparté, arrêté, bénédicité,
 comité, comté†, côté, député,
masc. (see Rule I.), été, jeté,
 pâté, té, thé, traité.

U, *masc.* 37.

Exc. bru, glu, vertu.

ub, *masc.* 1.

ube, *masc.* 5.

Exc. bube.

uble, *fem.* 3.

uc, *masc.* 2.

uce, *fem.* 5.

uche, } *fem.* 8.
 ûche, }

ucere, *masc.* 2.

ud, *masc.* 2.

ude, *fem.* 39.

Exc. prélude.

ue, *fem.* 36.

ueue, *fem.* 1.

uf, *masc.* 1.

ufe, *masc.* 1.

uffe, *fem.* 1.

ufle, *masc.* 2.

uge, *masc.* 7.

ugue, *fem.* 2.

ui, uie, ‡

uid, *masc.* 1.

uint, *masc.* 1.

* For the compounds of coup, see page 39.

† Comté was formerly *fem.* See de Barante, *Ducs de Bourgogne.*

‡ Words in ui, uie, uille, &c. which are not here will be found at the letter i, ile, ille, &c.

uit, *masc.* 5.

Exc. nuit.

uits, *masc.* 1.

ul, *masc.* 7.

ulbe, *fem.* 1.

ulcre, *masc.* 1.

ule, } *fem.* 67.

ulle, }

Exc. conciliabule, conventicule, corpuscule, crépuscule, émule, funambule, *masc. and fem.*, globule, module, monticule, opuscul, pécule, pendule, *a pendulum*, préambule, réticule, ridicule, scrupule, somnambule, *masc. and fem.*, tubercule, véhicule, ventricule, vestibule.

ulpe, *fem.* 1.

ulte, *masc.* 9.

Exc. insulte, catapulte.

um, *masc.* 9.

ume, *fem.* 16.

Exc. apostume, bitume, costume, légume, rhume, volume.

un-s, *masc.* 6.*

une, *fem.* 17.

unt, *masc.* 2.

unte, *fem.* 1.

upe, } *fem.* 2.

uppe, }

uple, *masc.* 6.

uque, *fem.* 4.

Exc. eunuque; this only exception belongs to Rule I.

ur, *masc.* 5.

ure, *fem.* 266.

Exc. augure, mercure, murmure, parjure.

urne, *masc.* 7.

Exc. urne.

us, } *masc.* 50.

ux, }

usc, *masc.* 2.

uscle, *masc.* 1.

use, *fem.* 15.

usse, *fem.* 1.

uste, *masc.* 4.

ustre, *masc.* 4.

ut-h, *masc.* 18.

ute, } *fem.* 11.

utte, }

Exc. parachute; see Rule XII.

uve, *fem.* 2.

uxe, *masc.* 1.

V, *masc.*

X, *masc.*

Y; see I.

ye, } see ie, ion.

yon, }

yle, *masc.* 6.

ymne, *m. and f.* 1; at church, *fem.*

yrse, *masc.* 1.

yrte, *masc.* 1.

ypse, *masc.* 1.

ypte, *fem.* 1.

Z, *masc.*

zon; see on.

13,012.†

SUBSTANTIVES

MASCULINE IN ONE SIGNIFICATION, AND FEMININE IN ANOTHER.

un aide,	assistant, helper.	un aigle,	eagle, a great ge-
une aide,	aid, help, support.	une aigle,	ninus.
			a standard.

* Un, *masc.*, une, *fem.*; the other nouns of number are all *masc.*

† Total of the substantives of the usual tongue, the gender of which is given in this table.

un aune,	<i>an alder.</i>	un iris,	<i>a rainbow.</i>
une aune,	<i>an ell.</i>	une iris,	<i>an iris (precious stone).</i>
un barbe,	<i>a Barbary horse.</i>	le laque,	<i>the lacher.</i>
une barbe,	<i>a beard.</i>	la laque,	<i>lacca, gum-lac.</i>
un barde,	<i>a bard, a poet.</i>	un livre,	<i>a book.</i>
une barde,	<i>a slice of bacon, a horse armour.</i>	une livre,	<i>a pound.</i>
un Basque,	<i>a Basque.</i>	un loutre,	<i>a hat of otter's hair.</i>
une basque,	<i>a skirt.</i>	une loutre,	<i>an otter.</i>
un cartouche,	<i>ornament in sculpture or painting.</i>	un manche,	<i>a handle.</i>
une cartouche,	<i>cartridge.</i>	une manche,	<i>a sleeve.</i>
un coche,	<i>a travelling coach.</i>	un manœuvre,	<i>a labourer. [ship.</i>
une coche,	<i>a sow, a notch.</i>	une manœuvre,	<i>the working of a</i>
un cornette,	<i>cornet, standard-bearer.</i>	un mémoire,	<i>a memorandum.</i>
une cornette,	<i>a sort of cap.</i>	une mémoire,	<i>a memory.</i>
un couple,	<i>a couple (a husband and his wife).</i>	un mode,	<i>a form.</i>
une couple,	<i>a couple (of things).</i>	une mode,	<i>a fashion.</i>
un Cravate,	<i>a Croat, a Croatian soldier.</i>	un môle,	<i>a pier.</i>
une cravate,	<i>a neckcloth.</i>	une môle,	<i>a moon-calf.</i>
un crêpe,	<i>a crape.</i>	un moufle,	<i>a sort of chemical vessel.</i>
une crêpe,	<i>a pancake.</i>	une moufle,	<i>mitten.</i>
un enseigne,	<i>an ensign.</i>	un moule,	<i>a mould.</i>
une enseigne,	<i>a sign.</i>	une moule,	<i>a muscle.</i>
un espace,	<i>a space.</i>	un mousse,	<i>a ship-boy.</i>
une espace,	<i>in printing.</i>	la mousse,	<i>the moss.</i>
un exemple,	<i>a pattern.</i>	un œuvre,	<i>a work (of art).</i>
une exemple,	<i>a copy (in writing).</i>	une œuvre,	<i>a work.</i>
un garde,	<i>a keeper.</i>	un office,	<i>an office, business, prayers.</i>
une garde,	<i>a guard.</i>	une office,	<i>a pantry, larder.</i>
le givre,	<i>hoar-frost.</i>	un ombre,	<i>a game at cards.</i>
la givre,	<i>serpent (in heraldry).</i>	une ombre,	<i>shade, shadow.</i>
le greffe,	<i>the registry.</i>	un page,	<i>a page (to a king)</i>
la greffe,	<i>the graft.</i>	une page,	<i>a page (of a book)</i>
un guide,	<i>a guide.</i>	un paillasse,	<i>a clown.</i>
une guide,	<i>a guidance.</i>	une paillasse,	<i>a straw-bed.</i>
un hymne,	<i>a profane hymn.</i>	pâque,	<i>Easter.</i>
une hymne,	<i>a sacred hymn.</i>	la pâque,	<i>the passover.</i>
		un parallèle,	<i>comparison.</i>
		une parallèle,	<i>parallel-line.</i>
		le pendule,	<i>the pendulum.</i>
		une pendule,	<i>a clock.</i>
		le période,	<i>pitch (the highest degree).</i>
		une période,	<i>a period.</i>

un pique,	<i>a spade (at cards).</i>	un Satyre,	<i>a Satyr.</i>
une pique,	<i>a pike.</i>	une satire,	<i>a satire.</i>
un pivoine,	<i>a bird.</i>	un Serpentaire,	<i>Serpentarius.</i>
une pivoine,	<i>a flower.</i>	une serpenaire,	<i>snake-root.</i>
le plane,	<i>the plane-tree.</i>	le solde,	<i>the balance of a</i>
la plane,	<i>the plane.</i>		<i>account.</i>
le platine,	<i>platina (a metal).</i>	la solde,	<i>pay.</i>
la platine,	<i>the platen.</i>	un somme,	<i>a sleep.</i>
un poêle,	<i>a stove, a pall.</i>	une somme,	<i>a sum.</i>
une poêle,	<i>a frying-pan.</i>	un souris,	<i>a smile.</i>
le ponte,	<i>the punter.</i>	une souris,	<i>a mouse.</i>
la ponte,	<i>the laying of eggs.</i>	un tour,	<i>a trick.</i>
un poste,	<i>an employment.</i>	une tour,	<i>a tower.</i>
la poste,	<i>the post-office.</i>	un triomphe,	<i>a triumph.</i>
le pourpre,	<i>the purples (a sort</i>	une triomphe,	<i>a trump at cards.</i>
	<i>of illness).</i>	un trompette,	<i>a trumpeter.</i>
la pourpre,	<i>purple.</i>	une trompette,	<i>a trumpet.</i>
un quadrille,	<i>quadrille (game).</i>	le vague,	<i>the airy plains.</i>
une quadrille,	<i>a troop of horse.</i>	la vague,	<i>the wave.</i>
un relâche,	<i>rest, relaxation.</i>	un vase,	<i>a vase.</i>
une relâche,	<i>harbour.</i>	la vase,	<i>the mud.</i>
un remise,	<i>a glass-coach.</i>	un voile,	<i>a veil.</i>
une remise,	<i>a coach-house,</i>	une voile,	<i>a sail.</i>
	<i>delay.</i>	personne, M.	<i>when pronoun.</i>
		personne, F.	<i>when substantive.</i>

Other substantives belong exclusively to the masculine or feminine gender, except

Amour, <i>mas.</i> and <i>fem.</i>	by the <i>adj.</i> and <i>fem.</i> when
Automne, <i>mas.</i> and <i>fem.</i>	preceded by it.
Délice, <i>sing. mas.</i>	Orgue, <i>sing. mas.</i>
Délices, <i>plur. fem.</i>	Orgues, <i>plur. fem.</i>
Gens, <i>mas.</i> when followed	

A list of substantives having a distinct form for the female sex will be given in CH. 3. § 1.

SECTION IV.

OF THE NUMBER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

The number of nouns denotes the distinction between one and several objects.

There are two numbers, called singular and plural. A noun is in the singular, when it denotes but one person or thing : as, *un homme*, a man ; *une maison*, a house : a noun is in the plural, when it denotes several persons or things : as, *des hommes*, men ; *des maisons*, houses.

How to form the Plural of Nouns.

FIRST RULE.

Nouns which end in *s*, *x*, or *z* in the singular, have both numbers alike: as, *le fils*, the son, *la voix*, the voice, *le nez*, the nose, singular: *les fils*, *les voix*, *les nez*, plural.

SECOND RULE.

Nouns which end in *u* in the singular, take an *x* when *u* is preceded by *e* or *a*: as, *le lieu*, the place, *le chapeau*, the hat, singular: *les lieux*, *les chapeaux*, plural.

THIRD RULE.

Most nouns which end in *al* in the singular, become plural by changing *al* into *aux*: as *cheval*, horse, *canal*, channel, singular: *chevaux*, *canaux*, plural.

FOURTH, OR GENERAL RULE.

The plural of nouns is formed by adding an *s* to the singular. Example:—

SINGULAR.	PLURAL.
un homme, <i>a mən</i> ,	des hommes, <i>men</i> ,
un ami, <i>a friend</i> ,	des amis, <i>friends</i> ,
une maison, <i>a house</i> ,	des maisons, <i>houses</i> .

LIST OF IRREGULAR PLURALS.

			RULE
Aïeul*,	grandfather,	aïeux,	4.
Ail,	clove of garlic,	aulx,	4.
Aval,	surety for payment,	avals,	3.
Bail,	lease,	baux,	4.
Bal,	ball,	bals,	3.
Bijou,	jewel,	bijoux,	4.
Cal,	callosity,	calx,	3.
Caillou,	pebble,	cailloux,	4.
Carnaval,	carnival,	carnavals,	3.
Ciel,	heaven,	cieux,	4.
Ciel†,	testers,	ciels de lit.	

* We say *Aïeuls* in the plural, when we mean to designate precisely the paternal and the maternal grandfather: as, *ses aïeuls assistaient à son mariage*.

† Ciel when speaking of the part of a picture representing the air,

			RULE
Corail,	coral,	coraux,	4.
Email,	enamel,	émaux,	4.
Genou,	knee,	genoux,	4.
Hibou,	owl,	hiboux,	4.
Œil,	eye,	yeux,	4.
Œil,	in architecture, &c.	œils de bœuf.	
Pal,	pale (in heraldry),	pals,	3.
Plumail,	feather-brush,	plumaux,	4.
Pou,	louse,	poux,	4.
Régat,	treat,	régals,	3.
Soupirail,	air-hole,	soupiraux,	4.
Travail,	labour,	travaux,	4.
Travail,	in horse-shoeing,	travails,	4.
Vantail,	door-flap,	vantaux,	4.

N.B. The figures show which rule is departed from.

CHAP. III.

OF ADJECTIVES.

THE *adjectives* are words joined to substantives to qualify or modify them; as, *la vertu est aimable, le vice est odieux*: virtue is amiable, vice is odious.—*Odieux* and *aimable* two adjectives.

The adjectives must agree with the substantives to which they have reference. They form the feminine from the masculine termination, as follows:—

SECTION I.

HOW TO FORM THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

Six Rules, when these exceptions are known, will include all the feminine adjectives.

IRREGULAR FEMININES.

M.		F.	RULE
Absous,	absolved,	absoute,	6.
Auteur,	author,	auteur,	6.
Bailleur,	lessor,	bailleresse,	4.

the ceiling of a stone quarry, or the climates of certain countries, makes *ciels* in the plural.

M.		F.	RULE
Bas,	<i>low,</i>	basse,	6.
Beau,	<i>handsome,</i>	belle,	6.
Bénin,	<i>benign,</i>	bénigne,	6.
Blanc,	<i>white,</i>	blanche,	6.
Caduc,	<i>declining,</i>	caduque,	6.
Châtain,	<i>chestnut,</i>	—	—
Défendeur,	<i>defendant,</i>	défenderesse,	4.
Demandeur,	<i>demandant,</i>	demanderesse,	4.
Devineur,	<i>diviner,</i>	devineresse,	4.
Doux,	<i>sweet,</i>	douce,	2.
Enchanteur,	<i>enchanting,</i>	enchanteresse,	4.
Epais,	<i>thick,</i>	épaisse,	6.
Exécuteur,	<i>executing,</i>	exécutrice,	4.
Express,	<i>express,</i>	expresse,	6.
Fat,	<i>affected,</i>	—	—
Faux,	<i>false,</i>	fausse,	2.
Favori,	<i>favourite,</i>	favorite,	6.
Fou,	<i>foolish,</i>	folle,	6.
Frais,	<i>fresh,</i>	fraîche,	6.
Franc,	<i>free,</i>	franche,	6.
Gras,	<i>fat,</i>	grasse,	6.
Grec,	<i>Greek,</i>	Grecque,	6.
Gros,	<i>big,</i>	grosse,	6.
Las,	<i>weary,</i>	lasse,	6.
Long,	<i>long,</i>	longue,	6.
Malin,	<i>wicked,</i>	maligne,	6.
Mou,	<i>soft,</i>	molle,	6.
Nouveau,	<i>new,</i>	nouvelle,	6.
Nul,	<i>no,</i>	nulle,	6.
Pêcheur,	<i>sinning,</i>	pécheresse,	4.
Profès,	<i>initiated,</i>	professe,	6.
Persécuteur,	<i>persecuting,</i>	persécutrice,	4.
Public,	<i>public,</i>	publique,	6.
Roux,	<i>red,</i>	rousse,	2.
Sec,	<i>dry,</i>	sèche,	6.
Sot,	<i>silly,</i>	sotte,	6.
Tiers,	<i>third,</i>	tierce,	6.
Traître,	<i>traitorous,</i>	traîtresse,	4.
Turc,	<i>Turkish,</i>	Turque,	6.
Vengeur,	<i>avenging,</i>	vengeresse,	4.
Vieux,	<i>old,</i>	vieille,	2.

Rule 1. Adjectives which end in *e* mute in the masculine singular, are alike in both genders : as, *sage*, wise, *brave*, brave, *célèbre*, famous, masculine ; *sage*, *brave*, *célèbre*, feminine.

Rule 2. Adjectives which end in *x* in the masculine, become feminine by changing *x* into *se* : as *jaloux*, jealous *heureux*, happy, masculine ; *jalouse*, *heureuse*, feminine.

Rule 3. Adjectives which end in *f* in the masculine, become feminine by changing *f* into *ve*: as *vif*, quick, *actif*, active, *neuf*, new, masculine; *vive*, active, *neuve*, feminine.

Rule 4. Nouns ending in *teur* and *eur*, when a participle present would arise from putting *ant* in the place of *eur*, make the feminine to end in *euse*: as *flatteur*, flattering, *flatteuse*; *trompeur*, deceiving, *trompeuse*: because of *flattant*, *trompant*. In other cases they change *teur* into *trice*: as *acteur*, acting, *actrice*; *moteur*, moving, *motrice*, &c. Words ending in *érier*; and *majeur*, *meilleur*, *mineur*, follow the 6th or general Rule.

Rule 5. Most adjectives in *el*, *eil*, *et*, *ien*, *an*, *on*, double their final consonant before *e* mute of the feminine: as, *cruelle*, *pareille*, *muette*, *ancienne*, *paysanne*, *bonne*, from *cruel*, *pareil*, *muet*, *ancien*, *paysan*, *bon*.

Rule 6. Adjectives of all finals not mentioned before become feminine by adding an *e* to the masculine termination: as *grand*, great, *divin*, divine, *savant*, learned, masculine; *grande*, *divine*, *savante*, feminine.

REMARKS. The feminines, *belle*, *molle*, *folle*, *nouvelle*, may be considered as formed from *bel*, *mol*, *fol*, *nouvel*, which are used before a vowel or *h* mute, instead of *beau*, *mou*, *fou*, *nouveau*.

Some substantives have a distinct form for individuals of the female sex, founded partly on the foregoing rules: as,

M.		F.
accusateur,	accuser,	accusatrice.
ambassadeur,	ambassador,	ambassadrice.
apprenti,	apprentice,	apprentie.
baron,	baron,	baronne.
berger,	shepherd,	bergère.
bienfaiteur,	benefactor,	bienfaitrice.
chanoine,	canon,	chanoinesse.
chanteur,	singer,	chanteuse.
chasseur,	hunter,	chasseuse.
chasseur,	(in poetry),	chasseresse.
danseur,	dancer,	danseuse.
empereur,	emperor,	impératrice.
gouverneur,	governor,	gouvernante.
jouvencreau,	lad,	jouvencelle.
lion,	lion,	lionne.
païen,	heathen,	païenne.

M.		F.
paon,	peacock,	paonne.
prieur,	prior,	prieure.
prince,	prince,	princesse.
serviteur,	servant,	servante.
voisin,	neighbour,	voisine.

N.B. Observe, from the preceding rules, that all adjectives end in *e* mute in the feminine singular; and as those which end in *e* mute form their plural by the addition of an *s*, all adjectives, with few exceptions, end in *es* in the feminine plural. *Amateur, témoin*, do not change for the feminine.

SECTION II.

OF THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

Adjectives form their plural like the substantives, of which we have before spoken; and the rules given in page 55. can be applied to adjectives, with only three exceptions to the second rule, in *fou, mou, bleu*, which take an *s*.

The following Adjectives have no Plural in the Masculine Gender:—

austral,	southern.	matinal,	early.
bénéficial,	beneficial.	médical,	medical.
boréal,	northern.	médicinal,	medicinal.
canonial,	canonical.	mental,	mental.
conjugal,	conjugal.	nasal,	nasal.
diagonal,	diagonal.	natal,	natal.
diamétral,	diametrical.	naval,	naval.
expérimental,	experimental.	pascal,	pascal.
filial,	filial.	pastoral,	pastoral.
final,	final.	patronal,	patronal.
frugal,	frugal.	pectoral,	pectoral.*
idéaI,	ideal.	théâtral,	theatral.
instrumental,	instrumental.	total,	total.
jovial,	jovial.	vénal,	venal.
labial,	labial.	virginal,	virginal.
lingual,	lingual.	vocal,	vocal.
littéral,	literal.	zodiacal,	zodiacal.
lustral,	lustral.		

* We say, *les muscles pectoraux*.

SECTION III.

OF COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

A *Comparative* is a comparison of two or more objects, in order to know what proportion they bear to one another : now as two objects can either be equal, superior, or inferior to one another, there are three sorts of comparatives, called of *equality*, *superiority*, and *inferiority*.

The *Comparative of equality* is formed by prefixing the word *aussi* to an adjective : as, *je suis aussi riche que vous* ; I am *as* rich as you.

The *Comparative of Superiority* is formed by prefixing the word *plus* to an adjective : as, *je suis plus grand que vous* ; I am *taller* than you.

The *Comparative of inferiority* is formed by putting a negation before the verb, and *si* before the adjective, or only by prefixing the word *moins* to an adjective : as, *je suis moins heureux que vous* ; or, *je ne suis pas si heureux que vous* ; I am *not so* happy as you.

The *Superlatives* increase or diminish to the utmost degree the signification of adjectives. They are of two sorts : the one *relative*, and the other *absolute*.

The first is formed by prefixing the article *le, la, les*, with *plus*, to the adjectives : as, *j'ai vu la plus belle femme d'Angleterre* ; I have seen the *handsomest* woman in England.

The second is formed by prefixing the adverbs *très* or *fort* to the adjective : as, *je suis très-malheureux* ; I am *very* unfortunate.

COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES FORMED IRREGULARLY.

These three adjectives, *bon*, good, *mauvais*, bad, *petit*, little, as well as their corresponding adverbs, deviate from others in the formation of their comparatives and superlatives, which are as follows :—

	POSITIVE.	COMPARATIVE.	SUPERLATIVE.
adj.	<i>bon, good.</i>	<i>meilleur, better.</i>	<i>le meilleur, the best.</i>
	<i>mauvais, bad.</i>	<i>pire, worse.</i>	<i>le pire, the worst.</i>
	<i>petit, little.</i>	<i>moindre, less.</i>	<i>le moindre, the least.</i>

N.B. The adverbs which mark these three degrees of comparison, are to be repeated before every adjective, when several are joined to the same substantive, and are followed by the conjunction *que*, expressed in English by *than* or *as*.

	POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.		SUPERLATIVE.	
adv. {	bien,	<i>well.</i>	mieux,	<i>better.</i>	le mieux,	<i>the best.</i>
	mal,	<i>bad.</i>	pis,	<i>worse.</i>	le pis,	<i>the worst.</i>
	peu,	<i>little.</i>	moins,	<i>less.</i>	le moins,	<i>the least.</i>

We say also *plus mauvais, plus petit, plus mal*; but never *plus bon, plus bien, plus peu*.

SECTION IV.

OF THE CARDINAL NUMBERS.

The *Cardinal numbers* denote the quantity of persons or things, and answer to the question *how much? how many?* They are called *cardinal*, because they are the root of all others; they are as follows:—

1,	un, m. une, f.	one,	I.
2,	deux,	two,	II.
3,	trois,	three,	III.
4,	quatre,	four,	IV.
5,	cinq,	five,	V.
6,	six,	six,	VI.
7,	sept,	seven,	VII.
8,	huit,	eight,	VIII.
9,	neuf,	nine,	IX.
10,	dix,	ten,	X.
11,	onze,	eleven,	XI.
12,	douze,	twelve,	XII.
13,	treize,	thirteen,	XIII.
14,	quatorze,	fourteen,	XIV.
15,	quinze,	fifteen,	XV.
16,	seize,	sixteen,	XVI.
17,	dix-sept,	seventeen,	XVII.
18,	dix-huit,	eighteen,	XVIII.
19,	dix-neuf,	nineteen,	XIX.
20,	vingt,	twenty,	XX.
21,	vingt-et-un,	twenty-one,	XXI.
22,	vingt-deux,	twenty-two,	XXII.
23,	vingt-trois,	twenty-three,	XXIII.
24,	vingt-quatre,	twenty-four,	XXIV.

25,	vingt-cinq,	<i>twenty-five,</i>	XXV.
26,	vingt-six,	<i>twenty-six,</i>	XXVI.
27,	vingt-sept,	<i>twenty-seven,</i>	XXVII.
28,	vingt-huit,	<i>twenty-eight,</i>	XXVIII.
29,	vingt-neuf,	<i>twenty-nine,</i>	XXIX.
30,	trente,	<i>thirty,</i>	XXX.
31,	trente-et-un,	<i>thirty-one,</i>	XXXI.
32,	trente-deux,	<i>thirty-two,</i>	XXXII.
33,	trente-trois,	<i>thirty-three,</i>	XXXIII.
34,	trente-quatre,	<i>thirty-four,</i>	XXXIV.
35,	trente-cinq,	<i>thirty-five,</i>	XXXV.
36,	trente-six,	<i>thirty-six,</i>	XXXVI.
37,	trente-sept,	<i>thirty-seven,</i>	XXXVII.
38,	trente-huit,	<i>thirty-eight,</i>	XXXVIII.
39,	trente-neuf,	<i>thirty-nine,</i>	XXXIX.
40,	quarante,	<i>forty,</i>	XL.
41,	quarante-et-un,	<i>forty-one,</i>	XLI.
42,	quarante-deux,	<i>forty-two,</i>	XLII.
43,	quarante-trois,	<i>forty-three,</i>	XLIII.
44,	quarante-quatre,	<i>forty-four,</i>	XLIV.
45,	quarante-cinq,	<i>forty-five,</i>	XLV.
46,	quarante-six,	<i>forty-six,</i>	XLVI.
47,	quarante-sept,	<i>forty-seven,</i>	XLVII.
48,	quarante-huit,	<i>forty-eight,</i>	XLVIII.
49,	quarante-neuf,	<i>forty-nine,</i>	XLIX.
50,	cinquante,	<i>fifty,</i>	L.
51,	cinquante-et-un,	<i>fifty-one,</i>	LI.
52,	cinquante-deux,	<i>fifty-two,</i>	LII.
53,	cinquante-trois,	<i>fifty-three,</i>	LIII.
54,	cinquante-quatre,	<i>fifty-four,</i>	LIV.
55,	cinquante-cinq,	<i>fifty-five,</i>	LV.
56,	cinquante-six,	<i>fifty-six,</i>	LVI.
57,	cinquante-sept,	<i>fifty-seven,</i>	LVII.
58,	cinquante-huit,	<i>fifty-eight,</i>	LVIII.
59,	cinquante-neuf,	<i>fifty-nine,</i>	LIX.
60,	soixante,	<i>sixty,</i>	LX.
61,	soixante-et-un,	<i>sixty-one,</i>	LXI.
62,	soixante-deux,	<i>sixty-two,</i>	LXII.
63,	soixante-trois,	<i>sixty-three,</i>	LXIII.
64,	soixante-quatre,	<i>sixty-four,</i>	LXIV.
65,	soixante-cinq,	<i>sixty-five,</i>	LXV.
66,	soixante-six,	<i>sixty-six,</i>	LXVI.
67,	soixante-sept,	<i>sixty-seven,</i>	LXVII.
68,	soixante-huit,	<i>sixty-eight,</i>	LXVIII.
69,	soixante-neuf,	<i>sixty-nine,</i>	LXIX.
70,	soixante-dix,	<i>seventy,</i>	LXX.
71,	soixante-et-onze,	<i>seventy-one,</i>	LXXI.
72,	soixante-douze,	<i>seventy-two,</i>	LXXII.
73,	soixante-treize,	<i>seventy-three,</i>	LXXIII.
74,	soixante-quatorze,	<i>seventy-four,</i>	LXXIV.
75,	soixante-quinze,	<i>seventy-five,</i>	LXXV.

76,	soixante-seize,	<i>seventy-six,</i>	LXXVI.
77,	soixante-dix-sept,	<i>seventy-seven,</i>	LXXVII.
78,	soixante-dix-huit,	<i>seventy-eight,</i>	LXXVIII.
79,	soixante-dix-neuf.	<i>seventy-nine,</i>	LXXIX.
80,	quatre-vingt,	<i>eighty,</i>	LXXX.
81,	quatre-vingt-un,	<i>eighty-one,</i>	LXXXI.
82,	quatre-vingt-deux,	<i>eighty-two,</i>	LXXXII.
83,	quatre-vingt-trois,	<i>eighty-three,</i>	LXXXIII.
84,	quatre-vingt-quatre,	<i>eighty-four,</i>	LXXXIV.
85,	quatre-vingt-cinq,	<i>eighty-five,</i>	LXXXV.
86,	quatre-vingt-six,	<i>eighty-six,</i>	LXXXVI.
87,	quatre-vingt-sept,	<i>eighty-seven,</i>	LXXXVII.
88,	quatre-vingt-huit,	<i>eighty-eight,</i>	LXXXVIII.
89,	quatre-vingt-neuf,	<i>eighty-nine,</i>	LXXXIX.
90,	quatre-vingt-dix,	<i>ninety,</i>	XC.
91,	quatre-vingt-onze,	<i>ninety-one,</i>	XCI.
92,	quatre-vingt-douze,	<i>ninety-two,</i>	XCII.
93,	quatre-vingt-treize,	<i>ninety-three,</i>	XCIII.
94,	quatre-vingt-quatorze,	<i>ninety-four,</i>	XCIV.
95,	quatre-vingt-quinze,	<i>ninety-five,</i>	XCV.
96,	quatre-vingt-seize,	<i>ninety-six,</i>	XCVI.
97,	quatre-vingt-dix-sept,	<i>ninety-seven,</i>	XCVII.
98,	quatre-vingt-dix-huit,	<i>ninety-eight,</i>	XCVIII.
99,	quatre-vingt-dix-neuf,	<i>ninety-nine,</i>	XCIX.
100,	cent,	<i>a hundred,</i>	C.
200,	deux cent,	<i>two hundred,</i>	CC.
300,	trois cent,	<i>three hundred,</i>	CCC.
400,	quatre cent,	<i>four hundred,</i>	CCCC.
500,	cinq cent,	<i>five hundred,</i>	D.
600,	six cent,	<i>six hundred,</i>	DC.
700,	sept cent,	<i>seven hundred,</i>	DCC.
800,	huit cent,	<i>eight hundred,</i>	DCCC.
900,	neuf cent,	<i>nine hundred,</i>	DCCCC.
1000,	mille,	<i>one thousand,</i>	M.

OBSERVATIONS UPON CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1. When two numerals are joined together, the larger goes first in French: thus we say, *vingt-cinq*, *vingt-six*, &c. and not *cinq et vingt*, five and twenty, *six et vingt*, six and twenty, as the English sometimes do.

2. When several numbers meet together, we do not put in French any conjunction between them: thus, we say, *cent vingt*, *cent trente*, and not *cent et vingt*, *cent et trente*, hundred and twenty, hundred and thirty.

3. The English word *thousand* is rendered in French by *mil*, with one *l* only, when it is used for the date of the year, and by *mille* with *lle*, in other circumstances: thus,

we say, *l'an mil huit cent huit*, in the year one thousand eight hundred and eight.

4. When the words *cent* and *mille* are followed by a number, they are never preceded by the word *un* in French, as they are in English by the word *one*: thus, we say, *cent cinquante*, for *one* hundred and fifty; *mil sept cent*, for *one* thousand and seven hundred; and not *un cent cinquante*, nor *un mil sept cent*.

5. In speaking of several score or hundred, the words *vingt* and *cent* take an *s*, when not followed by another numeral: thus, we write, *quatre-vingts livres*, fourscore pounds; *trois cents soldats*, three hundred soldiers, with an *s*; but *quatre-vingt-dix livres*, ninety pounds; *trois cent vingt-six soldats*, three hundred and twenty-six soldiers, without an *s*.

6. The word *million* is a collective noun, and takes the mark of the plural: as, *deux millions*, *dix millions*.

7. *Mille*, when meaning a thousand, never takes an *s*, so we say, *deux mille*, two thousand; but when *mille* means a *mile*, it takes *s* in the plural: as, *un mille*, one mile, *deux milles*, two miles, &c.

8. All numbers not mentioned in the preceding observations are always indeclinable.

SECTION V.

OF ORDINAL NUMBERS.

Ordinal numbers denote the order and disposition of things; they are as follows:—

1er,	premier, m.	première, f.	1st,	first.
2d,	second, m.	seconde, f.	2d,	second.
3e,	troisième,		3d,	third.
4e,	quatrième,		4th,	fourth.
5e,	cinquième,		5th,	fifth.
6e,	sixième,		6th,	sixth.
7e,	septième,		7th,	seventh.
8e,	huitième,		8th,	eighth.
9e,	neuvième,		9th,	ninth.
10e,	dixième,		10th,	tenth.
11e,	onzième,		11th,	eleventh.
12e,	douzième,		12th,	twelfth.
13e,	treizième,		13th,	thirteenth.

14e,	quatorzième,	14th,	fourteenth.
15e,	quinzième,	15th,	fifteenth.
16e,	seizième,	16th,	sixteenth.
17e,	dix-septième,	17th,	seventeenth.
18e,	dix-huitième,	18th,	eighteenth.
19e,	dix-neuvième,	19th,	nineteenth.
20e,	vingtième,	20th,	twentieth.
21e,	vingt-unième,	21st,	twenty-first.
22e,	{ vingt-deuxième, et ainsi de } suite.	22d,	{ twenty-second, and so on.

OBSERVATIONS UPON ORDINAL NUMBERS.

1. Except *le premier* and *le second*, the *ordinal* numbers are formed from the *cardinal*, by changing *e* mute into *ième*, for those which end with a vowel: as, *quatre*, *quatrième*; and by adding *ième* to those which end in any other consonant than *f*: as, *trois*, *dix*, cardinal; *troisième*, *dixième*, ordinal, except *cinq*, which takes *u* before *ième*, *cinquième*.

2. Those which end in *f*, change that final into *vième*: as, *neuf*, *dix-neuf*, cardinal; *neuvième*, *dix-neuvième*, ordinal.

3. The English always use the *ordinal* numbers, when they put a date to any thing; the French, on the contrary, most commonly use the *cardinal* in this case (except the first, which is *ordinal*): thus we say, *le premier de Janvier*, *le deux de Février*, *le trois de Mars*, *le quatre d'Avril*, *le cinq de Mai*, &c. the first of January, the second of February, the third of March, the fourth of April, the fifth of May, &c.

4. The English use the *ordinal* numbers with an article after the Christian name of a sovereign; the French, on the contrary, use the *cardinal* (the two first excepted), and never put any article before them. Example: *Henri premier*, *Henri second*, *Henri trois*, *Henri quatre*, &c.; Henry the first, Henry the second, Henry the third, Henry the fourth, &c.; we say also, nevertheless, *Henry deux*, *Charles deux*.

5. The adverbs of *number* are formed from the *ordinal*, by adding *ment* to the final: as, *premier*, *dixième*, ordinal; *premièrement*, *dixièmement*, adverbs.

There are again three other sorts of numbers, called *collective*, *distributive*, and *proportional*: the *collective* de-

notes a certain quantity of things joined together : as, *une douzaine*, a dozen ; *une cinquantaine*, fifty. The *distributive* express a part of the whole : as, *la moitié*, the half ; *le tiers*, the third part ; *le dixième*, the tenth part, &c. The *proportional* express the same quantity multiplied : as, *double*, double ; *triple*, triple ; *centuple*, centuple.

EXERCISES.

EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLE, page 34.

1. DEFINITIVE ARTICLE.

N. B. The *m* denotes a noun masculine ; *f* a noun feminine ; *v* a noun which begins with a vowel ; *h* a noun which begins with an *h* mute, and *pl* a noun plural. This mark (—) indicates that the words are alike in both languages, or differ only by their termination.

The father ; of the son ; to the brother. The mother ; to the daughter ; to the sister. The child ; of the angel ; to the soul.
père m *filz m* *frère m* *mère f*
fille f *sœur f* *enfant v* *ange v* *âme v*
The man ; of the history ; to the harmony. The gardens ; of the houses ; to the friends. The master of the house. The rays of the
homme h *histoire h* *harmonie h* *jardins pl*
maisons pl *amis pl* *maître m* *maison f* *rayons pl*
sun. The lustre of the stars. The return from the city. The
soleil m *éclat v* *étoiles pl* *retour m* *ville f*
breakfast ; of the dinner ; to the supper. The malice of the boys.
déjeuner m *dîner m* *souper m* — f *garçons pl*
The prattling of the girls. The laziness of the scholars. The
babil m *filles pl* *paresse f* *écoliers pl*
friendship ; of the humanity ; to the hatred. The shame ; of the
amitié v — té h *haine f* *honte f*
horror ; to the honesty. Give the apple to the boy, and the orange
horreur h *honnêteté h* *donnez* *pomme f* *garçon m* et — v
to the girl. The admiral spoke to the king, to the queen, and to the
fille f *amiral v* *parla* *roi m* *reine f*
princes. The moon is the cause of the eclipses of the sun.
— pl *lune f* est — f — pl *soleil m*.

2. INDEFINITE ARTICLE, page 35.

A dictionary and a grammar. A bird and a cage. A house ; of a
dictionnaire m *grammaire f* *oiseau m* — f *maison*
garden ; to a tree ; from a pear. A watch ; of a diamond ; to a
jardin m *arbre m* *poire f* *montre f* *diamant m*

ring. A garden; of a house; to an orchard; from a park. A river;
baguette f jardin m maison f verger m parc m rivière f
 of a boat; from a ship.
bateau m. vaisseau m.

3. PARTITIVE ARTICLE*, page 35.

Give me some bread and some butter; some meat and some
donnez-moi pain m et beurre m viande f
 mustard; some eggs and some oranges. Give me some good bread,
moutarde f œufs pl — pl donnez-moi bon
 and some good butter; some good meat, and some good mustard;
bon bonne bonne
 some good eggs and some good apples. I have some ink and some
bons bonnes pommes f j'ai encre v
 pens.
plumes pl

4. OF PROPER NAMES AND PRONOUNS.

The poems of Homer. The genius of Milton. The courage of
poèmes pl Homère h génie m — — m
 Achilles. Speak to Henry. I receive a letter from Stephen. From
— v parlez — je reçois lettre f Etienne v
 Paris to London; from Dover to Calais; from Vienna to Rome.
— Londres Douvres — Vienne —
 The book belongs to John or to Peter.

* *livre m appartient Jean ou Pierre.*

EXERCISES UPON THE GENDER OF NOUNS.

See TABLE OF GENDERS, page 39.

The rules upon the articles must be applied here; that is to say, the articles must be used, and agree with their substantives in gender and number.

The virtue; of the sobriety; to the prudence; from the hand; the
vertu —été — main
 necklace; of the reason; to the miracle; the nation; of the cupola;
collier raison — — dôme
 to an age; a boat; of the ice; to the clemency; from a church-yard;
âge bateau glace clémence cimetière
 the (native country); of a colony; to the goodness; the happiness;
patrie —nie bonté bonheur
 of the poison; to the fish; from the price; a cage; the salary; of
— poisson prix — —aire
 a song; to a knife; of a fork; to the salad; of a fur; the beer; of
chanson couteau fourchette —de fourrure bière

* When a substantive taken in a partitive sense, is preceded by an adjective, the word *de* is always used instead of *au*, *de la*, or *des*: as *du pain*, *de bon pain*; *de la viande*, *de bonne viande*, &c.

the night; a summer; the constancy; of the death; to the castle;
nuit *été* — *ce* *mort* *château*
 an ink-pot; the directory; a building; of the fear; to a comparison;
encrier — *oire* *bâtiment* *peur* — *raison*
 the burning; a suffering; of a calamity; the bed; of the dish; to
brûlure *souffrance* — *té* *lit* *plat*
 a chimney; of a picture; some paper; a penknife; the heaven; of
cheminée *tableau* *papier* *canif* *ciel*
 the garden; the market; of the roof; a pot; the looking-glass; the
jardin *marché* *toit* — *miroir*
 bolt; of a day; to the morning; of the evening; of an advantage;
verrou *jour* *matin* *soir* *avantage*
 the painting; of the fate; to the felicity; of a secret; to the perse-
peinture *sort* *félicité* — *persé-*
 verance; the courage; an education; of the forest; to the yard;
véronce — *é* — *forêt* *cour*
 of a genius; the description; of an effect; the pleasure; of the
génie — *effet* *plaisir*
 neatness; to the life; from the light; of the time; a variation; the
propreté *vie* *lumière* *temps* —
 simplicity; of the nature; an art; of a description; to the north;
 — *té* — — — *nord*
 of a point; to the youth; of the glory; the poetry; some wisdom;
 — *jeunesse* *gloire* *poésie* *sagesse*
 a reward; the silence; the providence; some patience; a restitution;
récompense — — —
 a boarding-school; of the harvest.
pension *moisson.*

EXERCISE UPON THE FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES, page 56.

N. B. The adjectives which must in French be placed after the substantives, have the last letter in *Italic*.

The learner must apply the rules about the articles, and the gender of substantives.

A good man; a good woman; a great garden; a great house; a
bon homme *femme* *grand jardin* *maison*
 white handkerchief; a white gown; a new hat; a new waistcoat; an
blanc mouchoir *robe f* *neuf chapeau* *veste f*
 attentive boy; an attentive girl; a fat ox; a fat cow; an ambitious
 — *tif garçon* *filie* *gras bœuf* *vache* — *tieux*
 project; an ambitious woman; a cruel father; a cruel mother; a
projet *femme* — *père* *mère*
 bitter fruit; a bitter apple; a constant friend; a constant resolution;
amer — *pomme* — *ami* *résolution*
 an elegant speech; an elegant lady; a figurative sense; a figurative
élégant discours *dame* — *tif sens*

expression; a frugal dinner; a frugal life; some cold beef; some
 — *dîner* *vie* *froid bœuf*
 cold meat; a warlike people; a warlike nation; a long discourse; a
viande f *guerrier peuple m* — — — *rs*
 long period; a natural style; a natural inclination; the public
phrase f — *rel* — *m* — *public*
 interest; the public opinion; a specious pretence; a specious answer;
intérêt — *spécieux prétexte m* *réponse f*
 a high wall; a high tower; a pretty boy; a pretty girl; a fine
haut mur *tour* *joli garçon* *filles beau*
 hat; a fine gown; a pernicious game; a pernicious company.
chapeau robe — *cieux jeu* — *gnie.*

EXERCISE UPON THE PLURAL OF SUBSTANTIVES AND ADJECTIVES, page 59.

Remember to apply in this exercise the rules for the articles, and for the feminine of adjectives, as well as for their plural; and in every exercise, the rules which precede must be applied.

An harmonious concert; two harmonious concerts; an harmonious
 — *nieux* — *deux*
 voice; three harmonious voices; a white horse; four white horses;
voix trois *blanc cheval quatre*
 a white house; five white houses. Your brother is prudent and wise;
maison cinq *votre frère est* — *et sage*
 your brothers are prudent and wise; your sister is prudent and wise;
vos sont *votre sœur*
 your sisters are prudent and wise. A pretty picture; a pretty girl;
vos *joli tableau* *filles*
 two pretty pictures; two pretty girls. The English general is brave
Anglais général —
 and courageous; the English generals are brave and courageous;
 — *général*
 our army is brave and courageous; our armies are brave and cou-
notre armée *nos*
 rageous. Your son is young and handsome; your sons are young
votre fils *jeune* *beau* *vos*
 and handsome; your daughter is young and handsome; your daugh-
votre fille *vos*
 ters are young and handsome. This book is new; these books are
ce livre m *neuf* *ces*
 new; this table is new; these tables are new. My uncle is rich and
cette — *f* *ces* *mon oncle* *riche*
 generous; my uncles are rich and generous; my aunt is rich and
généreux *mes* *ma tante*
 generous; my aunts are rich and generous. Give me a small knife,
mes *donnez-moi* *petit couteau*
 and a small fork; give me two small knives, and two small forks.
fourchette *donnez-moi*

This animal is cruel and revengeful; these animals are cruel and
cet — — vindicatif ces
 revengeful; this beast is cruel and revengeful; these beasts are cruel
cette bête f ces
 and revengeful. Our love is mutual; our sentiments are mutual;
notre amour mutuel nos — —els
 our fear is mutual; our fears are mutual. I have a good fire in
notre crainte f nos j'ai feu dans
 my room; I have two good fires in my house.
ma chambre f ma maison.

CHAP. IV.

OF PRONOUNS.

Pronouns are words used instead of nouns. If we were obliged to use a substantive before or after every verb, the repetition would be extremely tedious; we avoid this inconvenience by the help of some words used instead of them, which are called *pronouns*. They are of six sorts, called *personal*, *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *relative*, *interrogative*, and *indeterminate*, of which as follows:—

I. OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The personal pronouns assign to persons three parts in discourse: the *first* speaks, the *second* is spoken to, and the *third* is spoken of. The pronouns of the first person, *je, me, moi, nous*, and those of the second, *tu, te, toi, vous*, are said of persons only, or of personified objects; but those of the third, *il, ils; elle, elles; lui, leur, le, la, les; se, soi; y, en*, are said of persons, animals, and things.

As the same pronoun is expressed one way when it is *conjunctive* (that is to say, indispensably joined to a verb), and another when *disjunctive* (that is to say, which may be used without any reference to a verb), strict attention must be given to the following, in which they are carefully distinguished.

Conjunctive Personal Pronouns.

SINGULAR.

FIRST PERSON.		SECOND PERSON.		THIRD PERSON.	
<i>m. f.</i>		<i>m. f.</i>			
Je,	<i>I.</i>	Tu,	<i>Thou.</i>	Il, <i>m.</i>	<i>He.</i>
En,	<i>Of me.</i>	En,	<i>Of thee.</i>	En,	<i>Of him.</i>
Me,	<i>To me.</i>	Te,	<i>To thee.</i>	Lui,	<i>To him.</i>
Me,	<i>Me.</i>	Te,	<i>Thee.</i>	Le,	<i>Him.</i>

PLURAL.

FIRST PERSON.		SECOND PERSON.		THIRD PERSON.	
<i>m. f.</i>		<i>m. f.</i>		<i>m.</i>	
Nous,	<i>We.</i>	Vous,	<i>You.</i>	Ils,	<i>They.</i>
En,	<i>Of us.</i>	En,	<i>Of you.</i>	En,	<i>Of them.</i>
Nous,	<i>To us.</i>	Vous,	<i>To you.</i>	Leur,	<i>To them.</i>
Nous,	<i>Us.</i>	Vous,	<i>You.</i>	Les,	<i>Them.</i>

THIRD PERSON.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Elle, <i>f.</i>	<i>She.</i>	Elles, <i>f.</i>	<i>They.</i>
En,	<i>Of her.</i>	En,	<i>Of them.</i>
Lui,	<i>To her.</i>	Leur,	<i>To them.</i>
La,	<i>Her.</i>	Les,	<i>Them.</i>

OF BOTH GENDERS.

Se,	<i>To one's self.</i>	Se,	<i>To themselves.</i>
Se,	<i>One's self.</i>	Se,	<i>Themselves.</i>

Disjunctive Personal Pronouns.

FIRST PERSON.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Moi,	<i>I.</i>	Nous,	<i>We.</i>
De moi,	<i>Of me.</i>	De nous,	<i>Of us.</i>
A moi,	<i>To me.</i>	A nous,	<i>To us.</i>
Moi,	<i>Me.</i>	Nous,	<i>Us.</i>

SECOND PERSON.

Toi,	<i>Thou.</i>	Vous,	<i>You.</i>
De toi,	<i>Of thee.</i>	De vous,	<i>Of you.</i>
A toi,	<i>To thee.</i>	A vous,	<i>To you.</i>
Toi,	<i>Thee.</i>	Vous,	<i>You.</i>

THIRD PERSON.

Lui, <i>m.</i>	<i>He.</i>	Eux, <i>m.</i>	<i>They.</i>
De lui,	<i>Of him.</i>	D'eux,	<i>Of them.</i>
A lui,	<i>To him.</i>	A eux,	<i>To them.</i>
Lui,	<i>Him.</i>	Eux,	<i>Them.</i>

Elle, <i>f.</i>	<i>She.</i>	Elles, <i>f.</i>	<i>They.</i>
D'elle,	<i>Of her.</i>	D'elles,	<i>Of them.</i>
A elle,	<i>To her.</i>	A elles,	<i>To them.</i>
Elle.	<i>Her.</i>	Elles,	<i>Them.</i>

OF BOTH GENDERS.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
De soi,	<i>Of one's self.</i>	De soi,	<i>Of themselves.</i>
A soi,	<i>To one's self.</i>	A soi,	<i>To themselves.</i>
Soi,	<i>One's self.</i>	Soi,	<i>Themselves.</i>

Pronouns used with reference to Animals, and Things.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Il, elle, or ce,	<i>It.</i>	Ils, elles, or ce,	<i>They.</i>
En,	<i>Of it.</i>	En,	<i>Of them.</i>
Lui, y,	<i>To it.</i>	Leur, y,	<i>To them.</i>
Le, la,	<i>It.</i>	Les,	<i>Them.</i>

N.B. The compound pronouns *moi-même*, myself; *toi-même*, thyself; *lui-même*, himself; *elle-même*, herself; *nous-mêmes*, ourselves; *vous-mêmes*, yourselves; *eux-mêmes*, themselves; take the prepositions *de* and *à*.

It has been already remarked, that *en* is only a substitute for a genitive case: it differs from a true pronoun as much as *y*, which is an adverb signifying *in* or *to* that place.

II. OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

The possessive pronouns denote possession. They are called *conjunctive* when they are joined to a noun, and *disjunctive* when they are used with reference to a noun antecedent. They are as follows:

Conjunctive Possessive Pronouns.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	<i>m. and f.</i>	
mon,	ma,	mes,	<i>my.</i>
de mon,	de ma,	de mes,	<i>of my.</i>
à mon,	à ma,	à mes,	<i>to my.</i>

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	<i>m. and f.</i>	
ton,	ta,	tes,	<i>thy.</i>
de ton,	de ta,	de tes,	<i>of thy.</i>
à ton,	à ta,	à tes,	<i>to thy.</i>

SINGULAR.	
m.	f.
son,	sa,
de son,	de sa,
à son,	à sa,

PLURAL.	
m. and f.	
ses,	his her, its.
de ses,	of his, &c.
à ses,	to his, &c.

SINGULAR.	
m. and f.	
notre,	
de notre,	
à notre,	

PLURAL.	
m. and f.	
nos,	our.
de nos,	of our.
à nos,	to our.

SINGULAR.	
m. and f.	
votre,	
de votre,	
à votre,	

PLURAL.	
m. and f.	
vos,	your.
de vos,	of your.
à vos,	to your.

SINGULAR.	
m. and f.	
leur,	
de leur,	
à leur,	

PLURAL.	
m. and f.	
leurs,	their.
de leurs,	of their.
à leurs,	to their.

Disjunctive Possessive Pronouns.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m.	f.	
le mien,	la mienne,	les miens,	les miennes,	mine.
du mien,	de la mienne,	des miens,	des miennes,	of mine.
au mien,	à la mienne,	aux miens,	aux miennes,	to mine.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m.	f.	
le tien	la tienne,	les tiens,	les tiennes,	thine.
du tien	de la tienne,	des tiens,	des tiennes,	of thine.
au tien	à la tienne,	aux tiens,	aux tiennes,	to thine.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m.	f.	
le sien,	la sienne,	les siens,	les siennes,	his, her, its.
du sien,	de la sienne,	des siens,	des siennes,	of his, &c.
au sien,	à la sienne,	aux siens,	aux siennes,	to his, &c.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m. and f.	
le nôtre,	la nôtre,	les nôtres,	ours.
du nôtre,	de la nôtre,	des nôtres,	of ours.
au nôtre,	à la nôtre,	aux nôtres,	to ours.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m. and f.	
le vôtre,	la vôtre,	les vôtres,	yours.
du vôtre,	de la vôtre,	des vôtres,	of yours.
au vôtre,	à la vôtre,	aux vôtres,	to yours.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
m.	f.	m. and f.	
le leur,	la leur,	les leurs,	theirs.
du leur,	de la leur,	des leurs,	of theirs.
au leur,	à la leur,	aux leurs,	to theirs.

OBSERVATIONS UPON THESE PRONOUNS.

1. The possessive pronouns agree in gender and number with the substantive which they precede, or to which they have reference.

Son and *sa* do not refer, like *his*, *her*, *its*, in English, to the sex of the *person*; but agree in gender only with the noun that follows them.

2. *Mon*, *ton*, *son*, are used in the feminine instead of *ma*, *ta*, *sa*, before a vowel or *h* mute: as, *mon âme*, my soul, *son humeur*, his humour.

3. The *conjunctive* take the prepositions *de* and *à* like proper names. The *disjunctive* are preceded by *le*, *la*, *les*; by *du*, *de la*, *des*; and by *au*, *à la*, *aux*, like a substantive.

4. *Leur*, to them, must not be confounded with *leur*, their. The first is a personal pronoun which goes before a verb, and never takes an *s*, as *il leur parle*, he speaks to them. The second is a possessive pronoun which goes before a substantive, and takes an *s* in the plural, as *leurs frères sont venus*, their brothers are come.

5. *Notre* and *votre*, conjunctive, are sounded short; *le nôtre*, *le vôtre*, disjunctive, are sounded long, and have a circumflex accent over *ô*: as, *notre père est mort*; *le vôtre est en bonne santé*; our father is dead; yours is in good health.

III. OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Demonstrative pronouns denote precisely, and point out, as it were, to the eye, the noun which they precede, or to

which they have reference. They may be called *conjunctive* when they are joined to a substantive, and *disjunctive* when they have reference to a substantive antecedent.

Pronouns used before a Substantive.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	
	ce, cet,*	cette,	this or that.
	de ce de cet,	de cette,	of this or of that.
	à ce, à cet,	à cette,	to this or to that.
<i>Plural.</i>	ces, — <i>m.</i> and <i>f.</i>		these or those.
	de ces,		of these or of those.
	à ces,		to these or to those.

Demonstrative Pronouns followed by a relative Pronoun.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	
	celui,	celle,	that.
	de celui,	de celle,	of that.
	à celui,	à celle,	to that.
<i>Plural.</i>	ceux,	celles,	those.
	de ceux,	de celles,	of those.
	à ceux,	à celles,	to those.

Pronouns used with reference to the last Noun spoken of.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	
	celui-ci,	celle-ci,	this.
	de celui-ci,	de celle-ci,	of this.
	à celui-ci,	à celle-ci,	to this.
<i>Plural.</i>	ceux-ci,	celles-ci,	these.
	de ceux-ci,	de celles-ci,	of these.
	à ceux-ci,	à celles-ci,	to these.

Pronouns used with reference to the first Noun spoken of.

<i>Singular.</i>	<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	
	celui-là,	celle-là,	that.
	de celui-là,	de celle-là,	of that.
	à celui-là,	à celle-là,	to that.
<i>Plural.</i>	ceux-là,	celles-là,	those.
	de ceux-là,	de celles-là,	of those.
	à ceux-là,	à celles-là,	to those.

* This pronoun is used before a noun masculine, which begins with a vowel or an *h* mute.

Pronouns used to denote an Object without naming it.

<i>Singular.</i>	ceci,	this.	cela,	that.
	de ceci,	of this.	de cela,	of that.
	à ceci,	to this.	à cela,	to that.

IV. OF RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Though every pronoun has reference to a substantive, and might be, on that account, called *relative*, yet the following, *qui, que, quoi, lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, especially bear that denomination, being more particularly related to their antecedent than any other. Of the relative pronouns, some have reference only to persons or personified objects, and some to animals and things. They are as follows.

Pronouns relative to Persons.

m. f.	SING.	PLUR.	m. f.	SING.	PLUR.
qui,		who.	à qui,		to whom.
de qui, or dont,		of whom.	qui, or que,		whom.

Pronouns relative to Animals and Things.

SINGULAR.					
m. f.		m.	f.		
qui	or	lequel,	laquelle,		which.
dont	or	duquel,	de laquelle,		of which.
		auquel,	à laquelle,		to which.
que	or	lequel,	laquelle,		which.
PLURAL.					
m. f.		m.	f.		
qui	or	lesquels,	lesquelles,		which.
dont	or	desquels,	desquelles,		of which.
		auxquels,	auxquelles,		to which.
que	or	lesquels,	lesquelles,		which.

Observations. 1. *Dont*, whereof, is a word of the same class with *en* and *y*, but has come to be considered a pronoun.

2. The adverb *où* is also substituted for *lequel, auquel, &c.*

V. OF INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

Interrogative pronouns are those used to ask a question ; viz. *quel, quelle*, what or which ? used *conjunctively* ; and *lequel, qui, quoi*, and *que*, used *disjunctively* or *absolutely*, for which, who, what ?

Pronouns used with reference to Persons.

qui ?	who ?	à qui ?	to whom ?
de qui ?	of whom ?	qui ?	whom ?

Pronouns used with reference to Persons and Things.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
m.	f.	m.	f.	
lequel,	laquelle,	lesquels,	lesquelles,	<i>which ?</i>
duquel,	de laquelle,	desquels,	desquelles,	<i>of which ?</i>
auquel,	à laquelle,	auxquels,	auxquelles,	<i>to which ?</i>

What ? used conjunctively.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	<i>m.</i>	<i>f.</i>	
quel,	quelle,	quels,	quelles,	<i>what ?</i>
de quel,	de quelle,	de quels,	de quelles,	<i>of what ?</i>
à quel,	à quelle,	à quels,	à quelles,	<i>to what ?</i>

What ? not followed by a substantive.

quoi, and que,	what ?	à quoi,	to what ?
de quoi,	of what ?	que,	what ?

VI. OF INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS, OR RATHER PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

Indeterminate pronouns are so called, because they allude to an object rather than specify it : they are divided into four classes.

1. *Those which are never joined to a Noun.*

on,	one, people, they.	<i>l'un l'autre,</i>	one another.
<i>quelqu'un,</i>	somebody.	<i>autrui,</i>	others.
<i>quiconque,</i>	whoever.	<i>personne, m.</i>	nobody.
<i>chacun,</i>	every one.	<i>rien, m.</i>	nothing.

2. *Those which are always joined to a Noun.*

<i>quelque,</i>	some.	<i>quelconque,</i>	whatever.
<i>chaque,</i>	every, each.	<i>certain,</i>	some.

3. *Those which are sometimes joined to a Noun and sometimes not.*

<i>nul,</i>	not one.	<i>ni l'un ni l'autre,</i>	neither.
<i>pas un,</i>	not one.	<i>le même,</i>	the same.
<i>aucun,</i>	not one.	<i>tel,</i>	such.
<i>autre,</i>	other.	<i>plusieurs,</i>	many.
<i>l'un et l'autre,</i>	both.	<i>tout,</i>	every, every thing.
<i>l'un ou l'autre,</i>	either.		

4. *Those which are followed by the Conjunction que.*

<i>qui que,</i>	whoever.	<i>quelque que,</i>	whatever.
<i>quoi que,</i>	whatever.	<i>tel que,</i>	such as.
<i>quel que,</i>	whoever or whatever.	<i>tout que,</i>	however
<i>lequel que,</i>	whichever.		

Observe, 1. After the indeterminate pronoun *on*, and others, in the singular, we express the personal pronouns which relate to them, by *de soi*, *à soi*, *se*, *soi* : as, *on doit veiller sur soi*, one must watch over one's self, *chacun doit penser à soi*, every one ought to take care of himself.

2. *L'un l'autre* makes *l'un de l'autre*, and *l'un à l'autre*; *l'un et l'autre*, *l'un ou l'autre*, *ni l'un ni l'autre*, make *de l'un et de l'autre*, *de l'un ou de l'autre*, *ni de l'un ni de l'autre*, and *à l'un et à l'autre*, *à l'un ou à l'autre*, *ni à l'un ni à l'autre*; *le même* makes *du même*, *au même*.

3. All other pronouns take only the prepositions *de* or *à*.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

The conjunctive pronouns *je*, *tu*, *il*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*, *ils*, *elles*, when subject, precede their verb when there is no interrogation, but are inverted in a few other instances, and in all interrogative sentences: Ex. *je parle*, &c. I speak; *parlez-vous?* do you speak? *dit-il*, says he.

The personal pronouns always go immediately before the verb they are governed by, or before its auxiliary: Ex. *je les connais*, I know them; *je les ai connus*, I have known them. If, however, the verb were in the impe-

rative affirmative, the governed pronouns should go after it: Ex. *voyez-les, parlez-lui*, see them, speak to him. The disjunctive pronouns are put in the same place in French as they are in English, and require no explanation.

N.B. A *c* is put under the pronoun when it is conjunctive, and a *d* when it is disjunctive.

EXERCISE ON THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

I speak. Who speaks? I. He reads. Who reads? He. They
c parle qui parle d c lit qui lit d c
 dance. Who dance? They. He speaks to me; he and his brother
dansent qui danse d c c d et son frère
 speak against me; they love me; you know them; you speak to
parlent contre d c aiment c c connoissez c c parlez
 him; you speak of them; you speak against them; we love you;
c c d c contre d c aimons c
 we respect them; we respect him; he speaks to you and to me; he
c respectons c c c parle d et d c
 speaks to him and to her.
d et d

EXERCISE ON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

My brother; my sister; my brothers; my sisters; of my garden;
frère m sœur f jardin m
 of my house; of my books; of my tables; to my country; to my
maison f livres pl. —pl. pays m.
 nation; to my horses; to my cows; his master; his mistress; of his
—f chevaux pl vaches pl maître m maîtresse f
 pleasure; to his duty; our friend; of your picture; to their room;
plaisir m devoir m ami m tableau m chambre f
 of our closet; to your bed; of their enemies; of my soul; to his
cabinet lit ennemis pl âme f
 humour.
humeur h

EXERCISE ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

N. B. These pronouns agree in gender and number with the substantive to which they are joined or relative. They take the prepositions *de* and *à*.

This wine is good; that beer is good; that man is learned; that
vin m est bon bière f homme h savant

woman is learned ; these apples are ripe ; do not speak of that child ;
femme *pommes sont mûres* *ne parlez pas* *enfant m*
do not speak of that girl ; of these pens ; to these books ; this bird ;
filles f *plumes pl* *livres pl* *oiseau m*
of that cage ; to that country ; these arms ; of these soldiers ; to
—f *pays m* *armes pl* *soldats pl*
those armies ; give me this or that ; do not do that.
armées pl *donnez-moi ou* *ne faites pas.*

RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

N. B. *Qui*, *dont*, and *que* are used for both genders and numbers of all sorts of objects : as, *l'homme qui lit*, *le cheval qui paît*, *le livre qui est sur la table*, *l'homme dont vous parlez*, *le cheval dont vous parlez*, *le livre dont vous parlez*, *l'homme que je vois*, *le cheval que je vois*, *le livre que je vois*, acc.

INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

N. B. *What* is expressed by *quoi* when it signifies *what thing* ; and by *quel* or *quelle* before a substantive : as, *je sais en quoi vous êtes coupable*, I know in *what* you are guilty. *Quel livre lisez-vous ?* *what* book do you read ?

INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

As the three last classes of pronouns cannot be applied but in sentences too difficult for beginners, the exercises upon them will be found in the syntax, rule 79, and following.

CHAP. V.

OF VERBS.

THIS chapter is divided into *eight* sections : the *first* speaks of the nature and species of verbs ; the *second* treats of their different moods, tenses, numbers, and persons ;

the third gives the conjugation of the auxiliaries *avoir* and *être*, and contains a list of those conjugated with *to have* in English, and with *être* in French; *the fourth* comprehends the regular conjugations; *the fifth* contains all the irregular verbs, in alphabetical order, fully explained; *the sixth* treats of the impersonal verbs; *the seventh* displays the conjugation of a verb, reflected on its conjunctive pronoun; and *the eighth* teaches several manners of conjugating a verb.

SECTION I.

OF THE NATURE AND SPECIES OF VERBS.

A *verb* is a word which expresses, either an action done or received by the subject, or simply the state or quality of the subject: hence arise three distinct sorts of verbs, which are called,

1. active, *actif*.
2. passive, *passif*.
3. neuter, *neutre*.

The active verb expresses the action of its subject in regard to some object: as, *Charles étudie sa leçon*, Charles studies his lesson: *étudie* is a verb active, which expresses the action of *Charles* in regard to his lesson.

The passive verb expresses an action received by its subject: as, *les méchants seront punis de Dieu*, wicked people will be punished by God. It will not engage our attention here, as it is rendered by the auxiliary verb *être*, to be, in French as in English.

The neuter verb expresses the state of its subject: as, *je suis*, I am; *je dors*, I sleep; *je languis*, I languish. It expresses also an action, but absolutely, or without reference to an object, or regimen: as, *je marche*, I walk, *j'agis*, I act.

Verbs admit of six further distinctions or epithets.

VERBS,

- | | | | |
|---------------|---------------------|----------------|----------------------|
| 1. auxiliary, | <i>auxiliaires.</i> | 4. impersonal, | <i>impersonnels.</i> |
| 2. reflected, | <i>réfléchis.</i> | 5. regular, | <i>réguliers.</i> |
| 3. personal, | <i>personnels.</i> | 6. irregular, | <i>irréguliers.</i> |

1. *The auxiliary verbs* are these two: *avoir*, to have ; and *être*, to be : they are called *auxiliaries*, because they help to conjugate all other verbs in their compound tenses.

2. *The reflected verbs* are those which have for subject and object the same person or thing : as, *je me lève*, I rise ; *je m'habille*, I dress myself ; *je me repens*, I repent.

3. *The personal verbs* are those which are conjugated with three persons in the singular number, and three in the plural, in all the tenses of the indicative and subjunctive moods : as, *je parle, tu parles. il parle, nous parlons, vous parlez*, &c.

4. *The impersonal verbs* are those which are used only in the third person singular of each tense : as, *il pleut*, it rains ; *il neige*, it snows ; *il gèle*, it freezes.

5. *The regular verbs* are those which are conjugated in all their tenses and persons, like the verb of the same final in the infinitive, which is given for example in regular conjugations : thus, for instance, *chanter* and *danser*, to sing, and to dance, are regular of the first conjugation, because they are conjugated like *parler* in all their tenses and persons.

The *irregular verbs* are those which deviate, in some tenses or persons, from the verb regular of the same conjugation which is given for example : thus, *aller*, to go, is irregular, because it is not conjugated like *parler*, though it has the same final in the infinitive mood.

SECTION II.

OF MOODS, TENSES, NUMBERS, AND PERSONS, OF VERBS.

Verbs are necessarily subject, 1. *to moods*, whereby they are adapted to different modes of speaking ; 2. *to tenses*, by the help of which they represent the thing spoken of, as present, past, or future ; 3. *to numbers* and *persons*, that they may agree with their subject. What is called conjugation is the method of varying these different moods, tenses, numbers, and persons.

1. OF MOODS.

Moods are the different manners of using a verb. There are four moods; the *infinitive*, the *indicative*, the *subjunctive*, and the *imperative*.

The *infinitive mood*, which is the root of a verb, and by which the conjugations are distinguished from each other, expresses an action, but in an indeterminate manner, without specifying any particular agent: as, *parler*, to speak; *dormir*, to sleep; *agir*, to act, &c.

The *indicative mood* is adapted to the utterance of declarations and propositions: it forms a sense of itself independently of what precedes or follows: as, *je veux*, I am willing; *j'écris*, I am writing; *je parle*, I speak.

The *subjunctive mood* employs different tenses, but dependently on the verb or conjunction antecedent: as, *il faut que nous soyons modestes*, *quelque mérite que nous ayons*: if you take out *il faut que*, *quelque mérite que*, the rest, *nous soyons*, *nous ayons*, have not a complete sense.

The *imperative mood* expresses the action of desiring, commanding, exhorting, &c.: as, *répondez-moi*, answer me: —

*Tenez votre parole inviolablement,
Mais ne la donnez pas inconsidérément.*

2. OF TENSES.

Tenses refer to the time; and are expressed by different terminations: a verb has reference to present, past, or future. Their names are found in the following conjugations, and their use is fully explained in the Syntax, chapters 15, 16, and 17.

3. OF NUMBERS AND PERSONS.

There are two numbers in a verb, which are the *singular* and *plural*: the singular is used when we speak of one: as, *votre frère est mort*, your brother is dead; and the plural, when we speak of more than one: as, *vos frères sont morts*, your brothers are dead.

There are three persons in each number: *the first* is used when we speak of ourselves, *the second* when we speak to another, and *the third* when we speak of another

SECTION III.

Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb Avoir, to have.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present tense,</i>	avoir,	<i>to have.</i>
<i>Participle present,</i>	ayant,	<i>having.</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	eu, m. eue, f.	<i>had.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	avoir eu,	<i>to have had.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle,</i>	ayant eu,	<i>having had.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
1. J'ai *,	<i>I have.</i>	Nous avons,	<i>we have.</i>
2. tu as,	<i>thou hast.</i>	vous avez,	<i>you have.</i>
3. il a,	<i>he has.</i>	ils ont,	<i>they have.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai eu,	<i>I have had.</i>	Nous avons eu,	<i>we have had.</i>
tu as eu,	<i>thou hast had.</i>	vous avez eu,	<i>you have had.</i>
il a eu,	<i>he has had.</i>	ils ont eu,	<i>they have had.</i>

IMPERFECT.

J'avais,	<i>I had.</i>	Nous avions,	<i>we had.</i>
tu avais,	<i>thou hadst.</i>	vous aviez,	<i>you had.</i>
il avait,	<i>he had.</i>	ils avaient,	<i>they had.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J'avais eu,	<i>I had had.</i>	Nous avions eu,	<i>We had had.</i>
tu avais eu,	<i>thou hadst had.</i>	vous aviez eu,	<i>you had had.</i>
il avait eu,	<i>he had had.</i>	ils avaient eu,	<i>they had had.</i>

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

J'eus,	<i>I had.</i>	Nous eûmes,	<i>we had.</i>
tu eus,	<i>thou hadst.</i>	vous eûtes,	<i>you had.</i>
il eut,	<i>he had.</i>	ils eurent,	<i>they had.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite.*

J'eus eu,	<i>I had had.</i>	Nous eûmes eu,	<i>We had had.</i>
tu eus eu,	<i>thou hadst had.</i>	vous eûtes eu,	<i>you had had.</i>
il eut eu,	<i>he had had.</i>	ils eurent eu,	<i>they had had.</i>

* The figures 1, 2, 3, denote the first, second, and third persons.

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

J'aurai,	<i>I shall or will have.</i>	Nous aurons,	<i>We shall have.</i>
tu auras,	<i>thou shalt have.</i>	vous aurez,	<i>you shall have.</i>
il aura,	<i>he shall have.</i>	ils auront,	<i>they shall have.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future.*

J'aurai eu, <i>I shall or will have had.</i>	Nous aurons eu, <i>We shall have had.</i>
tu auras eu, <i>thou shalt have had.</i>	vous aurez eu, <i>you shall have had.</i>
il aura eu, <i>he shall have had.</i>	ils auront eu, <i>they shall have had.</i>

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

J'aurais, <i>I would have.</i>	Nous aurions, <i>we would have.</i>
tu aurais, <i>thou wouldst have.</i>	vous auriez, <i>you would have.</i>
il aurait, <i>he would have.</i>	ils auraient, <i>they would have.</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional.*

J'aurais eu, <i>I would have had.</i>	Nous aurions eu, <i>we would have had.</i>
tu aurais eu, <i>thou wouldst have had.</i>	vous auriez eu, <i>you would have had.</i>
il aurait eu, <i>he would have had.</i>	ils auraient eu, <i>they would have had.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

aie,	<i>have thou.</i>	Ayez,	<i>let us have.</i>
qu'il ait,	<i>let him have.</i>	ayez,	<i>have ye.</i>
		qu'ils aient,	<i>let them have.</i>

REMARKS.

1. The final *aient*, which is in the third person of the plural in the imperfect and conditional tenses of all verbs, is sounded like *ais* of the first person of the same tense, only a little longer: thus, *j'étais* and *ils étaient*, *je pensais*, and *ils pensaient*, are pronounced nearly alike.

2. The final *ent*, in the third person of the plural in the present and preterite of the indicative and subjunctive moods; thus, *je parle* and *ils parlent*, *je parlasse* and *ils parlaissent*, are pronounced alike.

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que	<i>That</i>		
J'aie,	<i>I may have.</i>	Nous ayons,	<i>we may have.</i>
tu aies,	<i>thou mayst have.</i>	vous ayez,	<i>you may have.</i>
il ait,	<i>he may have.</i>	ils aient,	<i>they may have.</i>

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

Que	That	
J'aie eu,	<i>I may have had.</i>	Nous ayons eu, <i>we may have had.</i>
tu aies eu,	<i>thou mayst have had.</i>	vous ayez eu, <i>you may have had.</i>
il ait eu,	<i>he may have had.</i>	ils aient eu, <i>they may have had.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Que	That	
J'eusse,	<i>I might have.</i>	Nous eussions, <i>we might have.</i>
tu eusses,	<i>thou mightst have.</i>	vous eussiez, <i>you might have.</i>
il eût,	<i>he might have.</i>	ils eussent, <i>they might have.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

Que	That	
J'eusse eu,	<i>I might have had.</i>	Nous eussions eu, <i>we might have had.</i>
tu eusses eu,	<i>thou mightst have had.</i>	vous eussiez eu, <i>you might have had.</i>
il eût eu,	<i>he might have had.</i>	ils eussent eu, <i>they might have had.</i>

Conjugation of the auxiliary Verb Etre, to be.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present tense,</i>	être,	<i>to be.</i>
<i>Participle present,</i>	étant,	<i>being.</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	été,	<i>been.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	avoir été,	<i>to have been.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle,</i>	ayant été,	<i>having been.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Je suis,	<i>I am.</i>	Nous sommes,	<i>we are.</i>
tu es,	<i>thou art.</i>	vous êtes,	<i>you are.</i>
il est,	<i>he is.</i>	ils sont,	<i>they are.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai été,	<i>I have been.</i>	Nous avons été,	<i>we have been.</i>
tu as été,	<i>thou hast been.</i>	vous avez été,	<i>you have been.</i>
il a été,	<i>he has been.</i>	ils ont été,	<i>they have been.</i>

IMPERFECT.

J'étais,	<i>I was.</i>	Nous étions,	<i>we were.</i>
tu étais,	<i>thou wast.</i>	vous étiez,	<i>you were.</i>
il était,	<i>he was.</i>	ils étaient,	<i>they were.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J'avais été,	<i>I had been.</i>	Nous avions été,	<i>we had been.</i>
tu avais été,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>	vous aviez été,	<i>you had been.</i>
il avait été,	<i>he had been.</i>	ils avaient été,	<i>they had been.</i>

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

Je fus,	<i>I was.</i>	Nous fûmes,	<i>we were.</i>
tu fus,	<i>thou wast.</i>	vous fûtes,	<i>you were.</i>
il fut,	<i>he was.</i>	ils furent,	<i>they were.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite.*

J'eus été,	<i>I had been.</i>	Nous eûmes été,	<i>we had been.</i>
tu eus été,	<i>thou hadst been.</i>	vous eûtes été,	<i>you had been.</i>
il eut été,	<i>he had been.</i>	ils eurent été,	<i>they had been.</i>

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je serai,	<i>I shall or will be.</i>	Nous serons,	<i>we shall or will be.</i>
tu seras,	<i>thou shalt or wilt be.</i>	vous serez,	<i>you shall or will be.</i>
il sera,	<i>he shall or will be.</i>	ils seront,	<i>they shall or will be.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future.*

J'aurai été,	<i>I shall have been.</i>	Nous aurons été,	<i>we shall have been.</i>
tu auras été,	<i>thou shalt have been.</i>	vous aurez été,	<i>you shall have been.</i>
il aura été,	<i>he shall have been.</i>	ils auront été,	<i>they shall have been.</i>

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

Je serais,	<i>I would be.</i>	Nous serions,	<i>we would be.</i>
tu serais,	<i>thou wouldst be.</i>	vous seriez,	<i>you would be.</i>
il serait,	<i>he would be.</i>	ils seraient,	<i>they would be.</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional.*

J'aurais été,	<i>I would have been.</i>	Nous aurions été,	<i>we would have been.</i>
tu aurais été,	<i>thou wouldst have been.</i>	vous auriez été,	<i>you would have been.</i>
il aurait été,	<i>he would have been.</i>	ils auraient été,	<i>they would have been.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

sois,	<i>be thou.</i>	Soyons,	<i>let us be.</i>
qu'il soit,	<i>let him be.</i>	soyez,	<i>be ye.</i>
		qu'ils soient,	<i>let them be.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que	<i>That</i>		
Je sois,	<i>I may be.</i>	Nous soyons,	<i>we may be.</i>
tu sois,	<i>thou mayst be.</i>	vous soyez,	<i>you may be.</i>
il soit,	<i>he may be.</i>	ils soient,	<i>they may be.</i>

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

Que	<i>That</i>		
J'aie été,	<i>I may have been.</i>	Nous ayons été,	<i>we may have been.</i>
tu aies été,	<i>thou mayst have been.</i>	vous ayez été,	<i>you may have been.</i>
il ait été,	<i>he may have been.</i>	ils aient été,	<i>they may have been.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Que	That	
Je fusse,	<i>I might be.</i>	Nous fussions, <i>we might be.</i>
tu fusses,	<i>thou mightst be.</i>	vous fussiez, <i>you might be.</i>
il fût,	<i>he might be.</i>	ils fussent, <i>they might be.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

Que	That	
J'eusse été, <i>I might have been.</i>	Nous eussions été, <i>we might</i>	} <i>have been.</i>
tu eusses été, <i>thou mightst have been.</i>	vous eussiez été, <i>you might</i>	
il eût été, <i>he might have been.</i>	ils eussent été, <i>they might</i>	

These two verbs, *avoir* and *être*, help to conjugate all others in their compound tenses, and therefore must be learnt perfectly. All verbs conjugated with the verb *to be* in English, take *être* in French; but all those conjugated with *to have* in English, do not take *avoir* in French. The following are excepted:—

Verbs conjugated with To have, in English, and Etre in French.

1. All reflected and reciprocal verbs, without exception, take, in their compound tenses, the auxiliary *être* in French, and the auxiliary *to have* in English.

2. The sixteen following are conjugated with *être* in French, and *to have* in English:—

aller,	<i>to go.</i>	tomber,	<i>to fall.</i>
arriver,	<i>to arrive.</i>	venir,	<i>to come.</i>
déchoir,	<i>to decay.</i>	devenir,	<i>to become.</i>
décéder,	<i>to die.</i>	disconvenir,	<i>to disagree.</i>
entrer,	<i>to come in.</i>	intervenir,	<i>to intervene.</i>
mourir,	<i>to die.</i>	parvenir,	<i>to attain.</i>
naître,	<i>to be born.</i>	revenir,	<i>to come back.</i>
partir,	<i>to set out.</i>	survenir,	<i>to happen.</i>

These six, *accourir*, to run to; *accroître*, to increase; *apparaître*, to appear; *croître*, to grow; *disparaître*, to disappear; and *périr*, to perish; which are always conjugated with the auxiliary *to have* in English, are conjugated in French with *avoir* or *être*, according as action or state is more particularly meant.

Verbs which take Avoir in one Signification, and Etre in another.

These six verbs, *accoucher*, *convenir*, *demeurer*, *descendre*, *monter*, and *passer*, take *avoir*, or *être*, in their

compound tenses, according to the following distinctions:—

1. *Accoucher* takes *avoir*, when used in an active sense, and *être*, when used as a verb neuter.

2. *Convenir* takes *avoir*, when it means *to be convenient*, and *être*, when it signifies *to agree*: as, *vosre maison aurait convenu à mon père, je suis fâché que vous ne soyez pas convenus du prix*; your house would have suited my father, I am sorry that you have not agreed upon the terms.

3. *Demeurer* takes *avoir*, when it signifies *to live in*, and *être*, when it signifies *to remain*: as, *j'ai demeuré à Londres*, I have lived in London; *il est demeuré inébranlable*, he has remained immovable.

4. *Descendre* takes *avoir*, when it is followed by a regimen direct, and *être* in other cases: as, *il a descendu l'escalier*, he has gone down stairs; *il est descendu d'une bonne famille*, he is descended from a good family.

5. *Monter* takes *avoir*, when it is followed by a regimen direct, and *être* in other cases: as, *j'ai monté la colline*, I have ascended the hill; *je suis monté par degrés aux charges militaires*, I have ascended by degrees to military employments.

6. *Passer* takes *avoir*, when it is followed by a noun or a pronoun, and *être* when not: as, *j'ai passé par la France*, I have passed through France; *cette mode est passée*, that fashion is past.

SECTION IV.

OF REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

A comparative view of the different terminations of verbs, in their moods, tenses, and persons, enables us to refer them all to one or other of four classes, distinguished by the ending of the infinitive mood in *ER*, *IR*, *OIR*, or *RE*: as, *parler*, to speak; *agir*, to act; *recevoir*, to receive; *vendre*, to sell, which we select as examples of the four regular conjugations.

Some verbs in *ER*, *IR*, *OIR*, and *RE*, deviate from the models, *parler* and *agir*, *recevoir* and *vendre*, in forming their tenses: these will be treated of in a separate section, on the conjugation of irregular verbs.

First Conjugation. Parler.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present tense,</i>	parler,	<i>to speak.</i>
<i>Participle present,</i>	parlant,	<i>speaking</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	parlé,	<i>spoken.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	avoir parlé,	<i>to have spoken.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle,</i>	ayant parlé,	<i>having spoken.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
Je parle,	<i>I speak.</i>	Nous parlons, <i>we speak.</i>
tu parles,	<i>thou speakest.</i>	vous parlez, <i>you speak.</i>
il parle,	<i>he speaks.</i>	ils parlent, <i>they speak.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai parlé,	<i>I have spoken.</i>	Nous avons parlé, <i>we have spoken.</i>
tu as parlé,	<i>thou hast spoken.</i>	vous avez parlé, <i>you have spoken.</i>
il a parlé,	<i>he has spoken.</i>	ils ont parlé, <i>they have spoken.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je parlais,	<i>I was speaking.</i>	Nous parlions, <i>we were speaking.</i>
tu parlais,	<i>thou wast speaking.</i>	vous parliez, <i>you were speaking.</i>
il parlait,	<i>he was speaking.</i>	ils parlaient, <i>they were speaking.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J'avais parlé,	<i>I had spoken.</i>	Nous avions parlé, <i>we had spoken.</i>
tu avais parlé,	<i>thou hadst spoken.</i>	vous aviez parlé, <i>you had spoken.</i>
il avait parlé,	<i>he had spoken.</i>	ils avaient parlé, <i>they had spoken.</i>

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

Je parlai,	<i>I spoke.</i>	Nous parlâmes, <i>we spoke.</i>
tu parlas,	<i>thou spokest.</i>	vous parlâtes, <i>you spoke.</i>
il parla,	<i>he spoke.</i>	ils parlèrent, <i>they spoke.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite.*

J'eus parlé,	<i>I had spoken.</i>	Nous eûmes parlé, <i>we had spoken.</i>
tu eus parlé,	<i>thou hadst spoken.</i>	vous eûtes parlé, <i>you had spoken.</i>
il eut parlé,	<i>he had spoken.</i>	ils eurent parlé, <i>they had spoken.</i>

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je parlerai,	<i>I shall speak.</i>	Nous parlerons, <i>we shall speak.</i>
tu parleras,	<i>thou shalt speak.</i>	vous parlerez, <i>you shall speak.</i>
il parlera,	<i>he shall speak.</i>	ils parleront, <i>they shall speak.</i>

REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future*.

J'aurai parlé, <i>I shall have</i>	}	spoken.	Nous aurons parlé, <i>we shall</i>
tu auras parlé, <i>thou shalt have</i>			vous aurez parlé, <i>you shall</i>
il aura parlé, <i>he shall have</i>			ils auront parlé, <i>they shall</i>

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

Je parlerais, <i>I would speak.</i>	Nous parlerions, <i>we would</i>
tu parlerais, <i>thou wouldst speak.</i>	vous parleriez, <i>you would</i>
il parlerait, <i>he would speak.</i>	ils parleraient, <i>they would</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional*.

J'aurais parlé, <i>I would</i>	}	have spoken.	Nous aurions parlé, <i>we would</i>
tu aurais parlé, <i>thou wouldst</i>			Vous auriez parlé, <i>you would</i>
il aurait parlé, <i>he would</i>			ils auraient parlé, <i>they would</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Parlons, <i>let us speak</i>	
parle, <i>thou speak</i>	parlez, <i>you speak</i>
qu'il parle, <i>let him speak</i>	qu'ils parlent, <i>let them</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que <i>That</i>		Nous parlions, <i>we may</i>	
Je parle, <i>I may speak.</i>		vous parliez, <i>you may</i>	
tu parles, <i>thou mayst speak.</i>		ils parlent, <i>they may</i>	
il parle, <i>he may speak.</i>			

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present*.

Que <i>That</i>		Nous ayons parlé, <i>we may</i>	
J'aie parlé, <i>I may have</i>	}	spoken.	vous ayez parlé, <i>you may</i>
tu aies parlé, <i>thou mayst have</i>			ils aient parlé, <i>they may</i>
il ait parlé, <i>he may have</i>			

IMPERFECT.

Que <i>That</i>		Nous parlussions, <i>we might</i>	
Je parlasse, <i>I might speak.</i>		vous parlassiez, <i>you might</i>	
tu parlasses, <i>thou mightst speak.</i>		ils parlassent, <i>they might</i>	
il parlât, <i>he might speak.</i>			

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect*.

Que <i>That</i>		Nous eussions parlé, <i>we might</i>	
J'eusse parlé, <i>I might</i>	}	have spoken.	vous eussiez parlé, <i>you might</i>
tu eusses parlé, <i>thou mightst</i>			ils eussent parlé, <i>they might</i>
il eût parlé, <i>he might</i>			

OBSERVATIONS.

1. *Was*, with the participle present in *ing*, is the mark of the imperfect in all verbs, *shall* or *will*, of the future, *would*, *could*, or *should*, of the conditional, *may* of the present subjunctive, *might* of the imperfect, and *let* of the imperative mood.

2. Most French verbs have the infinitive in *er*, and are conjugated the same as *parler*, except *aller*, *envoyer*, and *renvoyer*, which are in the list of irregulars.

3. In verbs ending in *eler* and *eter*, the *l* or the *t*, are doubled before a mute *e*, as *épeler*, *j'épelle*; *jeter*, *je jette*; except, *acheter*, *bourreler*, *déceler*, *geler*, *harceler*, *peler*, *et becqueter*, which change the mute *e* into *è* grave; as, *tu achètes*, *il bourrèle*, *ils décèlent*, &c.

4. When the last syllable of the infinitive of a verb of the first conjugation is preceded by an *é* acute, the *é* acute is changed into an *è* grave before a mute syllable: as, *céler*, *je cèle*; *régner*, *ils règnent*, &c.

5. The verbs in *ecer*, *ener*, and *ever*, although having no *é* acute on the penultimate, follow the same rule; as, *dépecer*, *je dépèce*; *mener*, *je mène*; *lever*, *je lève*, &c.

6. Verbs which end in *ayer*, *oyer*, or *uyer*, in the infinitive mood, retain *i* after *y*, in the first and second persons of the plural of the imperfect of the indicative, and present of the subjunctive: as, *essayer*, *employer*, *essuyer*, inf. *nous essayions*, *vous essayiez*; *nous employions*, *vous employiez*; *nous essuyions*, *vous essuyiez*, imperfect indicative, and present subjunctive. When *y* would be followed by an *e* mute, it is changed into *i*: as, *balayer*, to sweep, *balaie*.

7. Verbs which in the infinitive end in *ier*, are written with double *ii* in the first and second persons plural of the imperfect of the indicative, and of the present of the subjunctive: as, *prier*, *plier*, inf. *nous priions*, *nous plions*; *vous priiez*, *vous pliez*, imperfect indicative, and pres. subj.

8. Orthography requires an *e* between *g* and *a* or *o*, through the whole conjugation of verbs which end in *ger* in the infinitive mood. Thus we say, *juger*, *jugeant*, *je jugeais*, *nous jugeons*; *partager*, *je partageais*, &c. not *jugant*, *jugais*, as we say, *parlant*, *parlais*.

N.B. As the compound tenses of all verbs, regular and irregular, are nothing else than the conjugation of the

verbs *avoir* or *être*, and the participle past of the verb conjugated; the scholar, knowing well the auxiliaries, knows how to conjugate the compound tenses of all verbs; therefore we may dispense with inserting them at full length in the following conjugations.

Second Conjugation. Agir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present tense,</i>	<i>agir,</i>	<i>to act.</i>
<i>Participle present,</i>	<i>agissant,</i>	<i>acting.</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	<i>agi,</i>	<i>acted.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	<i>avoir agi,</i>	<i>to have acted.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle,</i>	<i>ayant agi,</i>	<i>having acted.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.
J'agis,	<i>I act,</i>	Nous agissons,	<i>we act.</i>
tu agis,	<i>thou actest.</i>	vous agissez,	<i>you act.</i>
il agit,	<i>he acts.</i>	ils agissent,	<i>they act.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai agi,	<i>I have acted.</i>
&c.	

IMPERFECT TENSE.

J'agissais,	<i>I was acting.</i>	Nous agissions,	<i>we were acting.</i>
tu agissais,	<i>thou wast acting.</i>	vous agissiez,	<i>you were acting.</i>
il agissait,	<i>he was acting.</i>	ils agissaient,	<i>they were acting.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J' avais agi,	<i>I had acted.</i>
&c.	

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

J' agis,	<i>I acted.</i>	Nous agîmes,	<i>we acted.</i>
tu agis,	<i>thou actedst.</i>	vous agîtes,	<i>you acted.</i>
il agit,	<i>he acted.</i>	ils agirent.	<i>they acted.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite.*

J' eus agi,	<i>I had acted.</i>
&c.	

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

J' agirai,	<i>I shall or will act.</i>	Nous agirons,	<i>we shall act.</i>
tu agiras,	<i>thou shalt, &c. act.</i>	vous agirez,	<i>you shall act.</i>
il agira,	<i>he shall, &c. act.</i>	ils agiront.	<i>they shall act.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future.*

J' aurai agi,	<i>I shall have acted.</i>
&c.	

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

J' agirais,	<i>I would, &c. act.</i>	Nous agirions,	<i>we would act.</i>
tu agirais,	<i>thou wouldst act.</i>	vous agiriez,	<i>you would act.</i>
il agirait,	<i>he would act.</i>	ils agiraient,	<i>they would act.</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional.*

J' aurais agi,	<i>I would have acted.</i>
&c.	

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

agis,	<i>act thou.</i>	Agissons,	<i>let us act.</i>
qu'il agisse,	<i>let him act.</i>	agissez,	<i>act ye.</i>
		qu'ils agissent,	<i>let them act.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que	<i>That</i>		
J' agisse,	<i>I may act.</i>	Nous agissions,	<i>we may act.</i>
tu agisses,	<i>thou mayst act.</i>	vous agissiez,	<i>you may act.</i>
il agisse,	<i>he may act.</i>	ils agissent,	<i>they may act.</i>

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

Que j'aie agi,	<i>That I may have acted.</i>
&c.	

IMPERFECT.

J' agisse,	<i>I might act.</i>	Nous agissions,	<i>we might act.</i>
tu agisses,	<i>thou mightst act.</i>	vous agissiez,	<i>you might act.</i>
il agit,	<i>he might act.</i>	ils agissent,	<i>they might act.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

Que j'eusse agi,	<i>That I might have acted.</i>
&c.	

All verbs which end in the infinitive mood in *ir*, except those mentioned in the list of irregular conjugations, are regular in French, and conjugated after *agir*. *Hair*, to hate, is conjugated in the same manner; but in the singular of the indicative present it makes *je hais, tu hais, il hait*, pronounced, *je hès, tu hès, il hêt*, and the second person singular of the imperative, *hais*, also pronounced, *hès*.

Third Conjugation. Recevoir.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

<i>Present tense,</i>	recevoir,	<i>to receive.</i>
<i>Participle present,</i>	recevant,	<i>receiving.</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	reçu,	<i>received.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	avoir reçu,	<i>to have received.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle,</i>	ayant reçu,	<i>having received.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD,

PRESENT TENSE.

Je reçois,	<i>I receive.</i>	Nous recevons,	<i>we receive.</i>
tu reçois,	<i>thou receivest.</i>	vous recevez,	<i>you receive.</i>
il reçoit,	<i>he receives.</i>	ils reçoivent,	<i>they receive.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai reçu,	<i>I have received.</i>
&c.	

IMPERFECT.

Je recevais,	<i>I was receiving.</i>	Nous recevions,	<i>we were receiving.</i>
tu recevais,	<i>thou wast receiving.</i>	vous receviez,	<i>you were receiving.</i>
il recevait,	<i>he was receiving.</i>	ils recevaient,	<i>they were receiving.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J'avais reçu,	<i>I had received.</i>
&c.	

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

Je reçus,	<i>I received.</i>	Nous reçûmes,	<i>we received.</i>
tu reçus,	<i>thou receivedst.</i>	vous reçûtes,	<i>you received.</i>
il reçut,	<i>he received.</i>	ils reçurent,	<i>they received.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite.*

J'eus reçu,	<i>I had received.</i>
&c.	

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je recevrai,	<i>I shall receive.</i>	Nous recevrons, <i>we shall receive.</i>
tu recevras,	<i>thou shalt receive.</i>	vous recevrez, <i>you shall receive.</i>
il recevra,	<i>he shall receive.</i>	ils recevront, <i>they shall receive.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future.*

J'aurai reçu,	<i>I shall have received.</i>
&c.	

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

Je recevrais,	<i>I would receive.</i>	Nous recevriions, <i>we would receive.</i>
tu recevrais,	<i>thou wouldst receive.</i>	vous recevriez, <i>you would receive.</i>
il recevrait,	<i>he would receive.</i>	ils recevraient, <i>he would receive.</i>

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional.*

J'aurais reçu,	<i>I would have received.</i>
&c.	

IMPERATIVE.

Reçois,	<i>receive (thou).</i>	Recevons,	<i>let us receive.</i>
qu'il reçoive,	<i>let him receive.</i>	recevez,	<i>receive (you).</i>
		qu'ils reçoivent,	<i>let them receive.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que	<i>That</i>		
Je reçoive,	<i>I may receive.</i>	Nous recevions,	<i>we may receive.</i>
tu reçoives,	<i>thou mayst receive.</i>	vous receviez,	<i>you may receive.</i>
il reçoive,	<i>he may receive.</i>	ils reçoivent,	<i>they may receive.</i>

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

Que	<i>That</i>
J'aie reçu,	<i>I may have received.</i>
&c.	

IMPERFECT.

Que	<i>That</i>		
Je reçusse,	<i>I might receive.</i>	Nous reçussions,	<i>we might receive.</i>
tu reçusses,	<i>thou mightst receive.</i>	vous reçussiez,	<i>you might receive.</i>
il reçût,	<i>he might receive.</i>	ils reçussent,	<i>they might receive.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

Que	<i>That</i>
J'eusse reçu,	<i>I might have received.</i>
&c.	

Fourth Conjugation. Vendre.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Vendre, to sell.

<i>Participle present,</i>	vendant,	<i>selling.</i>
<i>Participle past,</i>	vendu,	<i>sold.</i>
<i>Compound of the present,</i>	avoir vendu,	<i>to have sold.</i>
<i>Compound of the participle.</i>	ayant vendu,	<i>having sold.</i>

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Je vends,	<i>I sell.</i>	Nous vendons,	<i>we sell.</i>
tu vends,	<i>thou sellest.</i>	vous vendez,	<i>you sell.</i>
il vend,	<i>he sells.</i>	ils vendent,	<i>they sell.</i>

PRETERITE INDEFINITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

J'ai vendu,	<i>I have sold.</i>
&c.	

IMPERFECT.

Je vendais,	<i>I was selling.</i>	Nous vendions,	<i>we were selling.</i>
tu vendais,	<i>thou wast selling.</i>	vous vendiez,	<i>you were selling.</i>
il vendait,	<i>he was selling.</i>	ils vendaient,	<i>they were selling.</i>

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

J'avais vendu,	<i>I had sold.</i>
&c.	

PRETERITE DEFINITE.

Je vendis,	<i>I sold.</i>	Nous vendîmes,	<i>we sold.</i>
tu vendis,	<i>thou soldest.</i>	vous vendîtes,	<i>you sold.</i>
il vendit,	<i>he sold.</i>	ils vendirent,	<i>they sold.</i>

PRETERITE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Preterite definite.*

J'eus vendu,	<i>I had sold.</i>
&c.	

FUTURE ABSOLUTE.

Je vendrai,	<i>I shall sell.</i>	Nous vendrons,	<i>we shall sell.</i>
tu vendras,	<i>thou shalt sell.</i>	vous vendrez,	<i>you shall sell.</i>
il vendra,	<i>he shall sell.</i>	ils vendront,	<i>they shall sell.</i>

FUTURE ANTERIOR, or *Compound of the Future absolute.*

J'aurai vendu,
&c.

I shall have sold.

CONDITIONAL PRESENT.

Je vendrais,
tu vendrais,
il vendrait,

I would sell.
thou wouldst sell.
he would sell.

Nous vendrions, *we would sell.*
vous vendriez, *you would sell.*
ils vendraient, *they would sell.*

CONDITIONAL PAST, or *Compound of the Conditional Present.*

J'aurais vendu,
&c.

I would have sold.

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Vends, *sell (thou).*
Qu'il vende, *let him sell.*

Vendons, *let us sell.*
Vendez, *sell (you).*
qu'ils vendent, *let them sell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que
Je vende,
tu vendes,
il vende,

That
I may sell.
thou mayst sell.
he may sell.

Nous vendions, *we may sell.*
vous vendiez, *you may sell.*
ils vendent, *they may sell.*

PRETERITE, or *Compound of the Present.*

Que j'aie vendu,
&c.

that I may have sold.

IMPERFECT.

Que
Je vendisse,
tu vendisses,
il vendit,

That
I might sell.
thou mightst sell.
he might sell.

Nous vendissions, *we might sell.*
vous vendissiez, *you might sell.*
ils vendissent, *they might sell.*

PLUPERFECT, or *Compound of the Imperfect.*

Que j'eusse vendu,
&c.

That I might have sold.

SECTION V.

Conjugation of all the Irregular Verbs.

I. ABSOUDRE, to absolve.*

Inf. Absoudre, to absolve. *Part. pr.* absolvant, absolving.
Part. past. absous, absolved.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	J'absou	-s,	s, t;	absolv	-ons,	ez, ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	J'absolv	-ais,	ais, aît;	absolv	-ions,	iez, aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	None.					
<i>Fut.</i>	J'absoud	-rai,	ras, ra;	absoud	-rons,	rez, ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	J'absoud	-rais,	rais, rait;	absoud	-rions,	riez, raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	J'absolv	-e,	es, e;	absolv	-ions,	iez, ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	None.					
<i>Imper.</i>	abs-	ous,	olve;	absolv	-ons,	ez, ent.

On absoudre, as a pattern, conjugate dissoudre, but not résoudre.

<i>Conjugate</i>	Abattre,	to pull down,	<i>on</i> battre	5.
	S'abstenir,	to refrain,	<i>on</i> tenir	43.
	Abstraire,	to abstract,	<i>on</i> traire	44.
	Accourir,	to run to, w. être	<i>on</i> courir	11.
	Accroître,	to increase, w. être,	<i>on</i> connaître	11.
	Accueillir,	to welcome,	<i>on</i> cueillir	15.

II. ACQUÉRIR, to acquire.

Inf. Acquérir, to acquire. *P. pr.* acquérant, acquiring.
Part. past. acquis, acquired.

<i>Pres.</i>	J'acquie	-rs,	rs, rt;	acqu	-érons,	érez, ièrent.
<i>Impf.</i>	J'acquér	-ais,	ais, aît;	acquér	-ions,	iez, aient.

* The pupil must learn to repeat the English words which answer to every tense and person of the French verbs: this will be an easy task, if he remembers that *to* is the mark of the present of the infinitive; *was*, with the *P. pr.*, the mark of the imperfect of the indicative; *shall* or *will* of the future; *would*, *could*, or *should*, of the conditional; *may* of the present of the subjunctive; *might* of the imperfect; and *let* of the imperative mood. The figures 1, 2, 3, denote the first, second, and third persons of the singular and plural.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	J'acqu -is,	is,	it ;	acqu -imes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	J'acquér -rai,	ras,	ra ;	acquér -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	J'acquér -rais,	rais,	rait ;	acquér -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	J'acquîèr -e,	es,	e ;	acqu -érions,	ériez,	ièreent.
<i>Impf.</i>	J'acqu -isse,	isses,	ît ;	acqu -issons,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	acqui	-ers,	ère ;	acqu -érons,	érez,	ièreent.
Adjoindre, to join to,				on craindre	13.	
Admettre, to admit,				on mettre	23.	

III. ALLER, to go, with être.

Inf. Aller, to go. *Part. pr.* allant, going. *Part. past,* allé, gone.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je	-vais,	vas,	va ;	allons,	allez,	vont.
<i>Impf.</i>	J'all	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	all -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	J'all	-ai,	as,	a ;	all -âmes,	âtes,	èrent.
<i>Fut.</i>	J'i	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	i -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	J'i	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	i -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	J'aill	-e,	es,	e ;	all -ions,	iez,	aillent.
<i>Impf.</i>	J'all	-asse,	asses,	ât ;	all -assions,	assiez,	assent.
<i>Imper.</i>			va,	aille ;	allons,	allez,	aillent.

Conjugate in the same manner,

S'en aller,	to go away.		
Apparaître,	to appear,	on connaître	10.
Appartenir,	to belong,	on tenir,	43.
Apprendre,	to learn,	on prendre	33.
Assaillir*,	to assault,	on cueillir	15.

IV. S'ASSEOIR, to sit down.

Inf. S'asseoir, to sit down. *Part. pr.* s'asseyant, sitting.
Part. past, assis, sat.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je m'ass	-ieds,	ieds,	ied ;	asse -yons,	yez,	yent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je m'assey	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	assey -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je m'ass	-is,	is,	it ;	ass -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je m'assié	-rait,	ras,	ra ;	assié -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je m'assié	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	assié -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je m'assey	-e,	es,	e ;	asse -yions,	yez,	yent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je m'ass	-isse,	isses,	it ;	ass -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	ass		-ieds,	eye ;	asse -yons,	yez,	yent.
Astreindre,				to subject,	on craindre	13.	
Atteindre,				to reach,	on craindre	13.	
Attraire,				to attract,	on traire	44.	
Avoir,				to have.	See Ch. V. Section 3.		

* *Assaillir* makes in the future and conditional *j'assaillirai, j'assaillirais*.
† We also say, *je m'asseyerai, je m'asseyerai*.

V. BATTRE, to beat.

Inf. Battre, to beat. *Part. pr.* Battant, beating. *Part. past,* battu, beaten.

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	Je ba -ts,	ts,	t ;	batt -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je batt -ais,	ais,	ait ;	batt -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je batt -is,	is,	it ;	batt -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je batt -rai,	ras,	ra ;	batt -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je batt -rais,	rais,	rait ;	batt -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je batt -e,	es,	e ;	batt -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je batt -isse,	isses,	ît ;	batt -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	ba	-ts,	tte ;	batt -ons,	ez,	ent.

VI. BOIRE, to drink.

Inf. Boire, to drink. *Part. pr.* buvant, drinking.
Part. past, bu, drank.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je boi -s,	s,	t ;	buv -ons,	ez,	boivent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je buv -ais,	ais,	ait ;	buv -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je b -us,	us,	ut ;	b -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je boi -rai,	ras,	ra ;	boi -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je boi -rais,	rais,	rait ;	boi -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je boiv -e,	es,	e ;	buv -ions,	iez,	boivent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je b -usse,	usses,	ût ;	b -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>		bois,	boive ;	buvs,	buvez,	boivent.

VII. BOULLIR, to boil.

Inf. Bouillir, to boil. *Part. pr.* bouillant, boiling.
Part. past, bouilli, boiled.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je bou -s,	s,	t ;	bouill -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je bouill -ais,	ais,	ait ;	bouill -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je bouill -is,	is,	it ;	bouill -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je bouilli -rai,	ras,	ra ;	bouilli -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je bouilli -rais,	rais,	rait ;	bouilli -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je bouill -e,	es,	e ;	bouill -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je bouill -isse,	isses,	ît ;	bouill -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>		bous,	bouille ;	bouill -ons,	ez,	ent.

Ceindre,	to gird,	on craindre	13.
Circoncire*,	to circumcise,	on circonfire	9.
Circonscrire,	to circumscribe,	on écrire	17.
Combattre,	to fight,	on battre	5.
Commettre,	to commit,	on mettre	23.
Se complaire,	to please,	on plaire	30.
Comprendre,	to understand.	on pendre	33.
Compromettre,	to expose.	on mettre	23.

* But the participle is *circoncis*.

VIII. CONCLURE, *to conclude.**Inf.* Conclure, *to conclude.* *Part. pr.* concluant, *concluding.**Part. past,* conclu, *concluded.*

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.			
	1	2	3	1	2	3	
<i>Pres.</i>	Je concl -us,	us,	ut ;	conclu-ons,	ez,	ent.	
<i>Impf.</i>	Je conclu-ais,	ai,	ait ;	conclu-ions,	iez,	aient.	
<i>Pres.</i>	Je concl -us,	us,	ut ;	concl -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.	
<i>Fut.</i>	Je conclu-rai,	ras,	ra ;	conclu-rons,	rez,	ront.	
<i>Cond.</i>	Je conclu-raïs,	rais,	rait ;	conclu-rions,	riez,	raient.	
<i>S. P.</i>	Je conclu-e,	es,	e ;	conclu-ions,	iez,	ent.	
<i>Impf.</i>	Je concl -usse,	usses,	ût ;	concl -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.	
<i>Imper.</i>	concl	-us,	ue ;	conclu-ons,	ez,	ent.	
Concourir,			<i>to compete,</i>	on courir			12.
Conduire,			<i>to conduct,</i>	on instruire			21.

IX. CONFIRE, *to pickle.**Inf.* Confire, *to pickle.* *Part. pr.* confisant, *pickling.**Part. past,* confit, *pickled.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je conf -is,	is,	it ;	confis -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je confis -ais,	ais,	ait ;	confis -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pres.</i>	Je conf -is,	is,	it ;	conf -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je confi -rai,	ras,	ra ;	confi -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je confis -e,	es,	e ;	confis -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Imper.</i>	conf	-is,	ise ;	confis -ons,	ez,	ent.

Conjoindre,	<i>to conjoin,</i>	on craindre	13.
Conquérir,	<i>to conquer,</i>	on acquérir	2.
Consentir,	<i>to consent,</i>	on sentir	41.
Construire,	<i>to construct,</i>	on instruire	21.
Contraindre,	<i>to constrain,</i>	on craindre	13.
Contenir,	<i>to contain,</i>	on tenir	43.
Contredire*,	<i>to contradict,</i>	on dire	16.
Contrefaire,	<i>to mimic,</i>	on faire	19.
Contrevenir,	<i>to contravene,</i>	on tenir	43.
Convaincre,	<i>to convince,</i>	on vaincre	45.
Convenir,	<i>to agree,</i>	on tenir	43.
Corrompre,	<i>to corrupt,</i>	on rompre	39.

X. CONNAÎTRE, *to know.**Inf.* Connaître, *to know.* *Part. pr.* connaissant, *knowing.**Part. past,* connu, *known.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je connai -s,	s,	t ;	connaiss-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je connaiss-ais,	ais,	ait ;	connaiss-ions,	iez,	aient.

* But it makes in the second person plural of the indicative and of the imperative *contredisez.*

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3		1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	Je conn	-us,	us,	ut ;	conn	-ûmes, ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je connaî	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	connaî	-rons, rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je connaî	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	connaî	-rions, riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je connais	-e,	es,	e ;	connaiss	-ions, iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je conn	-usse,	usses,	ut ;	conn	-ussions, issiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	connai		-s,	sse ;	connaiss	-ons, ez,	ent.

XI. COUDRE, to sew.

Inf. Coudre, to sew. *Part. pr.* cousant, sewing.

Part. past, cousu, sewed.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je cou	-ds,	ds,	d ;	cous	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cous	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	cous	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pres.</i>	Je cous	-is,	is,	it ;	cous	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je coud	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	coud	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je coud	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	coud	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je cous	-e,	es,	e ;	cous	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cous	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	cous	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	cou		-ds,	se ;	cous	-ons,	ez,	ent.

XII. COURIR, to run.

Inf. Courir, to run. *Part. pr.* courant, running.

Part. past, couru, run.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je cou	-rs,	rs,	rt ;	cour	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cour	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	cour	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pres.</i>	Je cour	-us,	us,	ut ;	cour	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je cour	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	cour	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je cour	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	cour	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je cour	-e,	es,	e ;	cour	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cour	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	cour	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	cour		-s,	e ;	cour	-ons,	ez,	ent.

XIII. CRAINDRE, to fear.

Inf. Craindre, to fear. *Part. pr.* craignant, fearing

Part. past, craint, feared.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je crai	-ns,	ns,	nt ;	crai	-gnons,	gnez,	gnent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je crai	-gnais,	gnais,	gnait ;	crai	-gnions,	gniez,	gnaient.
<i>Pres.</i>	Je crai	-gnis,	gnis,	gnit ;	crai	-gnîmes,	gnîtes,	gnirent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je craind	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	craind	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je craind	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	craind	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je crai	-gne,	gnes,	gne ;	crai	-gnions,	gniez,	gnent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je crai	-gnisse,	gnisses,	gnît ;	crai	-gnissions,	gnissiez,	gnissent.
<i>Imper.</i>	crai		-ns,	gne ;	crai	-gnons,	gnez,	gnent.

XIV. CROIRE, *to believe*.*Inf.* Croire, *to believe*. *Part. pr.* croyant, *believing*.*Part. past*, cru, *believed*.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3		1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	Je croi -s,	s,	t ;	cro	-yons,	yez,	ient ;
<i>Impf.</i>	Je croy -ais,	ais,	ait ;	croy	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je cr -us,	us,	ût ;	cr	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je croi -rai,	ras,	ra ;	croi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je croi -rais,	rais,	rait :	croi	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je croi -e,	es,	e ;	cro	-yions,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cr -usse,	usses,	ût ;	cr	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	croi	-s,	e ;	cro	-yons,	yez,	ient.

Croître,	<i>to grow,</i>	<i>on connaître</i>	10.
Couvrir,	<i>to cover,</i>	<i>on offrir</i>	28.

XV. CUEILLIR, *to gather*.*Inf.* Cueillir, *to gather*. *Part. pr.* cueillant, *gathering*.*Part. past*, cueilli, *gathered*.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je cueill	-e,	es, e ;	cueill	-ons,	ez, ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cueill	-ais,	ais, ait ;	cueill	-ions,	iez, aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je cueill	-is,	is, it ;	cueill	-îmes,	îtes, irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je cueille	-rai,	ras, ra ;	cueille	-rons,	rez, ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je cueille	-rais,	rais, rait :	cueille	-rions,	riez, raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je cueill	-e,	es, e ;	cueill	-ions,	iez, ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je cueill	-isse,	isses, it ;	cueill	-issions,	issiez, issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	cueill		-e, e ;	cueill	-ons,	ez, ent.

Croître,	<i>to grow,</i>	<i>on connaître</i>	10.
Cuire,	<i>to cook,</i>	<i>on instruire</i>	21.
Découdre,	<i>to unsew,</i>	<i>on coudre</i>	11.
Découvrir,	<i>to discover,</i>	<i>on offrir</i>	28.
Écrire,	<i>to describe,</i>	<i>on écrire</i>	17.
Décroître,	<i>to decrease,</i>	<i>on connaître</i>	10.
Dédire *,	<i>to unsay,</i>	<i>on dire</i>	16.
Déduire,	<i>to deduct,</i>	<i>on instruire</i>	21.
Défaire,	<i>to undo,</i>	<i>on faire</i>	19.
Déjoindre,	<i>to disjoin,</i>	<i>on craindre</i>	13.
Démentir,	<i>to belie,</i>	<i>on sentir</i>	41.
Démettre,	<i>to put out.</i>	<i>on mettre</i>	23.
Se Démettre,	<i>to resign,</i>	<i>on mettre</i>	23.
Dépeindre,	<i>to depict,</i>	<i>on craindre</i>	13.
Déplaire,	<i>to displease,</i>	<i>on plaire</i>	30.
Se Déprendre,	<i>to loose,</i>	<i>on prendre</i>	33.
Désapprendre,	<i>to unlearn,</i>	<i>on prendre</i>	33.

* See the observation upon *contredire*, p. 102.

Desservir,	to <i>disserve</i> , &c.	<i>on</i> sentir	41.
Déteindre,	to <i>discharge colour</i> ,	<i>on</i> craindre	13.
Détruire,	to <i>destroy</i> ,	<i>on</i> instruire	21.
Devenir,	to <i>become</i> ,	<i>on</i> tenir	43.
Dévêtir,	to <i>divest</i> ,	<i>on</i> revêtir	37.

XVI. DIRE, to say.

Inf. Dire, to say. *Part. pr.* disant, saying.
Part. past, dit, said.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3		1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> Je d	-is,	is,	it ;	di	-sons,	tes,	sent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je dis	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	dis	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je d	-is,	is,	it ;	d	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je di	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	di	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je di	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	di	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je dis	-e,	es,	é ;	dis	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je d	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	d	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> d		is,	ise ;	d	-isons,	ites,	isent.

Disconvenir,	to <i>disagree</i> ,	<i>on</i> tenir	43.
Discourir,	to <i>discourse</i> ,	<i>on</i> courir	12.
Disjoindre,	to <i>disjoin</i> ,	<i>on</i> craindre	13.
Disparaître,	to <i>disappear</i> (with être)	<i>on</i> connaître	10.
Dissoudre,	to <i>dissolve</i> ,	<i>on</i> absoudre	1.
Distraindre,	to <i>distract</i> ,	<i>on</i> traire	44.
Dormir,	to <i>sleep</i> ,	<i>on</i> sentir	41.
S'ébattre,	to <i>rejoice</i> ,	<i>on</i> battre	5.
Ebouillir*,	to <i>boil down</i> ,	<i>on</i> bouillir	7.
Econduire,	to <i>get rid of</i> .	<i>on</i> instruire	21.

XVII. Ecrire, to write.

Inf. Ecrire, to write. *Part. pr.* écrivant, writing.
Part. past, écrit, written.

<i>Pres.</i> J'écri	-s,	s,	t ;	écriv	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'écriv	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	écriv	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> J'écriv	-is,	is,	it ;	écriv	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> J'écri	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	écri	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> J'écri	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	écri	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> J'écriv	-e,	es,	e ;	écriv	-ions,	lez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'écriv	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	écriv	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> écri		-s,	ve ;	écriv	-ons,	ez,	ent.

Elire,	to <i>elect</i> ,	<i>on</i> lire	22.
Emoudre,	to <i>grind</i> (knives),	<i>on</i> moudre	24.
Emouvoir,	to <i>stir up</i> ,	<i>on</i> mouvoir	26.

* Is only used in the pres. inf. and the compound tenses.

Encourir,	to incur,	on courir	12.
Endormir,	to make sleep,	on sentir	41.
Enfreindre,	to infringe,	on craindre	13.
S'enfuir,	to run away,	on fuir	20.
Enjoindre,	to enjoin,	on craindre	13.
S'enquérir,	to enquire,	on acquérir	2.
S'ensuivre*,	to follow,	on suivre	42.
S'entremettre,	to interpose,	on mettre	23.
Entreprendre,	to undertake,	on prendre	33.
Entretenir,	to keep,	on tenir	43.
Entrevoir,	to have a glimpse of,	on voir	49.
Entr'ouvrir,	to open a little,	on offrir	28.

XVIII. ENVOYER, to send.

Inf. Envoyer, to send. Part. pr. envoyant, sending.

Part. past, envoyé, sent.

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> J'envoie -e,	es,	e;		envoyons,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i> J'envoyais,	ais,	ait;		envoyions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> J'envoyai,	as,	a;		envoyâmes,	âtes,	èrent.
<i>Fut.</i> J'enverrai,	ras,	ra;		enverrons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> J'enverrais,	rais,	rait;		enverrions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> J'envoie -e,	es,	e;		envoyions,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i> J'envoyasse,	asses,	ât;		envoyassions,	assiez,	assent.
<i>Imper.</i> envoie	-e,	e;		envoyons,	yez,	ient.

Equivaloir,	to be equal,	on valoir	46.
Eteindre,	to extinguish,	on craindre	13.
Etre,	to be,	See Ch. V. Sec. 3.	
Exclure,	to exclude,	on conclure	8.
Extraire,	to extract,	on traire	44.

XIX. FAIRE, to do.

Inf. Faire, to do. Part. pr. faisant, doing. Part. past, fait, done.

<i>Pres.</i> Je fais -a,	s,	t;	fais -sons,	tez,	font.
<i>Impf.</i> Je faisais,	ais,	ait;	faisions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je fis -is,	is,	it;	fîmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je ferai,	ras,	ra;	ferons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je ferais,	rais,	rait;	ferions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je fais -asse,	asses,	asse;	fissions,	assiez,	assent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je faisais -isse,	isses,	ît;	fissions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> f	-ais,	asse;	faisons,	aitez,	assent.

Feindre,	to feign,	on craindre	13. ↗
----------	-----------	-------------	-------

Fleurir, to blossom, is regular; but when it means to flourish, the participle present makes florissant, and the imperf. ind. makes often florissait when speaking of things, but always florissait, florissaient,

* Is only used in the third pers. sing. and plur.

when speaking of a person or a collection of persons, such as a nation, a town, a republic.

XX. FUIR, to shun.

Inf. Fuir, to shun. Part. pr. fuyant, shunning.
Part. past, fui, shunned.

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> Je fu	-is,	is,	it ;	fu -yons,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i> Je fuy	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	fuy-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pres.</i> Je fu	-is,	is,	it ;	fu -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je fui	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	fui -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je fui	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	fui -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je fui	-e,	es,	e ;	fu -yions,	yiez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i> Je fu	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	fu -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> fu		-is,	ie ;	fu -yons,	yez,	ient.
Inscrire,	to inscribe,			on écrire		17.

XXI. INSTRUIRE, to instruct.

Inf. Instruire, to instruct. Part. pr. instruisant, instructing.
Part. past, instruit, instructed.

<i>Pres.</i> J'instrui	-s,	s,	t ;	instrui -sons,	sez,	sent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'instruis	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	instrui -sions,	siez,	saient.
<i>Pres.</i> J'instruis	-is,	is,	it ;	instruis-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> J'instrui	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	instrui -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> J'instrui	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	instrui -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> J'instruis	-e,	es,	e ;	instruis-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'instruis	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	instruis-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> instrui		-s,	se ;	instrui -sons,	sez,	sent.
Interdire *,	to forbid,			on dire		16.
Interrompre,	to interrupt,			on rompre		89.
Intervenir,	to intervene,			on tenir		43.
Introduire,	to introduce,			on instruire		21.
Joindre.	to join,			on graindre		13.

XXII. LIRE, to read.

Inf. Lire, to read. Part. pr. lisant, reading.
Part. past, lu, read.

<i>Pres.</i> Je l	-is,	is,	it ;	lis -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je lis	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	lis -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pres.</i> Je l	-us,	us,	ut ;	l -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je li	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	li -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je li	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	li -rions,	riez,	raient.

* See the observation upon *contredire*, p. 102.

S. P.	Je lis -e,	es,	e ;	lis -ions,	iez,	ent.
Impf.	Je l -usse,	usses,	ût ;	l -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
Imper.	l	-is,	ise ;	lis -ons,	ez,	ent.

Luire*,	to shine,	on instruire	21.
Maintenir,	to maintain,	on tenir	43.
Maudire †,	to curse,	on dire	16.
Méconnaître,	to mistake,	on connaître	10.
Medire ‡,	to slander,	on dire	16.
Malfaire,	to do harm,	only used in the inf. pres.	
Méfaire,	to do harm,	familiar and little used.	
Mentir,	to tell lies,	on sentir	41.
Se méprendre,	to mistake,	on prendre	33.
mésoffrir,	to bid too low,	on offrir	28.

XXIII. METTRE, to put.

Inf. Mettre, to put. *Part. pr.* mettant, putting.
Part. past. mis, put.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> Je me	-ts,	ts,	t ;	mett -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je mett	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	mett -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je m	-is,	is,	it ;	m -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je mett -rai,	ras,	ra ;	mett -rons,	rez,	ront.	
<i>Cond.</i> Je mett -rais,	rais,	rait ;	mett -rions,	riez,	raient.	
S. P. Je mett -e,	es,	e ;	mett -ions,	iez,	ent.	
<i>Impf.</i> Je m -isse,	isses,	ît ;	m -issions,	issiez,	issent.	
<i>Imper.</i> me	-ts,	-tte ;	mett -ons,	ez,	ent.	

XXIV. MOUDRE, to grind.

Inf. Moudre, to grind. *Part. pr.* moulant, grinding.
Part. past. moulu, ground.

<i>Pres.</i> Je mou -ds,	ds,	d ;	moul -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je moul -ais,	ais,	ait ;	moul -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je moul -us,	us,	ut ;	moul -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je moud-rai,	ras,	ra ;	moud-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je moud-raï,	rais,	rait ;	moud-rions,	riez,	raient.
S. P. Je moul -e,	es,	e ;	moul -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je moul -usse,	usses,	ût ;	moul -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i> mou	-ds,	le ;	moul -ons,	ez,	ent.

* But the Part. is *lui*, unlike *instruit* ; and it has no preterite defin., no imperat., nor imperfect of the subjunctive.

† *Maudire* makes in the Part. pr. *maudissant* ; in the plural of the Indicative present, *nous maudissons*, *vous maudissez*, *ils maudissent* ; in the Imperfect, *je maudissais* ; in the Pres. and Imp. Subj. *je maudisse* ; and in the Imperative *qu'il maudisse*, *maudissons*, *maudissez*, *qu'ils maudissent*, like a regular verb in *IR*.

‡ See the observation upon *contredire*, p. 102.

XXV. MOURIR, *to die.*

Inf. Mourir, *to die.* *Part. pr.* mourant, *dying.*

Part. past, mort, *dead.*

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i>	Je me <u>u</u> -rs,	rs,	rt ;	mour-ons,	ez,	meurent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je mour-ais,	-ais,	ait ;	mour-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je mour-us,	us,	ut ;	mour-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je mour-rai,	ras,	ra ;	mour-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je mour-rais,	rais,	rait ;	mour-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je meur-e,	es,	e ;	mour-ions,	iez,	meurent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je mour-usse,	usses,	ût ;	mour-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	meur	-s,	e ;	mour-ons,	ez,	meurent.

XXVI. MOUVOIR, *to move.*

Inf. Mouvoir, *to move.* *Part. pr.* mouvant, *moving.*

Part. past, mu, *moved.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je m	-eus,	-eus,	eut ;	mouv-ons,	ez,	meuvent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je mouv-	-ais,	-ais,	ait ;	mouv-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je m	-us,	-us,	ut ;	m -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je mouv-	-rai,	-rai,	ra ;	mouv-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je mouv-	-rais,	-rais,	rait ;	mouv-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je meuv-	-e,	-e,	e ;	mouv-ions,	iez,	meuvent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je m	-usse,	-usse,	ût ;	muss-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Imper.</i>	meu		-s,	ve ;	mouv-ons,	ez,	meuvent.

XXVII. NAÎTRE, *to be born.*

Inf. Naître, *to be born.* *Part. pr.* naissant, *being born.*

Part. past, né, *born.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je nai	-s,	-s,	t ;	naiss-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je naiss	-ais,	-ais,	ait ;	naiss-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je naqu	-is,	-is,	it ;	naqu-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je naît	-rai,	-rai,	ra ;	naît-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je naît	-rais,	-rais,	rait ;	naît-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je naiss	-e,	-e,	e ;	naiss-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je naqu	-isse,	-isse,	ît ;	naqu-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	nai		-s,	sse ;	naiss-ons,	ez,	ent.

Nuire *	<i>to hurt,</i>	<i>on instruire</i>	21.
Obtenir,	<i>to obtain,</i>	<i>on tenir</i>	43.

* But the participle is *nui*, has no fem., unlike *instruit*.

XXVIII. OFFRIR, to offer.

Inf. Offrir, to offer. *Part. pr.* offrant, offering.*Part. past,* offert, offered.

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> J'offr	-e,	es,	e ;	offr -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'offr	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	offr -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> J'offr	-is,	is,	it ;	offr -îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> J'offri	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	offri -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> J'offri	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	offri -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> J'offr	-e,	es,	e ;	offr -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> J'offr	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	offr -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> offr		-e,	e ;	offr -ons,	ez,	ent.
Oindre,			to anoint,	on craindre,		13.
Omettre,			to omit,	on mettre		23.
Ouvrir,			to open,	on offrir,		28.

XXIX. PAÎTRE, to graze.

Inf. Paître, to graze. *Part. pr.* paissant, grazing.*Part. past,* pu, (no fem. but repu, makes repue,) grazed.

<i>Pres.</i> Je pai	-s,	s,	t ;	paiss -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je paiss	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	paiss -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> None.						
<i>Fut.</i> Je paît	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	paît -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je paît	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	paît -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je paiss	-e,	es,	-e,	paiss -ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> None.						
<i>Imper.</i> pai		-s,	sse ;	paiss -ons,	ez,	ent.
Paraître *			to appear,	on connaître,		10.
Parcourir,			to run over,	on courir,		12.
Partir,			to set out,	on sentir,		41.
Parvenir.			to arrive at,	on tenir,		43.
Peindre,			to paint,	on craindre		10.
Permettre,			to permit,	on mettre		28.
Plaindre,			to lament,	on craindre		10.

XXX. PLAIRE, to please.

Inf. Plaire, to please. *Part. pr.* plaisant, pleasing.*Part. past,* plu, pleased.

<i>Pres.</i> Je plai	-s,	s,	t ;	plais -ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je plais	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	plais -ions,	iez,	aient.

* Its part. past has no fem.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3	1	2	3	
<i>Pret.</i>	Je pl	-us,	us, ut ;	pl	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je plai	-rai,	ras, ra ;	plai	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je plai	-rais,	rais, rait ;	plai	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je plai	-se,	ses, se ;	plais	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pl	-usse,	usses, ût ;	pl	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	plai		-a, se ;	plais	-ons,	ez,	ent.
	Poursuivre,		to pursue,		on suivre,		42.

XXXI. POURVOIR, to provide.

Inf. Pourvoir, to provide. *Part. pr.* pourvoyant.

Part. past. pourvu.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je pourvoi	-a,	a, t ;	pourvo	-yons,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pourvoy	-ais,	ais, ait ;	pourvoy	-ions,	iez,	aient
<i>Pret.</i>	Je pourv	-us,	us, ut ;	pourv	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je pourvoi	-rai,	ras, ra ;	pourvoi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je pourvoi	-rais,	rais, rait ;	pourvoi	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je pourvoi	-e,	es, e ;	pourvoy	-ions,	iez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pourv	-usse,	usses, ût ;	pourv	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	pourvoi		-a, e ;	pourvo	-yons,	yez,	ient.

XXXII. POUVOIR, to be able.

Inf. Pouvoir, to be able. *Part. pr.* pouvant.

Part. past. pu.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je peu	-x*,	x, t ;	pouv	-ons,	ez,	peuvent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pouv	-ais,	ais, ait ;	pouv	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je p	-us,	us, ut ;	p	-ûmes,	ûtes,	ûrent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je pour	-rai,	ras, ra ;	pour	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je pour	-ras,	rais, rait ;	pour	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je puis	-e,	es, e ;	puiss	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je p	-usse,	usses, ût ;	p	-ussions,	ussiez,	ent.
<i>Imper.</i>	None.						

Prédire†, to foretel, on dire 16.

XXXIII. PRENDRE, to take.

Inf. Prendre, to take. *Part. pr.* prenant, taking.

Part. past. pris, taken.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je pren	-ds	ds, d ;	pren	-ons,	ez,	nent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pren	-ais,	ais, ait ;	pren	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je pr	-is,	is, it ;	pr	-îmes,	îtes,	îrent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je prend	-rai,	ras, ra ;	prend	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je prend	-rais,	rais, rait ;	prend	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je prenn	-e,	es, e ;	pren	-ions,	iez,	nent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je pr	-isse,	isses, it ;	pr	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	pren		-ds, ne ;	pren	-ons,	ez,	nent.

* Or je puis. † See the observation upon *contredire*, p. 102.

Prescrire,	<i>to prescribe,</i>	<i>on écrire</i>	17.
Pressentir,	<i>to forbode.</i>	<i>on sentir</i>	41.
Prévaloir *,	<i>to prevail.</i>	<i>on valoir</i>	46.
Prévenir,	<i>to anticipate.</i>	<i>on tenir</i>	43.

XXXIV. PRÉVOIR, *to foresee.**Inf. PRÉVOIR, to foresee. Part. pr. prévoyant.**Part. past, prévu.*

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.				
	1	2	3		1.	2.	3.	
<i>Pres.</i>	Je prévoi	-s,	s,	t ;	prévo	-yons,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je prévoy	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	prévoy	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je prév	-is,	is,	it ;	prév	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je prévoi	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	prévoi	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je prévoi	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	prévoi	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je prévoi	-e,	es,	e ;	prévo	-yions,	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je prév	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	prév	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	prévo	-s,	e ;		prévo	-yons,	yez,	ient.
Produire,	<i>to produce,</i>				<i>on instruire</i>		21.	
Promettre,	<i>to promise,</i>				<i>on mettre</i>		23.	
Promouvoir †,	<i>to promote,</i>				<i>on mouvoir</i>		26.	
Proscrire,	<i>to proscribe,</i>				<i>on écrire</i>		17.	
Provenir,	<i>to proceed,</i>				<i>on tenir</i>		43.	
Rabattre,	<i>to abate,</i>				<i>on battre</i>		5.	
Rapprendre,	<i>to learn again,</i>				<i>on prendre</i>		33.	
Se rasseoir,	<i>to sit down again,</i>				<i>on s'asseoir</i>		4.	
Ravoir,	<i>to have again,</i>				has only the pres. inf.			
Rebattre,	<i>to beat again,</i>				<i>on battre</i>		5.	
Reboire,	<i>to drink again,</i>				<i>on boire</i>		6.	
Rebouillir,	<i>to boil again,</i>				<i>on bouillir</i>		7.	

XXXV. RECEVOIR, *to receive. ‡**Inf. Recevoir, to receive. Part. pr. recevant, receiving.**Part. past, reçu, received.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je reç	-ois,	ois,	oit ;	re	-cevons,	cevez,	çoivent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je recev	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	recev	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je reç	-us,	us,	ut ;	reç	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je recev	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	recev	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je recev	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	recev	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je reç	-oive,	oives,	oive ;	rec	-evions,	eviez,	oivent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je reç	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	reç	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	reç	-ois,	oive ;	reç	-evons,	evez,	oivent.	
Reconduire,	<i>to lead back,</i>				<i>on instruire</i>			21.
Reconnaître,	<i>to recognise,</i>				<i>on connaître</i>			10.
Reconquérir,	<i>to reconquer,</i>				<i>on acquérir</i>			2.
Récoudre,	<i>to sew again,</i>				<i>on coudre</i>			11.

* But it makes in the subj. pres. *je prévale, tu prévaies, &c.*

† Seldom used but in the pres. inf. and compound tenses.

‡ Recevoir is regular, see page 95.

Recourir,	to have recourse,	on courir	12.
Recouvrir,	to cover over,	on offrir	28.
Récrire,	to write anew,	on écrire	17.
Recueillir,	to gather,	on cueillir	15.
Recuire,	to cook again,	on instruire	21.
Redéfaire,	to undo again,	on faire	19.
Redire,	to say again,	on dire	16.
Redormir,	to sleep again,	on sentir	41.
Réduire,	to reduce,	on instruire	21.
Réélire,	to re-elect,	on lire	22.
Refaire,	to do again,	on faire	19.
Rejoindre,	to rejoin,	on craindre	13.
Relire,	to read over,	on lire	22.
Reluire *,	to glitter,	on instruire	21.
Remettre,	to replace,	on mettre	23.
Remoudre,	to grind again,	on moudre	24.
Rémoudre,	to grind again (knives),	on moudre	24.
Renaître †,	to be born again,	on naître	27.
Rendormir,	to make sleep again,	on sentir	41.
Renduire,	to plaster anew,	on instruire	21.
Rentraire,	to fine-draw,	on traire	44.
Renvoyer,	to send back,	on envoyer	18.
Repâître ‡,	to feed,	on paître	29.
Reparaître,	to reappear,	on connaître	10.
Repartir,	to set off again,	on sentir	41.
Répartir,	to divide, to distribute,	is regular.	
Se repentir,	to repent,	on sentir	41.
Reprendre,	to take again,	on prendre	21.
Reproduire,	to reproduce,	on instruire	33.
Requérir,	to require,	on acquérir	2.

XXXVI. RÉSOUDRE, to resolve.

Inf. Résoudre, to resolve. *Part. pr.* résolvant.

Part. past, résolu, and résous, when it means determined. *Then it has no fem.*

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3	1	2	3	
<i>Pres.</i> Je résou	-ds,	ds,	d ;	résolv	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je résolv	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	résolv	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je résol	-us,	us,	ut ;	résol	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je résoud	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	résoud	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je résoud	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	résoud	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je résolv	-e,	es,	e ;	résolv	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je résol	-usse,	usses,	ut ;	résol	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i> réso		-uds,	lve ;	résolv	-ons,	ez,	ent.

* See note on *luire*, p. 108.

† But it has no participle, and consequently no compound tenses.

‡ It makes in the preterit of the ind. *je repus*, and in the pret. of the subj. *je repusse*.

Ressentir,	<i>to feel,</i>	<i>on sentir</i>	41.
Ressortir,	<i>to go out again,</i>	<i>on sentir</i>	41.
Ressortir,	<i>to be under the jurisdiction of,</i>	<i>is regular,</i>	
Se ressouvenir,	<i>to remember,</i>	<i>on tenir</i>	43.
Restreindre,	<i>to restrain,</i>	<i>on craindre</i>	13.
Retenir,	<i>to retain,</i>	<i>on tenir</i>	43.
Retraire,	<i>to redeem,</i>	<i>on traire</i>	44.
Revaloir,	<i>to return like for like,</i>	<i>on valoir</i>	46.
Revenir,	<i>to come back,</i>	<i>on tenir</i>	43.

XXXVII. REVÊTIR, *to invest.**Inf. Revêtir, to invest. Part. pr. revêtant.**Part. past, revêtu.*

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1.	2.	3.	1.	2.	3.	
<i>Pres.</i>	Je revê	-ts,	ts, t ;	revêt	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je revêt	-ais,	ais, ait ;	revêt	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Prët.</i>	Je revêt	-is,	is, it ;	revêt	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je revêti	-rai,	ras, ra ;	revêti	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je revêti	-rais,	rais, rait ;	revêti	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je revêt	-e,	es, e ;	revêt	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je revêt	-isse,	isses, it ;	revêt	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	revêt	-s,	e ;	revêt	-ons,	ez,	ent.
Revivre,	<i>to revive,</i>			<i>on vivre</i>			48.
Revoir,	<i>to see again,</i>			<i>on voir</i>			49.

XXXVIII. RIRE, *to laugh.**Inf. Rire, to laugh. Part. pr. riant, laughing.**Part. past ri, laughed.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je r	-is,	is, it ;	ri	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je ri	-ais,	ais, ait ;	ri	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Prët.</i>	Je r	-is,	is, it ;	r	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je ri	-rai,	ras, ra ;	ri	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je ri	-rais,	rais, rait ;	ri	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je ri	-e,	es, e ;	ri	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je r	-isse,	isses, it ;	r	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	r	-is,	ie ;	ri	-ons,	ez,	ent.

XXXIX. ROMPRE, *to break.**Inf. Rompre, to break. Part. pr. rompant, breaking.**Part. past rompu, broken.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je romp	-s,	s, t ;	romp	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je romp	-ais,	ais, ait ;	romp	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Prët.</i>	Je romp	-is,	is, it ;	romp	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je romp	-rai,	ras, ra ;	romp	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je romp	-rais,	rais, rait ;	romp	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je romp	-e,	es, e ;	romp	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je romp	-isse,	isses, it ;	romp	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	romp	-s,	e ;	romp	-ons,	ez,	ent.

Rouvrir,	to open again,	on offrir	28.
Satisfaire,	to satisfy,	on faire	19.

XL. SAVOIR, to know.

Inf. Savoir, to know. *Part. pr.* sachant, knowing.

Part. past, su, known.

SINGULAR.					PLURAL.				
	1	2	3		1	2	3		
<i>Pres.</i>	Je sai	-s,	s,	t ;	sav	-ons,	ez,	ent.	
<i>Impf.</i>	Je sav	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	sav	-ions,	iez,	aient.	
<i>Pret.</i>	Je s	-us,	us,	ut ;	s	-ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.	
<i>Fut.</i>	Je sau	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	sau	-rons,	rez,	ront.	
<i>Cond.</i>	Je sau	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	sau	-rions,	riez,	raient.	
<i>S. P.</i>	Je sach	-e,	es,	e ;	sach	-ions,	iez,	ent.	
<i>Impf.</i>	Je s	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	s	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.	
<i>Imper.</i>	sach		-e,	e ;	sach	-ons,	ez,	ent.	
	Secourir,			to relieve,		on	courir	12.	
	Séduire,			to seduce,		on	instruire	21.	
	S'ensuivre.			to follow,		on	suivre	42.	

XLI. SENTIR, to smell or feel.

Inf. Sentir, to feel. *Part. pr.* sentant, feeling.

Part. past, senti, felt.

<i>Pres.</i>	Je sen	-s,	s,	t ;	sent-	ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je sent	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	sent-	ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je sent	-is,	is,	it ;	sent-	îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je senti	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	senti-	rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je senti	rais,	rais,	rait ;	senti-	rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je sent	-e,	es,	e ;	sent-	ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je sent	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	sent-	issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	sen		-s,	te ;	sent-	ons,	ez,	ent.
Servir,			to serve,			on	sentir	41.
Sortir,			to go out,			on	sentir	41.
Sortir,			to obtain, to have,	is regular, but only used in the third person, both sing. and plur. (a law term.)				
Souffrir,			to suffer,			on	sentir	41.
Soumettre,			to submit,			on	mettre	23.
Sourire,			to smile,			on	rire	38.
Souscrire,			to subscribe,			on	écrire	17.
Soustraire,			to subtract,			on	traire	44.
Soutenir,			to sustain,			on	tenir	43.
Se souvenir,			to remember,			on	tenir	43.
Subvenir,			to succour,			on	tenir	43.
Suffire *,			to suffice,			on	confire	9.

* But the participle is *suffi* — no *fem*.

XLII. SUIVRE, *to follow.**Inf.* Suivre, *to follow.* *Part. pr.* suivant, *following.**Part. past,* suivi, *followed.*

SINGULAR.					PLURAL.			
	1	2	3		1	2	3	
<i>Pres.</i>	Je sui	-s,	s,	t ;	suiv	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je suiv	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	suiv	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je suiv	-is,	is,	it ;	suiv	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je suiv	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	suiv	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je suiv	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	suiv	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je suiv	-e,	es,	e ;	suiv	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je suiv	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	suiv	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i>	sui		-s,	ve ;	suiv	-ona,	ez,	ent.
	Surfaire,		<i>to ask too much,</i>			on faire		19.
	Surprendre,		<i>to surprise,</i>			on prendre		33.
	Surseoir *,		<i>to supersede,</i>			on prévoir		34.
	Survivre,		<i>to outlive,</i>			on vivre		48.
	Taire,		<i>to keep silent,</i>			on plaie		30.
	Teindre.		<i>to dye.</i>			on craindre		13.

XLIII. TENIR, *to hold.**Inf.* Tenir, *to hold.* *Part. pr.* tenant, *holding.**Part. past,* tenu, *held.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je t	-iens,	iens,	ient ;	t	-enons,	enez,	iennent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je ten	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	ten	-io	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	Je t	-ins,	ins,	int ;	t	-înmes,	întes,	inrent.
<i>Fut.</i>	Je tiend	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	tiend	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je tiend	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	tiend	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je t	-ienne,	iennes,	ienne ;	t	-enions,	eniez,	iennent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je t	-insse,	insse,	int ;	t	-inssions,	inssiez,	inssent.
<i>Imper.</i>	t		-iens,	ienne ;	t	-enons,	enez,	iennent.
	Traduire,		<i>to translate,</i>			on instruire		21.

XLIV. TRAIRE, *to milk.**Inf.* Traire, *to milk.* *Part. pr.* trayant, *milking.**Part. past,* trait, *milked.*

<i>Pres.</i>	Je trai	-s,	s,	t ;	tra	-yons,	yez,	yent.
<i>Impf.</i>	Je tray	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	tray	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i>	None.							
<i>Fut.</i>	Je trai	-rai,	rais,	ra ;	trai	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i>	Je trai	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	trai	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i>	Je trai	-e,	es,	e ;	tra	-yons,	yez,	yent.
<i>Impf.</i>	None.							
<i>Imper.</i>	tra		-is,	ye ;	tra	-yons,	yez,	yent.

* Its participle past is *sursis* ; but it has no imperative, no pres. subj.

Transcrire,	to transcribe,	on écrire	17.
Transmettre,	to transmit,	on mettre	23.
Tressaillir *,	to start,	on cueillir	15.

XLV. VAINCRE, to vanquish.

Inf. Vaincre, to vanquish. Part. pr. vainquant, vanquishing. Part. past, vaincu, vanquished.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
	1	2	3		1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> Je vain	-cs,	cs,	c ;	vainqu	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je vainqu	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	vainqu	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je vainqu	-is,	is,	it ;	vainqu	-îmes,	îtes,	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je vainc	-rai	ras,	ra,	vainc	-rons	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je vainc	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	vainc	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je vainqu	-e,	es,	e ;	vainqu	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je vainqu	-isse,	issca,	ît ;	vainqu	-issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> vain	-cs,	que ;	vainqu	-ons,	ez,	ent.	

XLVI. VALOIR, to be worth.

Inf. Valoir, to be worth. Part. pr. valant, being worth. Part. past, valu, been worth.

<i>Pres.</i> Je vau	-x	x,	t ;	val	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je val	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	val	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je val	-us,	us,	ut ;	val	-âmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je vaud	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	vaud	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je vaud	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	vaud	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je vaill	-e,	es,	e ;	val	-ions,	iez,	vailtent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je val	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	val	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	vaux				valez		
Venir,			to come,		on tenir		43.

XLVII. VIVRE, to live.

Inf. Vivre, to live. Part. pr. vivant, living. Part. past, vécu, lived.

<i>Pres.</i> Je v	-is,	is,	ît ;	viv	-ons,	ez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je viv	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	viv	-ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je véc	-us,	us,	ut ;	véc	-âmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je viv	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	viv	-rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je viv	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	viv	-rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je viv	-e,	es,	e ;	viv	-ions,	iez,	ent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je véc	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	véc	-ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i>	vis	vive	viv	-ons,	ez,	ent.	

* It makes in the future, *je tressaillirai*, and in the conditional, *je tressaillirais*.

XLVIII. VOIR, *to see.**Inf. Voir, to see. Part. pr. voyant, seeing.**Part. past, vu, seen.*

	SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
	1	2	3	1	2	3
<i>Pres.</i> Je voi	-s,	s,	t ;	voy -ons,	ez,	voient.
<i>Impf.</i> Je voy	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	voy -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je v	-is,	is,	it ;	v -îmes	îtes	irent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je ver	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	ver -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je ver	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	ver -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je voi	-e,	es,	e ;	vo -yions	yez,	ient.
<i>Impf.</i> Je v	-isse,	isses,	ît ;	v -issions,	issiez,	issent.
<i>Imper.</i> voi		s,	e ;	vo -yons,	yez,	voient

XLIX. VOULOIR, *to be willing.**Inf. Vouloir, to be willing. Part. pr. voulant, being willing**Part. past, voulu, been willing.*

<i>Pres.</i> Je veu	-x,	x,	t ;	voul -ons,	ez,	veulent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je voul	-ais,	ais,	ait ;	voul -ions,	iez,	aient.
<i>Pret.</i> Je voul	-us,	us,	ut ;	voul -ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.
<i>Fut.</i> Je vould	-rai,	ras,	ra ;	vould -rons,	rez,	ront.
<i>Cond.</i> Je vould	-rais,	rais,	rait ;	vould -rions,	riez,	raient.
<i>S. P.</i> Je veuill	-e,	es,	e ;	voul -ions,	iez,	veillent.
<i>Impf.</i> Je voul	-usse,	usses,	ût ;	voul -ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.
<i>Imper.</i> veu		x,		voul -ons,	ez.	

When it means *be so good as*, then it makes *veuillez*.*The following Verbs are of common Use only in the Tenses and Persons hereafter mentioned.*

Accroire has only the inf., and is joined to the verb faire : it means to make believe what is not true.

Attraire, *to entice*, has only the infin.*Inf.* braire, *to bray like an ass.* *Pres.* il brait, ils braient. *Fut.* il braira, ils brairont. *Cond.* il brairait, ils brairaient.*Inf.* bruire, *to rustle.* *Part. pr.* bruyant. *Ind. pres.* il bruit. *Imp.* il bruysait, ils bruysaient.*Inf.* Choir, *to fall.* *Part. past,* chu.*Inf.* échoir, *to expire, to fall by lot, to happen.* *Part. pr.* échéant. *Part. past,* échu. *Pres.* il échoit. *Pret.* j'échus, &c. *Fut.* j'écherrai, &c. *Cond.* j'écherrais, &c. *Imperf. subj.* que j'échusse, &c.

Inf. déchoir, to decay; like échoir, except Ind. pres. je déchois, &c. Sub. pres. je déchoie, &c.

Inf. clore, to close. Part. past, clos. Pres. ind. je clos, tu clos, il clot. Fut. je clorai, tu cloras, il clora. Cond. je clorais, tu clorais, il clorait.

Inf. enclore, to inclose, is conjugated like clore.

Inf. éclore, to be hatched. Part. past, éclos. Pres. ind. il éclot, ils éclosent. Fut. il éclora, ils écloront. Cond. il éclorait, ils écloraient. Pres. subj. qu'il éclore, qu'ils éclosent.

Inf. faillir, to fail. Part. past, failli. Preter. ind. je faillis, &c.: its principal use is in the compound tenses. Défaillir, to faint, is conjugated in the same manner, and makes besides Ind. pres. nous défaillons, ils défont. Imp. je défontais, &c.

Férir, to strike, only used in this phrase, sans coup férir, without striking one blow.

Inf. frire, to fry. Part. past, frit. Pres. ind. je fris, tu fris, il frit. Fut. je frirai, tu friras, il frira; nous frirons, vous frirez, ils friront. Cond. je fri-rai, rais, rait; fri-rions, riez, raient.

In other tenses, we make use of the verb *faire*, and of the infinitive *frir*; as *je faisais frir, tu faisais frir, &c.*

Inf. Gésir, to lie. Part. pr. gisant. Pres. ind. il gît, nous gisons, vous gisez, ils gisent. Imp. je gisais, &c.

Inf. ouïr, to hear. Part. past, ouï, heard. The participle is often followed by dire, as j'ai ouï dire.

Poindre, to dawn. Fut. poindra.

Inf. quérir, to fetch, is used, in the infinitive, only after the verbs aller, envoyer, and venir.

Inf. seoir, to become. Pres. ind. il sied, ils sient. Imp. il seyait, ils seyaient. Fut. il siéra, ils siéront. Cond. il siérait, ils siéraient.

Messeoir, not to become, like seoir, to become.

Seoir, to sit, has only the two participles, séant, sis.

Inf. Saillir, to project. Part. pr. saillant. Part. past, sailli. Pres. ind. il saille. Imp. il saillait. Fut. il saillera.

Cond. il saillerait. *Pres. subj.* qu'il saille. *Pret.* qu'il saillît. But saillir, *to gush out*, is regular, and conjugated like agir.

Sourdre, *to spring*. *Ind. pres.* il sourd.

Surgir, *to land, to spring up*. *Part. past*, surgi, is used in the infinitive and compound tenses only.

Tisser, *to weave*. *Part. past*, tissé, and tissu, from the obsolete verb tistre.

Inf. vêtir, *to clothe*. *Part. pres.* vêtant. *Part. past*, vêtu. *Ind. pres.* je vêts, tu vêts, il vêt, nous vêtons, vous vêtez, ils vêtent. *Imperf.* je vêtais, &c. *Pret.* je vêtis, &c. *Fut.* je vêtirai. *Cond.* je vêtirais. *Imp.* vêts, vêtons, vêtez. *Sub.* que je vête, &c. *Imperf.* que je vêtisse, &c.

SECTION VI.

Conjugation of Impersonal Verbs.

NEIGER, *to snow*

Inf. neiger. *Part. pr.* neigeant. *Part. past*, neigé. *Comp.* avoir neigé, ayant neigé.

Pres. ind. il neige. *Imp.* il neigeait. *Pret.* il neigea. *Fut.* il neigera. *Cond.* il neigerait. *Pres. subj.* il neige. *Imperf.* il neigeât. *Comp. tenses*, il a neigé, il avait neigé, &c.

Geler, *to freeze*, éclairer, *to lighten*, tonner, *to thunder*, and grêler, *to hail*, are conjugated on neiger.

PLEUVOIR, *to rain*.

Inf. pleuvoir. *Part. pr.* pleuvant. *Part. past*, plu. *Comp.* avoir plu, ayant plu.

Pres. ind. il pleut. *Imp.* il pleuvait. *Pret.* il plut. *Fut.* il pleuvra. *Cond.* il pleuvrait. *Pres. subj.* il pleuve. *Imperf.* il plût. *Comp. tenses*, il a plu, il avait plu, &c.

FALLOIR, *to be necessary*.

Inf. falloir. *Part. past*, fallu. *Comp.* avoir fallu, ayant fallu.

Pres. ind. il faut. *Imp.* il fallait. *Pret.* il fallut. *Fut.* il

faudra. *Cond.* il faudrait. *Pres. subj.* il faille. *Imperf.* il fallût. *Comp. tenses*, il a fallu, il avait fallu, &c.

Y AVOIR, *there to be.*

Inf. y avoir. *P. pr.* y ayant. *Comp.* y avoir eu, y ayant eu.

Pres. ind. il y a, *there is.* *Imp.* il y avait, *there was.* *Pret.* il y eut, *there was.* *Fut.* il y aura, *there shall be.* *Cond.* il y aurait, *there would be.* *Pres. subj.* il y ait, *there may be.* *Imperf.* il y eût, *there might be.* *Comp. tenses*, il y a eu, *there has been*, il y avait eu, *there had been*, &c.

SECTION VII.

Several Ways of using a Verb.

1. With NEGATION. Infinitive present : *Ne pas donner*, not to give ; *ne donnant pas*, not giving.

Ind. pres. *Je ne donne pas*, I do not give ; *tu ne donnes pas*, thou dost not give ; *il ne donne pas*, he does not give ; *nous ne donnons pas*, we do not give ; *vous ne donnez pas*, you do not give ; *ils ne donnent pas*, they do not give ; and so on for all the other tenses of the indicative and subjunctive moods.

Compound tenses : *je n'ai pas donné*, I have not given ; *tu n'as pas donné*, thou hast not given ; *il n'a pas donné*, he has not given, &c. and so on for all compound tenses and persons.

2. With INTERROGATION. Imperfect of the indicative : *Punissais-je*, did I punish ? *punissais-tu*, didst thou punish ? *punissait-il*, did he punish ? *punissions-nous*, did we punish ? *punissiez-vous*, did you punish ? *punissaient-ils*, did they punish ?

Compound tenses : *Ai-je puni*, have I punished ? *as-tu puni*, hast thou punished ? *a-t-il puni*, has he punished ? and so on for the other tenses.

3. With NEGATION and INTERROGATION. Preterite of the indicative : *Ne marchai-je pas*, did I not walk ? *ne marchas-tu pas*, didst thou not walk ? *ne marchait-il pas*, did he not walk ? *ne marchâmes-nous pas*, did we not walk ? *ne marchâtes-vous pas*, did you not walk ? *ne marchèrent-ils pas*, did they not walk ?

Compound tenses : *N'ai-je pas marché*, have I not walked? *n'as-tu pas marché*, hast thou not walked? *n'a-t-il pas marché*, has he not walked? and so on for the other persons.

4. With PRONOUNS. Future : *Je les vendrai*, I will sell them ; *tu les vendras*, thou wilt sell them ; *il les vendra*, he will sell them ; *nous les vendrons*, we will sell them ; *vous les vendrez*, you will sell them ; *ils les vendront*, they will sell them.

Compound tenses : *Je les ai vendus*, I have sold them : *tu les as vendus*, thou hast sold them ; *il les a vendus*, he has sold them, &c.

5. With NEGATION and PRONOUNS. Conditional : *Je ne le connaîtrais pas*, I should not know him ; *tu ne le connaîtrais pas*, thou shouldst not know him ; *il ne le connaîtrait pas*, he should not know him ; *nous ne le connaîtrions pas*, we should not know him ; *vous ne le connaîtriez pas*, you should not know him ; *ils ne le connaîtraient pas*, they should not know him.

Compound tenses : *Je ne l'ai pas connu*, I have not known him ; *tu ne l'as pas connu*, thou hast not known him ; *il ne l'a pas connu*, he has not known him, &c.

6. With INTERROGATION and PRONOUNS. Future indicative : *Les verrai-je*, shall I see them? *les verras-tu*, shalt thou see them? *les verra-t-il*, shall he see them? *les verrons-nous*, shall we see them? *les verrez-vous*, shall you see them? *les verront-ils*, shall they see them?

Compound tenses : *Les ai-je vus*, have I seen them? *les as-tu vus*, hast thou seen them? *les a-t-il vus*, has he seen them?

This method of conjugating verbs will serve to familiarise the learner with the important distinctions of subject and regimen, and prepare for understanding the rules of the syntax; therefore I recommend it particularly to children.

SECTION VIII.

Conjugation of a Reflected Verb.

INFINITIVE MOOD.

Present tense,
Part. pres.

se lever,
se levant,

to rise.
rising.

Participle past,
Compound of the present,
Compound of the part.

levé,
s'être levé,
s'étant levé,

risen.
to have risen.
having risen.

INDICATIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

SINGULAR..

PLURAL.

Je me lève, *I rise.*
tu te lèves, *thou risest.*
il se lève, *he rises.*

Nous nous levons, *we rise.*
vous vous levez, *you rise.*
ils se lèvent, *they rise.*

IMPERFECT.

Je me levais, *I was*
tu te levais, *thou wast*
il se levait, *he was*

Nous nous levions, *we were*
vous vous leviez, *you were*
ils se levaient, *they were*

PRETERITE.

Je me levai, *I rose.*
tu te levas, *thou didst rise.*
il se leva, *he rose.*

Nous nous levâmes *we rose.*
vous vous levâtes, *you rose.*
ils se levèrent, *they rose.*

FUTURE.

Je me lèverai, *I shall rise.*
tu te lèveras, *thou shalt rise.*
il se lèvera, *he shall rise.*

Nous nous lèverons, *we shall rise.*
vous vous lèverez, *you shall rise.*
ils se lèveront, *they shall rise.*

CONDITIONAL.

Je me lèverais, *I would rise.*
tu te lèverais, *thou wouldst rise.*
il se lèverait, *he would rise.*

Nous nous lèverions, *we would.*
vous vous lèveriez, *you would.*
ils se lèveraient, *they would.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

COMPOUND OF THE PRESENT.

Je me suis levé, *I have risen.*
tu t'es levé, *thou hast.*
il s'est levé, *he has risen.*
elle s'est levée, *she has risen.*

Nous nous sommes levés, *we, &c.*
vous vous êtes levés, *you have.*
ils se sont levés, *they have risen.*
elles se sont levées, *they have, &c.*

COMPOUND OF THE IMPERFECT.

Je m'étais levé, *I had risen.*
tu t'étais levé, *thou hadst.*
il s'était levé, *he had risen.*

Nous nous étions levés, *we had.*
vous vous étiez levés, *you had.*
ils s'étaient levés, *they had, &c.*

COMPOUND OF THE PRETERITE.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

Je me fus levé,	<i>I had risen.</i>	Nous nous fûmes levés,	<i>we had.</i>
tu te fus levé,	<i>thou hadst risen.</i>	vous vous fûtes levés,	<i>you had.</i>
il se fut levé,	<i>he had risen.</i>	ils se furent levés,	<i>they had, &c.</i>

COMPOUND OF THE FUTURE.

Jemeserailevé,	<i>I shall have</i>	} <i>rise.</i>	Nous nous serons levés,	<i>we shall.</i>
tu te serai levé,	<i>thou shalt</i>		vous vous serez levés,	<i>you shall.</i>
il se sera levé,	<i>he shall have</i>		ils se seront levés,	<i>they shall.</i>

COMPOUND OF THE CONDITIONAL.

Je me serais levé,	<i>I should, &c.</i>	Nous nous serions levés,	<i>we, &c.</i>
tu te serais levé,	<i>thou shouldst.</i>	vous vous seriez levés,	<i>you, &c.</i>
il se serait levé,	<i>he should, &c.</i>	ils se seraient levés,	<i>they should.</i>

SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

PRESENT TENSE.

Que	<i>That</i>		
Je me lève,	<i>I may rise.</i>	Nous nous levions,	<i>we may rise.</i>
tu te lèves,	<i>thou mayst rise.</i>	vous vous leviez,	<i>you may rise.</i>
il se lève,	<i>he may rise.</i>	ils se lèvent,	<i>they may rise.</i>

IMPERFECT.

Je me levasse,	<i>I might rise.</i>	Nous nous levassions,	<i>we might.</i>
tu te levasses,	<i>thou mightst.</i>	vous vous levassiez,	<i>you might.</i>
il se levât,	<i>he might rise.</i>	ils se levassent,	<i>they might rise.</i>

COMPOUND TENSES.

COMPOUND OF THE PRESENT.

Je me sois levé,	<i>I may, &c.</i>	Nous nous soyons levés,	<i>we, &c.</i>
tu te sois levé,	<i>thou mayst.</i>	vous vous soyez levés,	<i>you, &c.</i>
il se soit levé,	<i>he may, &c.</i>	ils se soient levés,	<i>they, &c.</i>

COMPOUND OF THE IMPERFECT.

Je me fusse levé,	<i>I might, &c.</i>	Nous nous fussions levés,	<i>we, &c.</i>
tu te fusses levé,	<i>thou, &c.</i>	vous vous fussiez levés,	<i>you, &c.</i>
il se fût levé,	<i>he might, &c.</i>	ils se fussent levés,	<i>they, &c.</i>

IMPERATIVE MOOD.

		Levons nous,	<i>let us rise.</i>
2. lève-toi,	<i>rise thou.</i>	levez-vous,	<i>rise you.</i>
3. qu'il se lève,	<i>let him rise.</i>	qu'ils se lèvent,	<i>let them rise.</i>

OBSERVATIONS.

1. All reflected verbs are conjugated with the auxiliary *être* in French, and *to have* in English, in their compound tenses.

2. They are also conjugated with two pronouns relating to the same object; *je me* is used for the first person of the singular number; *tu te* for the second; *il* or *elle se*, for the third; *nous nous*, for the first of the plural number; *vous vous*, for the second; *ils* or *elles se*, for the third, as before.

3. Most passive verbs, which have an inanimate object for their subject, are reflected in French: as, *les mauvaises nouvelles se répandent plus promptement que les bonnes*; bad news are sooner spread about than good.

4. The verbs which are followed in English by the pronouns, *myself*, *thyself*, *himself*, &c. answer exactly to the French reflected. The following have no pronouns in English, and, as they cannot be easily distinguished, must be learnt by heart:—

VERBS REFLECTED IN FRENCH.

s'abonner, *to compound.*
 s'abstenir, *to abstain.*
 s'accorder, *to agree.*
 s'accouder, *to lean upon.*
 s'asseoir, *to sit down.*
 s'attacher, *to stick.*
 se baigner, *to bathe.*
 se baisser, *to stoop.*
 se cantonner, *to canton,*
 se coucher, *to go to bed.*
 se débattre, *to struggle.*
 se déborder, *to flow over.*
 se dédire, *to retract.*
 se défier, *to distrust.*
 se dépêcher, *to make haste.*
 se démettre, *to resign.*
 se désister, *to desist.*
 s'écrier, *to cry out.*
 s'élancer, *to leap upon.*
 s'en aller, *to go away.*
 s'emparer, *to seize upon.*
 s'empreser, *to be eager.*
 s'endormir, *to fall asleep.*
 s'enfuir, *to run away.*

s'enhardir, *to grow bold.*
 s'enraciner, *to take root.*
 s'enrhumer, *to catch cold.*
 s'enrichir, *to grow rich.*
 s'entretenir, *to discourse with.*
 s'envoler, *to fly away.*
 s'épanouir, *to blow.*
 s'esquiver, *to steal away.*
 s'étonner, *to wonder.*
 s'évanouir, *to faint away.*
 s'évaporer, *to evaporate.*
 s'évertuer, *to strive.*
 se farder, *to paint.*
 se fier, *to trust.*
 se figurer, *to fancy.*
 se flétrir, *to fade away.*
 se fondre, *to melt.*
 se formaliser, *to find fault.*
 se glisser, *to creep in.*
 se hâter, *to make haste.*
 s'imaginer, *to fancy.*
 s'ingérer, *to intermeddle.*
 s'insinuer, *to steal in.*
 se lever, *to rise.*

se liquéfier, *to liquefy.*
 se marier, *to marry.*
 se méfier, *to distrust.*
 se méprendre, *to mistake.*
 se moquer, *to laugh at.*
 se mutiner, *to mutiny.*
 se piquer, *to pretend to.*
 se plaindre, *to complain.*
 se promener, *to walk.*

se réjouir, *to rejoice.*
 se repentir, *to repent.*
 se reposer, *to rest.*
 se ressouvenir, *to remember.*
 se révolter, *to rebel.*
 se saisir, *to seize upon.*
 se soumettre, *to submit.*
 se souvenir, *to remember.*
 se vanter, *to boast.*

AN EASY METHOD TO LEARN VERBS.

This method is divided into two sections: the first teaches how to form the tenses of a verb, and the second how to form the persons of a tense.

§ 1. Rules for the Formation of the Tenses of Regular Verbs.

The PRESENT of the *infinitive*, the PARTICIPLE PRESENT, the PARTICIPLE PAST, the IND. PRESENT, and the PRETERITE of the *indicative*, are called the primitive tenses, because all others are formed from them according to the following rules: —

RULE I. From the *present infinitive* are formed, 1. The *future*, by adding *ai* to the final of those which end with a consonant: as, *donner, dormir*, infinitive; *je donnerai, je dormirai*, future; and by changing the final *e* into *ai*, in those which end with a vowel: as, *lire, vendre*, infinitive; *je lirai, je vendrai*, future. 2. The *conditional*, by adding *ais* to the final of those which end with a consonant: as, *chanter, punir*, infinitive; *je chanterais, je punirais*, conditional; and by changing *e* mute into *ais* in those which end with a vowel: as, *plaire, répondre*, infinitive; *je plairais, je répondrais*, conditional.

RULE II. From the *part. pres.* are formed, 1. The *three persons plural of the present of the indicative*, by changing *ant* into *ons, ez, ent*: as, *parlant, agissant*, part. pres., *nous parlons, vous parlez, ils parlent; nous agissons, vous agissez, ils agissent*. 2. The *imperfect of the indicative*, by changing *ant* into *ais*: as, *venant, connaissant*, part. pres., *je venais, je connaissais*. 3. The *present of the subjunctive*, by changing *ant* into *e*: as, *réduisant, écrivant*, part. pres., *je réduise, j'écrive*.

RULE III. With the *participle past* are formed, in all verbs, regular or irregular, all the *compound tenses*, by means of the auxiliary verbs *avoir* or *être*; *aimé, fini, ouvert, venu, repent*, participle past; *j'ai aimé, j'avais fini, j'aurai ouvert, je serais venu, je me sois repent*: no exceptions to this rule.

RULE IV. From the *present of the indicative* is formed the *second person of the imperative*, by suppressing the pronoun *je*: as, *j'aime, je viens, je connais*, pres. ind., *aime, viens, connais*. The *first and second persons plural of the imper.* are similar to the same persons in the *pres. ind.* only suppressing the pronouns *nous, vous*: as *nous finissons, vous croyez*, ind. pres., *finissons, croyez*, imperative.

RULE V. From the *preterite of the indicative* is formed the *subjunctive imperf.*, by changing the final *ai* into *asse*, for the verbs of the first conjugation: as, *je donnai, j'aimai*, pret. ind., *je donnasse, j'aimasse*, imperf. subj., and by adding *se* to all those which end in *s*: as, *j'agis, je lus, je tins*, pret. ind., *j'agisse, je lusse, je tinsse*, imperf. subj. This fifth rule has no exceptions, not even in the irregular verbs.

The exceptions to rule the first are, the verbs which change *enir* of the *present infinitive* into *iendrai* for the future, and into *iendrais* for the conditional: as, *tenir, je tiendrai, je tiendrais*; and the verbs which change *oir* of the *present infinitive* into *rai* for the future, and into *rais* for the conditional: as, *recevoir, je recevrai, je recevrais*.

The exceptions to rule the second are the same verbs of the preceding exception, which do not form from the part. pr. the *third person plural of the pres. ind.*, nor the *three persons singular and third person plural of the pres. subj.* But they form them from the *first person singular of the pres. ind.* by changing *s* into *nent, ne, nes, ne*, and *nent* for the verbs in *enir*; and into *vent, ve, ves, ve, vent*, for the verbs in *evoir*: as, *je viens, ils viennent, que je vienne, que tu viennes, qu'il vienne, qu'ils viennent; je reçois, ils reçoivent, que je reçoive, que tu reçoives, qu'il reçoive, qu'ils reçoivent*.

Verbs whose part. pres. end in *oyant, uyant*, change *y* into *i* before an *e* mute: as, *nettoyant, ils nettoient; appuyant, que j'appuie*.

To exercise the learner in applying the foregoing rules,

we subjoin a table of the primitive tenses of the twelve verbs following :

TABLE OF THE TERMINATIONS OF THE PRIMITIVE TENSES.

Present of the Infinitive.	Participle present.	Participle past.	Present of the Indicative.	Preterite definite.
FIRST CONJUGATION.				
in <i>er</i> , as <i>parler</i> .	<i>parlant</i> .	in <i>é</i> , as <i>parlé</i> .	in <i>e</i> , as <i>je parle</i> .	in <i>ai</i> , as <i>je parlai</i> .
SECOND CONJUGATION				
in <i>ir</i> , as <i>finir</i> .	<i>finissant</i> .	in <i>i</i> , as <i>fini</i> .	in <i>is</i> , as <i>je finis</i> .	in <i>is</i> , as <i>je finis</i> .
in <i>rir</i> , as <i>ouvrir</i> .	<i>ouvrant</i> .	in <i>ert</i> , as <i>ouvert</i> .	in <i>re</i> , as <i>j'ouvre</i> .	in <i>ris</i> , as <i>j'ouvris</i> .
in <i>tir</i> , as <i>sensir</i> .	<i>sensant</i> .	in <i>ti</i> , as <i>senti</i> .	in <i>ens</i> , as <i>je sens</i> .	in <i>tis</i> , as <i>je sentis</i> .
in <i>enir</i> , as <i>tenir</i> .	<i>tenant</i> .	in <i>u</i> , as <i>tenu</i> .	in <i>ens</i> , as <i>je tiens</i> .	in <i>tns</i> , as <i>je tins</i> .
THIRD CONJUGATION.				
in <i>evoir</i> , as <i>recevoir</i> .	<i>recevant</i> .	in <i>eu</i> , as <i>reçu</i> .	in <i>ois</i> , as <i>je reçois</i> .	in <i>us</i> , as <i>je reçus</i> .
FOURTH CONJUGATION.				
in <i>dre</i> , as <i>rendre</i> .	<i>rendant</i> .	in <i>du</i> , as <i>rendu</i> .	in <i>ds</i> , as <i>je rends</i> .	in <i>dis</i> , as <i>je rendis</i> .
in <i>aire</i> , as <i>plaire</i> .	<i>plaisant</i> .	in <i>lu</i> , as <i>plu</i> .	in <i>ais</i> , as <i>je plais</i> .	in <i>us</i> , as <i>je plus</i> .
in <i>uire</i> , as <i>réduire</i> .	<i>réduisant</i> .	in <i>uit</i> , as <i>réduit</i> .	in <i>uis</i> , as <i>je réduis</i> .	in <i>uiss</i> , as <i>je réduisis</i> .
in <i>indre</i> , as <i>craindre</i> .	<i>craignant</i> .	in <i>int</i> , as <i>craint</i> .	in <i>ins</i> , as <i>je crains</i> .	in <i>ignis</i> , as <i>je craignis</i> .
in <i>oltre</i> , as <i>croître</i> .	<i>croissant</i> .	in <i>u</i> , as <i>crû</i> .	in <i>ois</i> , as <i>je crois</i> .	in <i>us</i> , as <i>je crus</i> .
in <i>altre</i> , as <i>naitre</i> .	<i>naissant</i> .	in <i>é</i> , as <i>né</i> .	in <i>ais</i> , as <i>je nais</i> .	in <i>quis</i> , as <i>je naquis</i> .

§ 2. *Rules for the Formation of Persons.*

RULE I. PRES. IND.

The first person ends either in *e*, *s*, or *x*. When it ends in *e*, the second adds an *s*, and the third is like the first : as, *je parle, tu parles, il parle*.

When it ends in *s* or *x*, the second is like the first, and the third changes the final *s* or *x* into *t* : as, *je lis, tu lis, il lit; je veux, tu veux, il veut*.

However, *s* is left out in the third person of verbs which end in *cs*, *ds*, or *ts*, in the first : as, *je vaincs, tu vaincs, il vaine; je perds, tu perds, il perd; je mets, tu mets, il met*.

The three persons plural end in *ons*, *ez*, *ent* : as, *parlant*, part. pr., *nous parlons, vous parlez, ils parlent* ; plural of the pres. of the indicative.

The Exceptions are :

1. The verb *aller*, which makes *je vais, tu vas, il va; nous allons, vous allez, ils vont*.
2. The verb *avoir*, which makes *j'ai, tu as, il a; nous avons, vous avez, ils ont*.
3. *Etre*, which makes *je suis, tu es, il est; nous sommes, vous êtes, ils sont*.
4. *Dire*, and *redire*, which make *vous dites*, and *vous redites*.
5. *Faire*, and its compounds, which make *vous faites, ils font*.

RULE II.

When the first person of any other tense is known, the other persons are formed, either in regular or irregular verbs, by changing the final as follows :

IMPERFECT OF THE INDICATIVE.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
ais,	ais,	ait.	ions,	iez,	aient.

PRETERITE OF THE INDICATIVE.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
1	2	3	1	2	3
si,	as,	a ;	ames,	âtes,	èrent.
is,	is,	it ;	îmes,	îtes,	irent.
ins,	ins,	int ;	îmes,	îtes,	inrent.
us,	us,	ut ;	ûmes,	ûtes,	urent.

FUTURE.

rai,	ras,	ra ;	rons,	rez,	ront.
------	------	------	-------	------	-------

CONDITIONAL.

rais,	rais,	rait ;	rions,	riez,	raient.
-------	-------	--------	--------	-------	---------

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.

e,	es,	e ;	ions,	iez,	ent.
----	-----	-----	-------	------	------

IMPERFECT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

asse,	asses,	ât ;	assions,	assiez,	assent,
isse,	isses,	ît ;	issions,	issiez,	issent.
insse,	inssec,	înt ;	inssions,	inssiez,	inssent.
usse,	usses,	ût ;	ussions,	ussiez,	ussent.

The only exceptions are the verb *être*, which makes in the subjunctive present, *je sois, tu sois, il soit, nous soyons, vous soyez, ils soient*; and the verb *avoir*, which makes *j'aie, tu aies, il ait, nous ayons, vous ayez, ils aient*.

AN ALPHABETICAL SERIES OF FRENCH VERBS, REGULAR AND IRREGULAR, SHOWING WHAT PREPOSITIONS THEY GOVERN, AND THOSE VERBS WHICH DO NOT GOVERN ANY.

All regular Verbs are conjugated according to one of the four following, which are themselves conjugated at full length in the page mentioned after each verb.

1. Parle, to speak, see page 90.
2. Agir, to act, 93.
3. Recevoir, to receive, 95.
4. Vendre, to sell, 97.

The following list contains above 1500 regular verbs, and all the irregular ones, which are, comparatively, a small number; as four-fifths, at least, of the French verbs fall under the first conjugation in *er*.*

* N. B. When the verbs placed before nouns are taken in a different sense, they govern different prepositions, and sometimes none; as

A

Conjugations.	Before a regimen indirect.	Before an Infinitive.
1 Abaisser,		<i>to bring down.</i>
1 s'abaisser, - - à		<i>to stoop, - - - à.</i>
1 abandonner, - - à		<i>to abandon.</i>
ir. abattre,		<i>to pull down.</i>
1 abdiquer,		<i>to abdicate.</i>
1 abhorrer,		<i>to abhor, - - - de.</i>
1 abimer,		<i>to destroy entirely.</i>
1 abjurer,		<i>to abjure.</i>
2 abolir,		<i>to abolish.</i>
1 abonder en,		<i>to abound with.</i>
1 s'abonner, - - à		<i>to compound, - - pour.</i>
2 abonner,		<i>to better.</i>
1 aborder, } - - de {		<i>to come up with.</i>
		<i>to go near.</i>
		<i>to land.</i>
1 s'aboucher avec,		<i>to confer with, - - pour.</i>
2 aboutir, - - à		<i>to end.</i>
1 aboyer,		<i>to bark.</i>
1 abréger,		<i>to abridge.</i>
1 abreuver, - - de		<i>to water.</i>
1 abroger,		<i>to abrogate.</i>
2 abrutir,		<i>to stupefy.</i>
1 s'absenter, - - de		<i>to absent one's self.</i>
1 absorber,		<i>to absorb.</i>
ir. absoudre, - - de		<i>to absolve, - - - de.</i>
ir. s'abstenir, - - de		<i>to forbear, - - - de.</i>
ir. abstraire, - - de		<i>to abstract.</i>
1 abuser, - - de		<i>to abuse.</i>
1 accabler, - - de		<i>to overwhelm.</i>
1 accaparer,		<i>to monopolise.</i>
1 accéder, - - à		<i>to accede.</i>
1 accélérer,		<i>to accelerate.</i>
1 accentuer,		<i>to accent.</i>
1 accepter, - - de		<i>to accept, - - - de.</i>
1 accommoder, - - à		<i>to accommodate.</i>
1 accompagner, - - à		<i>to accompany.</i>
2 accomplir,		<i>to accomplish.</i>
1 accorder, - - à		<i>to grant, - - - de.</i>
1 s'accorder,		<i>to agree, - - - à.</i>

they could not have been all inserted without confusion, those only have been mentioned which they govern most commonly.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.			Before Imp. 1.
1	accoster,			<i>to accost.</i>
1	accoucher, - - de	{		<i>to be delivered.</i>
				<i>to deliver a woman.</i>
1	s'accoucher sur,			<i>to lean upon.</i>
2	accourir,			<i>to shorten.</i>
ir.	accourir, - - à			<i>to run to.</i>
1	accoutumer, - - à			<i>to accustom, - - - à.</i>
1	s'accoutumer, - - à			<i>to use one's self, - - - à.</i>
1	accréditer,			<i>to give credit.</i>
1	accrocher, - - à			<i>to hang upon a hook.</i>
ir.	accroître,			<i>to increase.</i>
ir.	accueillir,			<i>to welcome.</i>
1	accumuler,			<i>to heap up.</i>
1	accuser, - - de			<i>to accuse, - - - de.</i>
1	acérer,			<i>to steel.</i>
1	s'acharner - - à			<i>to be eager at, - - - à.</i>
1	s'acheminer vers,			<i>to set forward.</i>
1	acheter, - - de			<i>to buy.</i>
1	achever,			<i>to finish, - - - de.</i>
ir.	acquérir,			<i>to acquire.</i>
1	acquiescer, - - à			<i>to yield.</i>
1	s'acquitter, - - de			<i>to discharge.</i>
1	adapter, - - à			<i>to adapt.</i>
1	additionner,			<i>to make an addition.</i>
1	adhérer, - - à			<i>to adhere to.</i>
ir.	adjoindre, - - à			<i>to associate.</i>
1	adjuger, - - à			<i>to adjudge.</i>
ir.	admettre, - - à			<i>to admit, - - - à.</i>
1	administrer, - - à			<i>to administer.</i>
1	admirer,			<i>to admire, - - (subj.) de.</i>
1	s'adonner, - - à			<i>to apply one's self to, - - - à.</i>
1	adopter,			<i>to adopt.</i>
1	adorer,			<i>to adore.</i>
2	adoucir,			<i>to soften.</i>
1	adresser, - - à			<i>to direct.</i>
1	s'adresser, - - à			<i>to apply to, - - - pour.</i>
2	affaiblir,			<i>to weaken.</i>
1	affamer,			<i>to starve.</i>
1	affecter, - - à	{		<i>to appropriate.</i>
				<i>to affect, - - - de.</i>
1	affectionner,			<i>to love.</i>
1	affirmer,			<i>to let.</i>
2	affermir,			<i>to strengthen.</i>
1	afficher, - - à			<i>to post up.</i>
1	affiler,			<i>to sharpen.</i>
1	affilier, - - à			<i>to adopt.</i>
1	affirmer, - - à			<i>to assert, - - - o.</i>
1	affliger,			<i>to afflict, - - - de.</i>
1	affluer,			<i>to abound.</i>
2	affranchir, - - de			<i>to set free.</i>

Conjug.	Before	Reg.	Ind.		Before	Inf.
1	affronter,			to encounter.		
1	affubler,	-	- de	to muffle up.		
1	s'agenouiller,			to kneel down.		
1	aggraver,			to aggravate.		
1	agioter,			to stock-job.		
2	agir,			to act.		
1	agiter,			to agitate.		
2	agrandir,			to enlarge.		
1	agréer,	-	- de	to accept,	-	- (subj.)
1	agréger,	-	- à	to aggregate.		
2	s'aguerrir,	-	- à	to inure one's self,	-	- à.
1	aider,	-	- à	to help,	-	- à.
2	aigrir,			to exasperate.		
1	aguillonner,			to stir up.		
1	aguiser,			to sharpen.		
1	aimer,			to love,	-	- à.
1	aimer mieux,			to like better,	-	- o.
1	ajourner,			to summon,	-	- à.
1	ajouter	-	- à	to add.		
1	ajuster,	-	- à	to fit, to adjust.		
1	alarmer,			to alarm.		
1	aliéner,			to alienate.		
1	aligner,			to lay out straight.		
1	allaiter,			to suckle.		
1	alléger,			to alleviate.		
1	alléguer,	-	- à	to allege.		
ir.	aller*,	-	- à	to go,	-	- o.
1	allier,	-	- à	to alloy.		
1	s'allier,	-	- à	to make an alliance.		
1	allumer,	-	- à	to light.		
1	allonger,			to lengthen.		
1	altérer,			to adulterate.		
1	amasser,	-	- à	to heap up,	-	- à.
1	ambitionner,			to pursue ambitiously,	-	- de.
1	améliorer,			to improve.		
1	s'amender,			to grow better.		
1	amener,	-	- à	to bring,	-	- à.
1	ameuter,			to raise a mob.		
2	amollir,			to mollify.		
1	amonceler,			to heap up.		
1	amorcer,			to allure.		
2	amortir,			to quench.		
1	amplifier,			to amplify.		
1	s'amuser,	-	- à	to amuse one's self,	-	- à.
2	anéantir,			to annihilate.		
1	animer,	-	- à	to animate,	-	- à.
1	annoncer,	-	- à	to announce,	-	- o.
1	annuler,			to abrogate.		
2	anoblir,			to ennoble.		
1	anticiper,			to anticipate.		

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infin.
3	apercevoir,		<i>to perceive,</i>	- - - a.
3	s'apercevoir,	- de	<i>to perceive.</i>	
1	apetisser,		<i>to diminish.</i>	
1	s'apetisser,		<i>to grow short.</i>	
2	aplanir,		<i>to level.</i>	
2	aplatir,		<i>to make flat.</i>	
1	appaier,		<i>to appease.</i>	
1	appareiller,		<i>to match.</i>	
4	appartenir,	- - à	<i>to belong;</i>	- - de.
2	s'appauvrir,		<i>to grow poor,</i>	- - - à.
1.	appeler,		<i>to call,</i>	- - - à.
4	appendre,	- - à	<i>to append.</i>	
2	appesantir,		<i>to make heavy.</i>	
2	applaudir,	- - à	<i>to applaud,</i>	- - - de.
1	appliquer,	- - à	<i>to apply.</i>	
1	s'appliquer,	- - à	<i>to apply one's self,</i>	- - à.
1	apporter,	- - à	<i>to bring.</i>	
1	apposer,	- - à	<i>to set.</i>	
1	apprécier,	- - à	<i>to appraise.</i>	
1	appréhender,	- - de	<i>to fear,</i>	- (subj.) de.
ir.	apprendre,	- - à	<i>to learn,</i>	- - - à.
1	apprêter,	- - à	<i>to prepare,</i>	- - - à.
1	appriivoiser,		<i>to tame.</i>	
1	approcher,	- - de	<i>to approach.</i>	
2	approfondir,		<i>to examine into.</i>	
1	appropriier,	- - à	<i>to appropriate.</i>	
1	s'appropriier,		<i>to usurp.</i>	
1	approuver,		<i>to approve,</i>	- - - de.
1	appuyer,		<i>to prop.</i>	
1	s'appuyer sur,		<i>to lean upon.</i>	
1	arborer,		<i>to set up.</i>	
1	argumenter,	- - à	<i>to infer.</i>	
1	armer,	- - de	<i>to arm.</i>	
1	arpenter,		<i>to survey land.</i>	
1	arracher,	- de or à	<i>to pull out.</i>	
1	arranger,		<i>to set in order.</i>	
1	arrêter,		<i>to stop, to determine,</i>	- de.
1	s'arrêter,	- - à	<i>to stay,</i>	- - - à.
1	arriver *,	- - à	<i>to come to, to happen,</i>	- de.
1	s'arroger,		<i>to claim to one's self,</i>	- de.
2	arrondir,		<i>to make round.</i>	
1	arroser,		<i>to water.</i>	
1	articuler,		<i>to articulate.</i>	
1	asperger,	- - de	<i>to besprinkle.</i>	
1	aspirer,	- - à	<i>to aim at,</i>	- - - à.
1	assaisonner,	- - de	<i>to season.</i>	
1	assassiner,		<i>to assassinate.</i>	
1	assembler,	- - à	<i>to bring together.</i>	
ir.	asseoir,		<i>to sit.</i>	
1	assiéger,		<i>to besiege.</i>	

Conjug		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infin.
1	assigner,	-	- à	to assign, - - - à.
1	assimiler,	-	- à	to assimilate.
1	assister, -	-	- de	to stand by.
1	associer,	-	- à	to associate.
1	assommer,	-	- de	to knock down.
2	assortir,	-	- à	to match.
2	assoupir,			to make drowsy
2	s'assoupir,	-	- à	to fall asleep.
2	assouvir,	-	- de	to glut.
2	assujettir,	-	- à	to subdue, - - - à.
1	assurer, -	-	- à	to affirm, - - - o.
ir.	astreindre,	-	- à	to subject, - - - à.
1	s'attabler,			to sit down at table.
1	attacher,	-	- à	to fasten.
1	s'attacher,	-	- à	to stick, - - - à.
1	attaquer,	-	- de	to attack.
1	s'attaquer,	-	- à	to stand up against.
ir.	atteindre,	-	- à	to reach.
1	atteler, -	-	- à	to put horses to a coach.
4	attendre,			to wait, - - - à.
4	s'attendre,	-	- à	to hope for, - - - à.
2	attendrir,			to soften.
2	s'attendrir,			to be moved.
1	attenter,	-	- à	to attempt.
1	atténuer,			to attenuate.
1	atterrer,			to strike down.
1	attester,	-	- à	to attest, - - - o.
2	attédier,			to cool down.
1	attirer,	-	- à	to attract.
1	s'attirer,			to draw upon one's self.
1	attiser,			to stir up.
ir.	attirer,			to allure.
1	attraper,			to catch.
1	attribuer,	-	- à	to ascribe, - - - de.
1	s'attrister,	-	- de	to be sorrowful, - - - de.
1	attrouper,			to assemble.
1	s'attrouper,	-	- à	to troop.
1	augmenter,	-	- de	to increase.
1	augurer,	-	- de	to augur.
1	mesurer,			to measure by the el.
1	autoriser,	-	- à	to authorise, - - - à.
1	avalier,			to swallow.
1	avancer,	-	- à	to advance.
1	s'avancer,			to go so far as.
2	avertir,	-	- de	to warn, - - - de.
1	aveugler,			to blind.
2	avilir,			to disgrace.
1	s'aviser,	-	- de	to bethink one's self, - de.
ir.	avoir,			to have, - - - à.
1	avouer,			to confess, - - - o.

B.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 Babiller,		<i>to prattle.</i>
1 badiner,		<i>to joke.</i>
1 se baigner,		<i>to bathe.</i>
1 bâiller,		<i>to yawn.</i>
1 baiser,		<i>to kiss,</i>
1 baisser,		<i>to let down.</i>
1 se baisser,		<i>to stoop.</i>
1 balancer,		<i>to balance.</i>
1 balayer,		<i>to sweep.</i>
1 balotter,		<i>to toss.</i>
2 bander,		<i>to bend.</i>
2 bannir, - - de		<i>to banish.</i>
1 baptiser,		<i>to baptize.</i>
1 barbouiller, - - de		<i>to daub.</i>
1 barrer, - - à		<i>to bar.</i>
1 barricader,		<i>to barricade.</i>
1 bassiner,		<i>to warm a bed.</i>
1 bâter,		<i>to saddle.</i>
2 bâtir,		<i>to build.</i>
ir. battre,		<i>to beat.</i>
1 bégayer,		<i>to stammer.</i>
1 bêler,		<i>to bleat.</i>
2 bénir,		<i>to bless,</i>
1 bercer, - - de		<i>to lull to sleep.</i>
1 biaiser,		<i>to use evasions.</i>
1 biffer, - - de		<i>to blot out.</i>
1 blâmer, - - de		<i>to blame, - - - de.</i>
2 blanchir,		<i>to whiten.</i>
1 blasphémer,		<i>to blaspheme.</i>
1 blesser,		<i>to wound.</i>
1 bloquer,		<i>to block up.</i>
ir. boire,		<i>to drink.</i>
1 boiser,		<i>to wainscot.</i>
1 bombarder,		<i>to bombard.</i>
2 bondir,		<i>to jump about.</i>
1 border, - - de		<i>to border.</i>
1 borner, - - à		<i>to limit, - - - à.</i>
1 boucher,		<i>to stop up.</i>
1 boudier,		<i>to pout.</i>
ir. bouillir,		<i>to boil.</i>
1 boulanger,		<i>to bake.</i>
1 bouleverser,		<i>to overthrow.</i>
1 bourdonner, - - à		<i>to buzz.</i>
1 boutonner,		<i>to button.</i>
1 branler,		<i>to shake.</i>
1 brasser,		<i>to brew.</i>
1 braver,		<i>to affront.</i>
1 brider,		<i>to bridle.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infm.
1 briguer,		<i>to sue for an office.</i>
1 briller, -	- - à	<i>to shine.</i>
1 briser,		<i>to break.</i>
1 broder,		<i>to embroider.</i>
1 broncher,		<i>to stumble.</i>
1 brosser,		<i>to brush.</i>
1 brouiller,		<i>to confound.</i>
1 broyer,		<i>to grind.</i>
1 brûler,		<i>to burn.</i>
2 brunir,		<i>to burnish.</i>
1 brusquer,		<i>to blunt.</i>
1 butiner,		<i>to plunder.</i>

C.

1 Cabaler,		<i>to cabal.</i>		
1 cacher, -	- - à	<i>to hide.</i>		
1 cacheter,		<i>to seal up.</i>		
1 calciner,		<i>to calcinate.</i>		
1 calculer,		<i>to calculate.</i>		
1 calmer,		<i>to calm.</i>		
1 calomnier,		<i>to slander.</i>		
1 camper,		<i>to encamp.</i>		
1 canonner,		<i>to storm.</i>		
1 se-cantonner,		<i>to canton.</i>		
1 capituler,		<i>to capitulate.</i>		
1 caractériser,		<i>to characterise.</i>		
1 caresser,		<i>to caress.</i>		
1 carrer,		<i>to square.</i>		
1 casser, -	- - à	<i>to break.</i>		
1 catéchiser,		<i>to instruct.</i>		
1 causer,		<i>to prattle.</i>		
1 cautionner,		<i>to bail.</i>		
1 céder, -	- - à	<i>to yield.</i>		
1 célébrer,		<i>to celebrate.</i>		
1 céler, -	- - à	<i>to conceal.</i>		
1 censurer,	- - de	<i>to censure.</i>		
1 certifier,	- - à	<i>to certify,</i>	- - - o.	
1 cesser,		<i>to cease,</i>	- - - de.	
1 chagriner,		<i>to vex,</i>	- - - da.	
1 chanceler,		<i>to totter.</i>		
1 changer,		<i>to change.</i>		
1 chanter,		<i>to sing.</i>		
1 charger,	- - de	<i>to charge,</i>	- - - de.	
1 charmer,		<i>to charm,</i>	- - - de.	
1 chasser,	- - de	<i>to expel.</i>		
1 chauffer,		<i>to warm.</i>		
1 cheminer,		<i>to walk.</i>		
1 chercher,		<i>to look for,</i>	- - - a.	
1 chiffrer,		<i>to number.</i>		

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infin.
2	choisir,		<i>to choose,</i>	- - - de.
1	choquer,		<i>to offend,</i>	- - - de.
1	cicatriser,		<i>to cicatrise.</i>	
1	cimenter,		<i>to cement.</i>	
ir.	circonscire,		<i>to circumscribe.</i>	
1	circonstancier,		<i>to describe minutely.</i>	
1	circuler,		<i>to circulate.</i>	
1	citer,		<i>to summon,</i>	- - - à.
1	civiliser,		<i>to civilise.</i>	
1	clarifier,		<i>to clarify.</i>	
1	coaguler,		<i>to coagulate.</i>	
1	coller, -	- - à	<i>to glue.</i>	
1	colorer,		<i>to colour.</i>	
ir.	combattre,		<i>to fight.</i>	
1	combler, -	- de	<i>to heap up.</i>	
1	commander, -	- à	<i>to command,</i>	- (subj.) de
1	commencer,		<i>to begin,</i>	- - - à.
1	commenter,		<i>to comment.</i>	
1	commercer,		<i>to trade.</i>	
ir.	commettre, -	- à	<i>to commit,</i>	- - - à.
1	communiquer,	- à	<i>to communicate.</i>	
1	comparer, -	- à	<i>to compare.</i>	
2	compâtir, -	- à	<i>to compassionate.</i>	
1	compenser,		<i>to compensate.</i>	
ir.	se complaire, -	- à	<i>to please,</i>	- - - à.
1	complimenter, -	- de	<i>to compliment.</i>	
1	composer,		<i>to compose.</i>	
ir.	comprendre, -	- à	<i>to understand.</i>	
1	comprimer,		<i>to squeeze.</i>	
ir.	se compromettre,		<i>to expose one's self.</i>	
1	compter,		<i>to count,</i>	- - - o.
1	concentrer,		<i>to concentrate.</i>	
1	concerner,		<i>to concern.</i>	
3	concevoir,		<i>to conceive.</i>	
1	concilier,		<i>to conciliate.</i>	
ir.	conclure,		<i>to conclude.</i>	
ir.	concourir, -	- à	<i>to concur,</i>	- - - à.
1	condamner, -	- à	<i>to condemn,</i>	- - - à.
4	condescendre, -	- à	<i>to condescend,</i>	- - - à.
ir.	conduire, -	- à	<i>to conduct,</i>	- - - à.
1	conférer, -	- à	<i>to confer.</i>	
1	confesser, -	- à	<i>to confess.</i>	- - - o.
1	confier, -	- à	<i>to trust.</i>	
1	confiner,		<i>to confine.</i>	
ir.	confire,		<i>to pickle.</i>	
1	confirmer, -	- à	<i>to confirm.</i>	
1	confisquer,		<i>to confiscate.</i>	
4	confondre,		<i>to confound.</i>	
1	conformer, -	- à	<i>to conform.</i>	
1	comforter,		<i>to comfort.</i>	

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Indef.
1 confronter,		<i>to compare.</i>
1 congédier,	- - de	<i>to dismiss.</i>
1 conjecturer,	- - de	<i>to guess.</i>
ir. conjoindre,		<i>to conjoin.</i>
1 conjuguer,		<i>to conjugate.</i>
1 conjurer,	- - de	<i>to intreat,</i> - (subj.) de.
1 conniver,	- - à	<i>to connive.</i>
ir. connaître,		<i>to know,</i> - - - o.
ir. conquérir,		<i>to conquer.</i>
1 consacrer,	- - à	<i>to consecrate.</i>
1 conseiller,	- - à	<i>to advise,</i> - (subj.) de.
ir. consentir,	- - à	<i>to consent,</i> - (subj.) à.
1 conserver,		<i>to preserve.</i>
1 considérer,		<i>to consider.</i>
1 consigner,	- - à	<i>to consign,</i> - - - de.
1 consister,		<i>to consist,</i> - - - à.
1 consoler,	- - de	<i>to comfort,</i> - - - de.
1 consolider,		<i>to consolidate.</i>
1 consommer,		<i>to consummate.</i>
1 conspirer,		<i>to conspire,</i> - - - de.
1 consterner,		<i>to dispirit.</i>
1 constiper,		<i>to make costive.</i>
1 constituer,		<i>to appoint.</i>
ir. construire,		<i>to build.</i>
1 consulter,		<i>to consult.</i>
1 consumer,		<i>to consume.</i>
1 contempler,		<i>to contemplate.</i>
ir. contenir,		<i>to contain.</i>
1 contenter,		<i>to satisfy.</i>
1 conter,	- - à	<i>to relate.</i>
1 contester,	- - à	<i>to contest,</i> - - (subj.)
1 continuer,		<i>to go on,</i> - - de or à.
1 contracter,		<i>to contract.</i>
ir. contraindre,		<i>to compel,</i> - - de or à.
1 contrarier,		<i>to contradict.</i>
1 contre-balancer,		<i>to counterpoise.</i>
ir. contredire,		<i>to contradict.</i>
ir. contrefaire,		<i>to counterfeit.</i>
1 contre-mander,		<i>to countermand.</i>
1 contre-miner,		<i>to countermine.</i>
1 contre-signer,		<i>to countersign.</i>
ir. contrevenir,	- - à	<i>to infringe.</i>
1 contribuer,	- - à	<i>to contribute,</i> - - - à.
1 contrôler,		<i>to control.</i>
ir. convaincre,	- - de	<i>to convince,</i> - - - de.
ir. convenir*,	- - de	<i>to agree,</i> - - - de.
1 converser avec,		<i>to converse.</i>
2 convertir,		<i>to convert.</i>
1 coopérer,	- - à	<i>to co-operate.</i>
1 copier,		<i>to transcribe.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infia.
1 corder,		<i>to twist.</i>
4 correspondre, - - à		<i>to correspond.</i>
1 corriger,		<i>to correct.</i>
1 corroborer,		<i>to strengthen.</i>
ir. corrompre,		<i>to corrupt.</i>
1 cotoyer,		<i>to coast along.</i>
1 coucher,		<i>to put to bed.</i>
1 se coucher,		<i>to go to bed.</i>
ir. coudre,		<i>to sew.</i>
1 couler,		<i>to flow.</i>
1 couper, - - à		<i>to cut.</i>
1 courber,		<i>to bend.</i>
ir. courir,	- - à	<i>to run.</i>
1 couronner,	- - de	<i>to crown.</i>
1 courtoiser,		<i>to court.</i>
1 coûter, - - à		<i>to cost.</i>
1 couver,		<i>to brood.</i>
ir. couvrir,	- - de	<i>to cover.</i>
1 cracher,	- - à	<i>to spit.</i>
ir. craindre,	- - de	<i>to fear, - - (subj.) de.</i>
1 crayonner,		<i>to draw.</i>
1 créer,		<i>to create.</i>
1 creuser,		<i>to hollow out.</i>
1 crever, - - de		<i>to burst.</i>
1 crier, - - à		<i>to cry.</i>
1 critiquer,		<i>to cavil.</i>
ir. croire,	- - - o.	<i>to believe,</i>
1 croiser,		<i>to cross.</i>
ir. croître,		<i>to increase.</i>
1 croquer,		<i>to scrunch.</i>
1 crotter,		<i>to dirt.</i>
2 croupir,		<i>to stagnate.</i>
1 crucifier,		<i>to crucify.</i>
ir. cueillir,		<i>to gather.</i>
ir. cuire,		<i>to cook.</i>
1 cultiver,		<i>to cultivate.</i>
1 curer,		<i>to cleanse.</i>

D.

1 Daigner,	<i>to deign,</i>	- - - o.
1 damner,	<i>to damn.</i>	
1 danser,	<i>to dance.</i>	
1 débander,	<i>to untie.</i>	
1 débarquer,	<i>to disembark</i>	
1 débarrasser, - - de	<i>to disengage</i>	
1 débarrer,	<i>to unbar.</i>	
ir. débattre,	<i>to debate.</i>	
ir. se débattre,	<i>to struggle.</i>	
1 débaucher,	<i>to debauch.</i>	
1 débiter,	<i>to set forth.</i>	

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 déborder,		<i>to unborder.</i>
1 se déborder,		<i>to overflow.</i>
1 débotter,		<i>to pull off one's boots.</i>
1 déboucher,		<i>to open.</i>
1 déboursier,		<i>to disburse.</i>
1 déboutonner,		<i>to unbutton.</i>
1 débrider,		<i>to unbridle.</i>
1 débrouiller,		<i>to clear.</i>
1 débusquer,		<i>to drive out.</i>
1 décacheter,		<i>to unseal.</i>
1 décamper, - - de		<i>to run away.</i>
1 décapiter,		<i>to behead.</i>
1 décéder,		<i>to die.</i>
1 déceler,		<i>to detect.</i>
1 décerner, - - à		<i>to decree.</i>
3 décevoir,		<i>to deceive.</i>
1 déchaîner,		<i>to let loose.</i>
1 se déchaîner (contre),		<i>to inveigh against.</i>
1 décharger, - - de		<i>to unload.</i>
1 décharnier,		<i>to pull off the flesh.</i>
1 déchausser,		<i>to pull the stockings off.</i>
1 déchiffrer,		<i>to decipher.</i>
1 déchiqueter,		<i>to snip.</i>
1 déchirer,		<i>to tear off.</i>
ir. déchoir, - - de		<i>to decay.</i>
1 décider,		<i>to decide, - - de or à.</i>
1 décimer,		<i>to decimate.</i>
1 déclamer contre,		<i>to inveigh against.</i>
1 déclarer, - - à		<i>to declare, - - - o</i>
1 décliner,		<i>to decay.</i>
		<i>to decline.</i>
1 décoiffer,		<i>to put off the head-dress.</i>
1 décoller,		<i>to unglue.</i>
1 décolorer,		<i>to discolour.</i>
1 décomposer,		<i>to dissolve.</i>
1 décompter,		<i>to discount.</i>
1 déconcerter,		<i>to put out, - - - de.</i>
1 décorer,		<i>to untwist.</i>
1 décorer, - - de		<i>to adorn.</i>
ir. découde		<i>to unsew.</i>
1 découler, - - de		<i>to flow.</i>
1 découper,		<i>to cut.</i>
1 découpler,		<i>to un couple.</i>
1 décourager,		<i>to discourage, - - de.</i>
ir. découvrir, - - à		<i>to discover.</i>
1 décréditer,		<i>to discredit.</i>
1 décréter,		<i>to decree, - - - de.</i>
1 décrier,		<i>to discredit.</i>
ir. décrire,		<i>to describe.</i>
ir. décroître,		<i>to decrease.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.			Before Infin.		
1	décrotter,			<i>to rub off the dirt.</i>		
1	dédaigner,			<i>to despise,</i>	-	- de.
1	dédier, -	-	- à	<i>to dedicate.</i>		
ir.	dédire,	-	- de	<i>to unsay.</i>		
1	dédommager,	-	- de	<i>to indemnify,</i>	-	- de.
ir.	déduire,	-	- de	<i>to subtract.</i>		
ir.	défaire,			<i>to undo.</i>		
4	défendre,	-	- à	<i>to forbid,</i>	-	- (subj.) de.
1	déférer,	-	- à	<i>to yield.</i>		
1	défier,			<i>to challenge,</i>	-	- de.
1	se défier,	-	- de	<i>to distrust.</i>		
1	défigurer,			<i>to disform.</i>		
1	défiler,			<i>to unstring.</i>		
2	définir,			<i>to define.</i>		
2	déflleurir,			<i>to let fall its blossoms.</i>		
1	défoncer,			<i>to stove a cask.</i>		
1	déformer,			<i>to put out of form.</i>		
1	défrayer,	-	- de	<i>to defray.</i>		
1	défricher,			<i>to till.</i>		
1	défriser,			<i>to uncurl.</i>		
1	dégager,	-	- de	<i>to disengage.</i>		
1	dégainer,			<i>to unsheath a sword.</i>		
2	dégarnir,			<i>to unfurnish.</i>		
1	dégeler,			<i>to thaw.</i>		
1	dégénérer,			<i>to degenerate.</i>		
2	dégourdir,			<i>to revive.</i>		
1	dégoûter,	-	- de	<i>to disgust,</i>	-	- de.
1	se dégoûter,	-	- de	<i>to be weary,</i>	-	- de.
1	dégoutter			<i>to trickle down.</i>		
1	dégrader,			<i>to degrade.</i>		
1	dégraisser,			<i>to take away the fat.</i>		
1	déguiser,			<i>to dissemble.</i>		
4	déjeuner,			<i>to breakfast.</i>		
ir.	déjoindre,			<i>to disjoin.</i>		
1	délacer,			<i>to unlace.</i>		
1	délaisser,			<i>to abandon.</i>		
1	délasser,			<i>to rest.</i>		
1	délayer,			<i>to dilute.</i>		
1	déléguer,			<i>to delegate.</i>		
1	délibérer sur,			<i>to deliberate.</i>		
1	déliier,	-	- de	<i>to untie.</i>		
1	délivrer,	-	- de	<i>to rescue.</i>		
1	déloger,			<i>to remove,</i>		
1	demander,	-	- à	<i>to ask for,</i>	(subj.) à or de.	
1	démanger,			<i>to itch.</i>		
1	démâter,			<i>to unmast.</i>		
1	démêler,			<i>to disentangle.</i>		
ir.	démentir,			<i>to give the lie.</i>		
ir.	se démettre,	-	- de	<i>to resign.</i>		
1	démeubler,			<i>to unfurnish.</i>		

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.		Before Imp.
1 demeurer,		to dwell, or to stay.	
2 démolir,		to demolish.	
1 démonter,		to dismount.	
1 démontrer - - à		to demonstrate.	
1 dénier,		to deny.	
1 dénommer,		to name.	
1 dénoncer, - - à		to denounce.	
1 dénoter,		to denote.	
1 dénouer,		to untie.	
1 dépacqueter,		to undo a bundle.	
ir. départir,		to distribute.	
ir. se départir,		to stray.	
1 dépaver,		to unpave.	
1 dépêcher, - - à		to despatch.	
1 se dépêcher,		to make haste,	- - de
ir. dépeindre, - - à		to describe.	
4 dépendre, - - de		to depend, - - de	
1 dépenser, - - à		to spend, - - à	
1 dépeupler, - - de		to depopulate.	
1 déplacer,		to displace.	
ir. déplaire, - - à		to displease, - (subj.) de.	
1 planter,		to transplant.	
1 déplier,		to unfold.	
1 déplier,		to unpleat.	
1 déplorer,		to lament.	
1 déplumer,		to take out the feathers.	
2 dépolir,		to unpolish.	
1 déposer, - - o.		to depose, - - o.	
1 déposséder, - - de		to dispossess.	
1 dépouiller, - - de		to strip.	
1 depraver,		to deprave.	
1 déprimer,		to depress.	
1 députer, - - à		to depute.	
1 déraciner,		to root out.	
1 déraisonner,		to talk nonsense.	
1 déranger, - - de		to disorder.	
1 dérégler,		to disorder.	
1 dériver, - - de		to derive.	
1 dérober, - - à		to steal.	
1 déroger, - - à		to derogate.	
1 dérouiller,		to get out the rust.	
1 désabuser, - - de		to undeceive.	
ir. désapprendre,		to unlearn, - - à.	
1 désapprouver,		to disapprove, - (subj.)	
1 désarmer,		to disarm.	
1 désavouer,		to disown, - (subj.) o.	
4 descendre, - - à		to take down, - - e.	
1 désennuyer,		to divert.	
1 désertir, - - de		to desert.	

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 désespérer,		<i>to despair, - - (subj.) de.</i>
1 déshabiller,		<i>to undress.</i>
1 se déshabituer,	- de	<i>to break off one's custom, de.</i>
1 déshonorer,		<i>to dishonour.</i>
1 désigner,	- - à	<i>to appoint.</i>
1 désirer,	- - de	<i>to long for, (subj.) o. or de.</i>
1 se désister,	- - de	<i>to give over.</i>
2 désobéir,	- - à	<i>to disobey.</i>
1 désobliger,		<i>to displease.</i>
1 désoler,		<i>to desolate, - - - de.</i>
1 désorienter,		<i>to put one out.</i>
1 désosser,		<i>to unbone.</i>
2 désaisir,	- - de	<i>to let a thing go.</i>
1 dessaler,		<i>to unsalt.</i>
1 dessécher,		<i>to dry up.</i>
1 desseller,		<i>to unsaddle.</i>
ir. desservir		<i>to clear up.</i>
1 dessiner,		<i>to sketch.</i>
1 dessouder,		<i>to unsolder.</i>
1 destiner,	- - à	<i>to design, - - - à.</i>
2 désunir,		<i>to disunite.</i>
1 détacher,	- - de	<i>to untie.</i>
ir. déteindre,		<i>to discolour.</i>
4 détendre,		<i>to unbend.</i>
1 déterminer,		<i>to determine, - - - à.</i>
1 se déterminer	- à	<i>to resolve upon, - - a.</i>
1 détester,		<i>to abhor.</i>
ir. détordre,		<i>to untwist.</i>
1 détourner,	- - de	<i>to divert, - - - de.</i>
1 détremper,		<i>to dilute.</i>
1 détromper,		<i>to undeceive.</i>
1 détrôner,		<i>to dethrone.</i>
ir. détruire,		<i>to destroy.</i>
1 dévaliser,		<i>to strip.</i>
1 devancer,		<i>to outrun.</i>
1 développer,		<i>to unfold.</i>
ir. devenir*,		<i>to become.</i>
1 déverrouiller,		<i>to unbolt.</i>
1 dévider,		<i>to unravel.</i>
1 deviner,		<i>to guess.</i>
1 dévoiler,	- - à	<i>to unveil.</i>
3 devoir,	- - à	<i>to owe, - - - o.</i>
1 dévorer,	- - à	<i>to devour.</i>
1 dévouer,	- - à	<i>to dedicate.</i>
1 dicter,	- - à	<i>to dictate.</i>
1 diffamer,		<i>to defame.</i>
1 différer,		<i>to differ, - - - de.</i>
1 digérer,		<i>to digest.</i>
1 dilater,		<i>to dilate.</i>
1 dîmer,		<i>to titha.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 diminuer,		<i>to decrease.</i>
1 dîner,		<i>to dine.</i>
ir. dire, - - - à		<i>to say, - - - de.</i>
1 diriger,		<i>to direct.</i>
1 discerner,		<i>to discern.</i>
1 discipliner,		<i>to discipline.</i>
1 discontinuer,		<i>to cease, - - - de.</i>
ir. disconvenir*, - de		<i>to disagree, - (subj.) de.</i>
ir. discourir, - - de		<i>to discourse.</i>
1 disculper, - - de		<i>to justify, - - - de.</i>
1 discuter,		<i>to discuss.</i>
1 disgracier,		<i>to turn out of favour.</i>
ir. disjoindre,		<i>to disjoin.</i>
ir. disparaître, - - de		<i>to vanish away.</i>
1 dispenser, - - de		<i>to excuse, - - - de.</i>
1 disperser,		<i>to scatter.</i>
1 disposer, - - à		<i>to set in order, - - à.</i>
1 disputer,		<i>to quarrel.</i>
1 disséquer,		<i>to dissect.</i>
1 dissimuler,		<i>to dissemble.</i>
1 dissiper,		<i>to dissipate.</i>
ir. dissoudre,		<i>to dissolve.</i>
1 dissuader, - - de		<i>to dissuade. - - - de.</i>
1 distiller,		<i>to distil.</i>
1 distinguer, - - de		<i>to discern.</i>
ir. distraire, - - de		<i>to distract</i>
1 divaguer,		<i>to ramble.</i>
2 divertir,		<i>to divert, - - - à.</i>
1 diviser, - - de		<i>to divide.</i>
1 divulguer,		<i>to publish.</i>
1 dogmatiser,		<i>to dogmatise.</i>
1 dominer,		<i>to sway.</i>
1 dompter,		<i>to subdue.</i>
1 donner, - - à		<i>to give, - - - à.</i>
ir. dormir,		<i>to sleep.</i>
1 doter,		<i>to give a portion.</i>
1 doubler, - - de		<i>to line, to double.</i>
1 douer, - - de		<i>to endow.</i>
1 douter, - - de		<i>to question, - (subj.)</i>
1 dresser,		<i>to make straight, - - à.</i>
2 durcir,		<i>to harden.</i>
1 durer,		<i>to last.</i>

E.

2 Eblouir,		<i>to dazzle.</i>
1 ébranler,		<i>to shake.</i>
1 écarter, - - de		<i>to drive away.</i>
1 échanger,		<i>to exchange.</i>
1 échapper, - de or à		<i>to escape.</i>

H

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infim.
1 échauffer,		<i>to warm.</i>
1 échouer,		<i>to run on shore.</i>
1 éclabousser,		<i>to spatter.</i>
2 éclaircir,		<i>to clear up.</i>
1 éclairer,		<i>to light.</i>
1 éclater,		<i>to burst out.</i>
1 s'éclipser,		<i>to disappear.</i>
ir. éconduire,		<i>to dismiss.</i>
1 écorcher,		<i>to skin.</i>
1 s'écouler,		<i>to flow out.</i>
1 écouter,		<i>to listen to, - - - o.</i>
1 écraser,		<i>to crush.</i>
ir. écrire,	- - à	<i>to write, - - - de.</i>
1 écrouter,		<i>to chip bread.</i>
1 écumer,	- - de	<i>to foam.</i>
1 édifier,	-	<i>to edify.</i>
1 effacer,	- - de	<i>to blot out.</i>
1 effectuer,		<i>to put in execution.</i>
1 effiler,		<i>to ravel.</i>
1 effleurer.		<i>to touch slightly.</i>
1 s'efforcer,		<i>to endeavour, - - de.</i>
1 effrayer,		<i>to fright, - - de.</i>
1 égaler,	- - à	<i>to equal.</i>
1 égorger,		<i>to cut the throat.</i>
1 élaguer,		<i>to eliminate.</i>
1 s'élancer sur,		<i>to leap upon.</i>
2 élargir,		<i>to widen.</i>
1 élever	- - à	<i>to raise, to educate.</i>
ir. élire,		<i>to elect.</i>
1 éloigner,	- - de	<i>to remove, - - de.</i>
1 embarquer,		<i>to embark.</i>
1 embarrasser,	- - de	<i>to perplex, - - de.</i>
1 embaumer,		<i>to embalm.</i>
2 embellir,		<i>to embellish.</i>
1 embraser,	- - de	<i>to set on fire.</i>
1 embrasser,		<i>to embrace.</i>
1 s'émerveiller,	- de	<i>to wonder at, - - de.</i>
1 emmenoter,		<i>to manacle.</i>
1 émonder,		<i>to prune.</i>
ir. émoudre,		<i>to sharpen.</i>
1 émousser,		<i>to blunt.</i>
ir. émouvoir,		<i>to move.</i>
1 empailler,		<i>to cover with straw.</i>
1 empaqueter,		<i>to pack up.</i>
1 s'emparer,	- de	<i>to seize upon.</i>
1 empêcher,		<i>to hinder, - (subj.) de.</i>
1 empeser,		<i>to starch.</i>
2 emplir,	- - de	<i>to fill up.</i>
1 employer,	- - à	<i>to employ.</i>
1 empoisonner,		<i>to poison.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 emporter,		<i>to carry away.</i>
1 s'emporter,		<i>to fall into a passion.</i>
1 s'empreser,		<i>to be eager,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
1 emprisonner,		<i>to put in jail.</i>
1 emprunter, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to borrow.</i>
1 encaver,		<i>to put in a cellar.</i>
1 encenser,		<i>to offer incense.</i>
1 enchaîner,		<i>to put in chains.</i>
1 enchanter,		<i>to charm,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
2 enchérir,		<i>to raise price.</i>
1 encourager,		<i>to encourage,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
<i>ir.</i> encourir,		<i>to incur.</i>
1 s'endetter,		<i>to run into debt.</i>
<i>ir.</i> s'endormir,		<i>to fall asleep.</i>
1 endurer,		<i>to suffer.</i>
1 enfanter,		<i>to bring forth a child.</i>
1 enfermer,		<i>to shut in.</i>
1 enfiler,		<i>to thread</i>
1 enflammer, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to set on fire.</i>
1 enfler, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to swell.</i>
1 enfoncer,		<i>to break open.</i>
<i>ir.</i> enfreindre,		<i>to transgress.</i>
1 enfumer,		<i>to smoke.</i>
1 engager, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to persuade,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
1 s'engager, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to take upon one's self,</i> - <i>à.</i>
1 engendrer,		<i>to beget.</i>
2 engloutir,		<i>to swallow.</i>
1 engraisser,		<i>to fatten.</i>
2 s'enhardir, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to grow bold,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
1 s'enivrer, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to make one's self drunk.</i>
<i>ir.</i> enjoindre, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to order,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
1 enlever, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to take away.</i>
1 s'ennuyer, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to be weary,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
2 s'enorgueillir,		<i>to be proud,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
<i>ir.</i> s'enquérir, - - - <i>de</i>		<i>to inquire.</i>
1 s'enraciner,		<i>to take root.</i>
1 enrager, - - - - <i>de.</i>		<i>to enrage,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
1 enregistrer,		<i>to register.</i>
1 s'enrhumer,		<i>to catch cold.</i>
2 s'enrichir, - - - - <i>à.</i>		<i>to grow rich,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
1 enrôler,		<i>to enlist.</i>
1 ensanglanter,		<i>to make bloody.</i>
1 enseigner, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to teach,</i> - - - - <i>à.</i>
1 ensementer,		<i>to sow.</i>
3 ensevelir,		<i>to bury.</i>
1 entasser,		<i>to heap up.</i>
4 entendre,		<i>to hear,</i> - - - - <i>o.</i>
1 euterrer,		<i>to bury.</i>
1 s'entêter, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to be infatuated,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
1 entraîner, - - - <i>à</i>		<i>to drag away,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infinit.
1 entraver,		<i>to fetter.</i>
1 entrelacer, - - de		<i>to intermingle.</i>
1 entremêler, - - de		<i>to intermix.</i>
1 entrer *,		<i>to get in.</i>
ir. s'entremettre, - de		<i>to interpose.</i>
ir. entreprendre,		<i>to undertake, - - - de.</i>
ir. entretenir, - - de		<i>to keep.</i>
ir. s'entretenir avec,		<i>to discourse with.</i>
ir. entrevoir,		<i>to have a glimpse.</i>
ir. entrouvrir,		<i>to open a little.</i>
2 envahir,		<i>to invade.</i>
1 envelopper, - - de		<i>to fold up.</i>
1 envenimer,		<i>to poison.</i>
1 envier, - - à		<i>to envy.</i>
1 environner, - - de		<i>to encompass.</i>
1 envisager,		<i>to look in the face.</i>
1 s'envoler,		<i>to fly away.</i>
ir. envoyer, - - à		<i>to send, - - - o.</i>
2 épaissir,		<i>to thicken.</i>
2 s'épanouir,		<i>to spring out.</i>
1 épargner, - - à		<i>to spare, - - - de.</i>
1 épeler,		<i>to spell.</i>
1 épicer,		<i>to spice.</i>
1 épier,		<i>to ear, to spire.</i>
1 épier,		<i>to spy.</i>
1 ép pointer,		<i>to blunt.</i>
1 époudrer,		<i>to wipe off the dust.</i>
1 épouser,		<i>to marry.</i>
1 épouvanter,		<i>to terrify, - - - de.</i>
1 éprouver,		<i>to try.</i>
1 épuiser,		<i>to exhaust.</i>
1 épurer, - - de		<i>to refine.</i>
1 équiper, - - de		<i>to equip.</i>
ir. équivaloir, - - à		<i>to be equal.</i>
1 ériger,		<i>to erect.</i>
1 errer,		<i>to ramble.</i>
1 escalader,		<i>to scale.</i>
1 escamoter, - - à		<i>to filch.</i>
1 escarmoucher,		<i>to skirmish.</i>
1 escompter,		<i>to discount.</i>
1 escrimer,		<i>to fence.</i>
1 escroquer, - - à		<i>to trick.</i>
1 espérer, - - de		<i>to hope, - - - o.</i>
1 espionner,		<i>to be a spy.</i>
1 s'esquiver,		<i>to steal away.</i>
1 essayer, - - à		<i>to try, - - - de.</i>
1 essuyer,		<i>to wipe off.</i>
1 estimer,		<i>to value, - - - o.</i>
1 estropier,		<i>to lame.</i>
2 établir,		<i>to establish.</i>

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm.
1	étaler, -	-	- à	to display.
1	étancher,			to quench.
ir.	éteindre,			to extinguish.
4	étendre,			to spread.
1	éternuer,			to sneeze.
1	étiqueter,			to title.
1	étonner,			to surprise, - - - de.
1	s'étonner,	-	- de	to wonder at, - (subj.) de.
1	étouffer,			to stifle.
2	étourdir,			to stun.
1	étrangler,			to stifle to death.
ir.	être,			to be, - - - à.
2	étrécir,			to make narrow.
1	s'étudier,			to endeavour, - à.
1	évacuer,			to evacuate.
1	s'évader,	-	- de	to steal away.
1	évaluer,	-	- à	to value.
2	s'évanouir,			to faint away.
1	s'évaporer,			to evaporate.
1	éveiller,			to awake.
1	éviter,			to shun, - - - de.
1	exagérer,			to exaggerate.
1	exalter,			to exalt.
1	examiner,			to inquire into, - - à.
1	exaucer,			to hear favourably.
1	excéder,	-	- de	to exceed.
1	exceller,			to excel.
1	excepter,	-	- de	to except.
1	exciter,	-	- à	to incite, - - - à.
ir.	exclure,	-	- de	to exclude.
1	excommunier,			to excommunicate.
1	excuser,			to excuse, - - - de.
1	exempter,	-	- de	to exempt, - - - de.
1	exécuter,			to execute.
1	exercer,	-	- à	to exercise, - - - à.
1	exhorter,	-	- à	to exhort, - - - à.
1	exiger,	-	- de	to require, - (subj.) de.
1	exiler,			to banish.
1	exister,			to exist.
1	s'expatrier,			to quit one's own country.
1	expédier,	-	- à	to despatch.
1	expier,			to atone.
i	expirer,			to expire, to die.
1	expliquer,	-	- à	to explain.
1	exposer,	-	- à	to expose.
1	exprimer,	-	- à	to express.
1	expulser,	-	- de	to turn out.
1	exterminer,			to exterminate.
1	extirper,	-	- de	to root out.
ir.	extraire,	-	de	to extract.

F.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infim.
1 Fabriquer,		<i>to manufacture.</i>
1 fâcher,		<i>to vex,</i> - - - de
1 se fâcher,	- - de	<i>to be angry,</i> (subj.) de
1 faciliter,	- à	<i>to facilitate.</i>
1 façonner,		<i>to fashion.</i>
ir. faire,	- à	<i>to make or to do,</i> - - o.
imp. falloir,		<i>to be necessary,</i> (subj.) de.
1 falsifier,		<i>to counterfeit.</i>
1 se familiariser,		<i>to grow familiar.</i>
2 farcir,	- - de	<i>to stuff.</i>
1 se farder,		<i>to paint.</i>
1 fatiguer,		<i>to tire,</i> - - - de.
1 favoriser,		<i>to favour.</i>
ir. feindre,		<i>to dissemble,</i> - - - de.
4 fendre,		<i>to split or cleave.</i>
1 fermenter,		<i>to ferment.</i>
1 fermer,		<i>to shut up.</i>
1 ferrer un cheval,		<i>to shoe a horse.</i>
1 se fier,	- - à	<i>to trust to.</i>
1 se figer,		<i>to congeal.</i>
1 figurer,		<i>to represent.</i>
1 se figurer,		<i>to fancy,</i> - - - o.
1 filer,		<i>to spin.</i>
1 filtrer,		<i>to filtrate.</i>
2 finir,		<i>to make an end,</i> - - de.
1 flamber,		<i>to blaze.</i>
1 se flatter,	- - de	<i>to flatter one's self,</i> - - de.
2 fléchir,		<i>to soften.</i>
2 flétrir,		<i>to wither, or tarnish.</i>
2 fleurir,		<i>to bloom.</i>
1 flotter,		<i>to float.</i>
1 fomentér,		<i>to foment.</i>
4 se fondre,		<i>to melt.</i>
1 forcer,	- - à	<i>to compel,</i> - - à or de.
1 forger,		<i>to hammer.</i>
1 se formaliser,	- de	<i>to find fault,</i> - - - de.
1 former,		<i>to form.</i>
1 fortifier,		<i>to strengthen.</i>
1 foudroyer,		<i>to storm.</i>
1 fouetter,		<i>to whip.</i>
1 fouler aux pieds,		<i>to trample upon.</i>
2 fournir,	- - à	<i>to furnish.</i>
1 frapper,	- - de	<i>to strike.</i>
2 frémir,	- - de	<i>to tremble,</i> - - - de.
1 fréquenter,		<i>to haunt.</i>
1 friser,		<i>to curl.</i>
1 frissonner,	- - de	<i>to shiver,</i> - - de.
2 froidir,		<i>to grow cold.</i>

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infin
1	froisser,			<i>to bruise.</i>
1	frotter,			<i>to rub.</i>
1	frustrer,	-	- de	<i>to disappoint.</i>
ir.	fuir, -	-	- de	<i>to shun</i>
1	fumer,			<i>to smoke.</i>

G.

1	Gager,			<i>to lay wagers.</i>
1	gagner,			<i>to win.</i>
1	galoper,			<i>to gallop.</i>
1	se gangréner,			<i>to gangrene.</i>
2	garantir,	-	- de	<i>to preserve.</i>
1	garder,			<i>to keep.</i>
1	se garder,	-	- de	<i>to beware, - - - de.</i>
2	garnir,	-	- de	<i>to furnish.</i>
1	garotter,	-	- de	<i>to tie fast.</i>
1	gâter,			<i>to spoil.</i>
1	geler,			<i>to freeze.</i>
2	gémir,			<i>to groan, - - - de.</i>
1	gesticuler,			<i>to be full of action.</i>
1	glacer,	-	- de	<i>to freeze.</i>
1	glaner,			<i>to glean.</i>
1	glisser,			<i>to slide.</i>
1	se glisser,			<i>to creep in.</i>
1	goûter,			<i>to taste.</i>
1	gouverner,			<i>to rule.</i>
2	grandir,			<i>to grow tall.</i>
1	gratter,			<i>to scratch.</i>
1	graver,			<i>to engrave.</i>
1	grêler,			<i>to hail.</i>
1	griller,			<i>to broil.</i>
1	griller,	-	- de	<i>to burn with impatience, - de.</i>
1	grincer les dents,			<i>to gnash the teeth.</i>
1	gronder,	-	- de	<i>to scold at, - - - de.</i>
2	grossir,			<i>to grow big.</i>
2	guérir,	-	- de	<i>to cure.</i>
2	se guérir,			<i>to recover.</i>
1	guider,	-	- à	<i>to guide.</i>

H.

1	Habiller,	-	- de	<i>to clothe, to dress.</i>
1	s'habiller,			<i>to dress one's self.</i>
1	habiter,			<i>to live in.</i>
1	s'habituer,	-	- à	<i>to get a habit, - - - à.</i>
ir.	haïr,			<i>to hate, - - - de.</i>
1	haranguer,			<i>to make a speech.</i>
1	hasarder,			<i>to venture, - - - de.</i>

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm.
1	se hâter,		<i>to make haste,</i>	- - de.
1	hériter,	- - de	<i>to inherit.</i>	
1	hésiter,		<i>to hesitate,</i>	- - à.
1	honorer,	- - de	<i>to honour.</i>	
1	humilier		<i>to humble.</i>	

I.

1	Idolâtrer,		<i>to worship idols.</i>	
1	ignorer,		<i>to be ignorant.</i>	
1	illuminer,		<i>to illuminate.</i>	
1	s'imaginer,		<i>to fancy,</i>	- - e.
1	imbiber,		<i>to imbibe.</i>	
1	s'immiscer,		<i>to intermeddle.</i>	
1	immoler,	- - à	<i>to sacrifice.</i>	
1	immortaliser,		<i>to immortalise.</i>	
1	impatiemter,		<i>to tire one's patience.</i>	
1	implorer,		<i>to implore.</i>	
1	importuner,		<i>to be troublesome.</i>	
1	imposer,	- - à	<i>to lay on.</i>	
1	imprimer,		<i>to print.</i>	
1	imputer,	- - à	<i>to impute,</i>	- - de.
1	incliner,	- - à	<i>to incline,</i>	- - à.
1	incommoder,		<i>to disturb.</i>	
1	incorporer,	- - à	<i>to incorporate.</i>	
1	inculper,		<i>to accuse,</i>	- - de.
1	inculquer,	- - à	<i>to inculcate.</i>	
1	indemniser,	- - de	<i>to indemnify.</i>	
1	indiquer,	- - à	<i>to show,</i>	- - de.
1	indisposer,		<i>to alienate.</i>	
1	infecter,	- - de	<i>to infect.</i>	
1	infester,		<i>to infest.</i>	
1	influencer,	- - de	<i>to influence.</i>	
1	informer,	- - de	<i>to inform.</i>	
1	infuser,		<i>to infuse.</i>	
1	s'ingérer,	- - de	<i>to intermeddle with,</i>	- - de.
1	inhumer,		<i>to bury.</i>	
1	injurier,		<i>to abuse.</i>	
1	innover,		<i>to innovate.</i>	
1	inonder,	- - de	<i>to overflow.</i>	
1	inquiéter,		<i>to trouble.</i>	
ir.	inscrire,		<i>to inscribe.</i>	
1	s'insinuer,		<i>to steal in.</i>	
1	insinuer,	- - à	<i>to insinuate,</i>	- - de.
1	inspirer,	- - à	<i>to inspire with,</i>	- - de.
1	instituer,		<i>to appoint.</i>	
ir.	instruire,	- - de	<i>to teach.</i>	
1	insulter,	- - de	<i>to insult.</i>	
1	intercéder,		<i>to intercede.</i>	
1	intercepter,		<i>to intercept.</i>	

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
<i>ir.</i> interdire,		<i>to interdict.</i>
1 s' interposer,		<i>to intermeddle.</i>
1 interpréter,	- - de	<i>to explain.</i>
1 interroger,		<i>to ask questions.</i>
<i>ir.</i> interrompre,		<i>to interrupt.</i>
<i>ir.</i> intervenir,		<i>to intervene.</i>
1 intimider,		<i>to fright.</i>
1 intituler,		<i>to entitle.</i>
1 intriguer		<i>to cabal.</i>
<i>ir.</i> introduire,		<i>to introduce.</i>
1 invectiver contre,		<i>to inveigh against.</i>
1 inventer,		<i>to find out, - - - de.</i>
2 investir, - - de		<i>to invest.</i>
1 inviter, - - de		<i>to invite, - - à or de.</i>
1 invoquer,		<i>to invoke.</i>
1 irriter,		<i>to exasperate.</i>

J.

1 Jardiner,		<i>to dress a garden.</i>
1 jeter, - - - à		<i>to throw.</i>
1 jeûner,		<i>to fast.</i>
<i>tr.</i> joindre, - - - à		<i>to join.</i>
1 jouer - - de or à		<i>to play upon.</i>
2 jouir, - - - de		<i>to enjoy.</i>
1 juger, - - - de		<i>to judge, - - - o.</i>
1 jurer, - - - à		<i>to swear, - - de or o.</i>
1 justifier, - - de		<i>to justify, - - - de.</i>

L.

1 Labourer,		<i>to plough.</i>
1 lacer,		<i>to lace.</i>
1 lâcher,		<i>to loosen.</i>
1 laisser, - - - à		<i>to leave, - - - o.</i>
1 lambrisser,		<i>to wainscot.</i>
1 lamenter,		<i>to bemoan.</i>
1 lancer, - - - à		<i>to fling.</i>
2 languir, - - de		<i>to languish.</i>
1 larder, - - de		<i>to lard.</i>
1 se laisser,		<i>to be weary, - - de or à.</i>
1 laver, - - - à		<i>to wash.</i>
1 légitimer,		<i>to legitimate.</i>
1 léguer, - - - à		<i>to leave by will.</i>
1 se lever,		<i>to rise.</i>
1 lier,		<i>to tie.</i>
1 se liquer contre,		<i>to enter into a league.</i>
1 limer,		<i>to file off.</i>
1 limiter, - - - à		<i>to limit.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 liquéfier,		<i>to liquefy.</i>
<i>ir.</i> lire, - - - à		<i>to read.</i>
1 livrer, - - - à		<i>to give up,</i>
1 loger,		<i>to lodge, to dwell.</i>
1 loucher,		<i>to squint.</i>
1 louer, - - - de		<i>to praise, - - - de.</i>
<i>tr.</i> luire,		<i>to shine.</i>
1 lutter contre,		<i>to struggle with.</i>
1 lutter,		<i>to wrestle.</i>

M.

1 Mâcher,		<i>to chew.</i>
1 maçonner,		<i>to build.</i>
2 maigrir,		<i>to grow lean.</i>
<i>ir.</i> maintenir,		<i>to maintain.</i>
1 maîtriser,		<i>to subdue.</i>
1 maltraiter, - - - de		<i>to use ill.</i>
1 mander, - - - à		<i>to send for, - - - de.</i>
1 manger,		<i>to eat.</i>
1 manier,		<i>to handle.</i>
1 manifester,		<i>to reveal.</i>
1 manquer,		<i>to miss.</i>
1 manquer, - de or à		<i>to want, to fail, - - - o.</i>
1 marchander,		<i>to cheapen.</i>
1 marcher, - - - à		<i>to walk.</i>
1 marier, - - - à		<i>to marry.</i>
1 se marier, - - - à		<i>to marry.</i>
1 mariner,		<i>to pickle.</i>
1 marquer, - - - à		<i>to mark.</i>
1 massacrer,		<i>to massacre.</i>
<i>ir.</i> maudire,		<i>to curse.</i>
<i>tr.</i> se méconnaître,		<i>to forget one's self.</i>
<i>ir.</i> méconnaître,		<i>to take for another.</i>
<i>tr.</i> médire, - - - de		<i>to slander.</i>
1 méditer,		<i>to meditate, - - - de.</i>
1 se méfier, - - - de		<i>to distrust.</i>
1 mélanger,		<i>to mix together.</i>
1 mêler,		<i>to mix.</i>
1 se mêler, - - - de		<i>to meddle with, - - - de.</i>
1 menacer, - - - de		<i>to threaten, - - - de.</i>
1 ménager, - - - à		<i>to spare.</i>
<i>tr.</i> mentir,		<i>to tell lies.</i>
<i>ir.</i> se méprendre,		<i>to mistake.</i>
1 mépriser,		<i>to despise.</i>
1 mériter,		<i>to deserve, - - - de.</i>
2 mésoffrir,		<i>to beat down price.</i>
1 mesurer, - - - à		<i>to measure.</i>
1 métamorphoser,		<i>to metamorphose.</i>

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm.
<i>ir.</i>	mettre, -	- - à	to put.	
1	meubler,	- - de	to furnish.	
2	meurtrir,	- - de	to bruise.	
1	miauler,		to mew.	
1	modérer,		to moderate.	
1	moissonner,		to harvest.	
1	molester,		to grieve.	
1	monter,	- - à	to get up, to take up.	
1	montrer,	- - à	to show.	
1	se moquer,	- - de	to laugh at.	
1	moraliser,		to moralise.	
<i>ir.</i>	mordre,		to bite.	
1	moucheter,		to spot.	
<i>ir.</i>	moudre,		to grind.	
<i>ir.</i>	mourir*,	- - de	to die.	
1	murer,	- - à	to wall up.	
2	mûrir,		to ripen.	
1	murmurer,		to mutter.	

N.

1	Nager,		to swim.	
<i>ir.</i>	naître*,		to be born.	
1	nécessiter,		to compel.	- - - à.
1	négliger,		to neglect,	- - - de.
1	négo cier,		to trade.	
<i>imp.</i>	neiger,		to snow.	
1	nettoyer,		to clean.	
1	nier,		to deny,	- - (subj.) o.
2	noircir,		to blacken.	
1	nommer,	- - à	to name.	
1	noter,		to note.	
1	notifier,	- - à	to let one know,	- - de.
1	nouer,		to tie.	
2	nourrir,	- - de	to feed,	- - - à.
1	noyer,	- - de	to drown.	
1	se noyer,		to be drowned.	
1	nuancer,		to shadow.	
<i>ir.</i>	nuire, -	- - à	to hurt.	

O.

2	Obéir,	- - à	to obey.	
1	objecter,	- - à	to object.	
1	obliger,	- - à	to oblige,	- de or à.
2	obscurcir,		to darken.	
1	obséder,		to beset.	
1	observer,		to observe,	- - - o.
1	s'obstiner,	- - à	to be obstinate,	- - - à.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infim.
<i>ir.</i> obtenir,	- - de	<i>to obtain,</i> - - de.
1 obvier, -	- - à	<i>to obviate.</i>
1 occuper,	- - à	<i>to employ,</i> - - à.
1 offenser,		<i>to offend.</i>
<i>ir.</i> offrir, -	- - à	<i>to offer,</i> - - de.
1 offusquer,		<i>to dim.</i>
1 ombrager,		<i>to shadow.</i>
<i>ir.</i> omettre,		<i>to omit,</i> - - de.
1 opiner, -	- - à	<i>to vote.</i>
1 s'opiniâtrer, -	- - à	<i>to be obstinate,</i> - - à.
1 s'opposer -	- - à	<i>to be against.</i>
1 opprimer,		<i>to oppress.</i>
1 opter,		<i>to choose.</i>
1 ordonner, -	- - à	<i>to order.</i> - - (subj.) de.
1 orner, -	- - de	<i>to adorn.</i>
1 orthographier,		<i>to spell.</i>
1 oser,		<i>to dare,</i> - - o.
1 ôter, -	- - à	<i>to take away.</i>
1 oublier,		<i>to forget,</i> - - de.
2 ourdir,		<i>to weave.</i>
1 outrager,		<i>to affront.</i>
<i>ir.</i> ouvrir, -	- - à	<i>to open.</i>

P.

1 Pacifier,		<i>to pacify.</i>
<i>ir.</i> paître,		<i>to graze.</i>
1 pallier,		<i>to palliate.</i>
1 panser,		<i>to dress wounds.</i>
1 paraphraser,		<i>to comment upon.</i>
<i>ir.</i> parcourir,		<i>to run over.</i>
1 pardonner, -	- - à	<i>to forgive,</i> - - de.
1 parier,		<i>to bet,</i> - - o.
1 parler, -	- de or à	<i>to speak,</i> - - de.
<i>ir.</i> paraître,		<i>to appear,</i> - - o.
1 parquer,		<i>to fold.</i>
1 parsemer, -	- - de	<i>to strew.</i>
1 partager, -	- - à	<i>to share.</i>
<i>ir.</i> partir *,	- - de	<i>to set out.</i>
<i>ir.</i> parvenir *,	- - de	<i>to arrive at.</i>
1 passer,		<i>to pass.</i>
1 patienter,		<i>to take patience.</i>
1 patiner,		<i>to skate.</i>
1 paver, -	- - à	<i>to pave.</i>
1 payer,		<i>to pay.</i>
1 pêcher,		<i>to sin.</i>
1 pêcher,		<i>to fish.</i>
<i>ir.</i> peindre,	- - à	<i>to paint.</i>
1 peler,		<i>to peel.</i>
1 pencher sur,		<i>to lean upon.</i>

Conjug.		Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm.
4	pendre,	-	- à	<i>to hang.</i>
1	pénétrer dans,			<i>to get into.</i>
1	penser à,	-	- à	<i>to think of,</i> - - - à.
1	percer,			<i>to pierce.</i>
4	perdre, -	-	- à	<i>to lose,</i> - - - à.
ir.	permettre,	-	- à	<i>to permit,</i> - (subj.) de.
1	persister,			<i>to persist,</i> - - - à.
1	persuader,	-	- à	<i>to persuade,</i> - - - de.
2	pervertir,			<i>to pervert.</i>
1	peser,			<i>to weigh.</i>
1	pétrifier,			<i>to petrify.</i>
1	peupler,	-	- de	<i>to people.</i>
1	piler,			<i>to bruise.</i>
1	piller,			<i>to plunder</i>
1	pincer, -	-	- à	<i>to pinch.</i>
1	piquer, -	-	- à	<i>to prick.</i>
1	se piquer de	-	- de	<i>to pretend to,</i> - - - de.
1	placer, -	-	- à	<i>to place.</i>
ir.	plaindre,			<i>to pity,</i> - - - de.
ir.	se plaindre,	-	- à	<i>to complain,</i> - (subj.) de.
ir.	plaire, -	-	- à	<i>to please,</i> - - - à.
1	planter,			<i>to plant.</i>
1	plâtrer,			<i>to plaster.</i>
1	pleurer,	-	- de	<i>to bewail, to cry.</i>
1	plier,			<i>to plait, to bend.</i>
1	plisser,			<i>to plait.</i>
1	plomber,			<i>to lead.</i>
1	plonger,			<i>to plunge.</i>
1	ployer,			<i>to fold up.</i>
1	poignarder,			<i>to stab.</i>
1	poivrer,			<i>to pepper.</i>
1	policer,			<i>to regulate.</i>
2	polir,			<i>to polish.</i>
1	pomper,			<i>to pump.</i>
1	ponctuer,			<i>to point.</i>
4	pondre,			<i>to lay eggs.</i>
1	porter, -	-	- à	<i>to carry,</i> - - - à.
1	poser,			<i>to lay.</i>
1	posséder,			<i>to possess.</i>
1	poudrer,			<i>to powder.</i>
ir.	poursuivre,			<i>to pursue.</i>
ir.	pourvoir,	-	- de	<i>to provide.</i>
1	pousser,	-	- à	<i>to thrust, to push,</i> - - - à.
ir.	pouvoir,	-	- à	<i>to be able,</i> - - - o.
1	pratiquer,			<i>to practise.</i>
1	précéder,	-	- de	<i>to precede.</i>
1	prêcher,	-	- à	<i>to preach,</i> - - - de.
ir.	prédire,	-	- à	<i>to foretell,</i> - - - o.
1	prédominer,			<i>to predominate.</i>
1	préférer,	-	- à	<i>to prefer,</i> - - - o.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm
1 préjudicier,	- - à	<i>to prejudice.</i>	
1 prélever,		<i>to deduct.</i>	
1 préméditer,		<i>to premeditate,</i>	- - de.
ir. prendre,	- - à	<i>to take.</i>	
1 préparer,	- - à	<i>to prepare,</i>	- - - à.
1 préposer,	- - à	<i>to set over.</i>	
1 présager,		<i>to portend,</i>	- - - o.
ir. prescrire,		<i>to prescribe,</i>	- - - de.
1 présenter,	- - à	<i>to offer,</i>	- - - à.
1 préserver,		<i>to preserve.</i>	
1 présider,		<i>to preside.</i>	
1 présenter,		<i>to present,</i>	- - - à.
ir. pressentir,		<i>to foresee.</i>	
1 presser,		<i>to press, or squeeze,</i>	- de.
1 présumer,	- - de	<i>to presume,</i>	- - - de.
4 prétendre,	- - à	<i>to pretend to, to design,</i>	- o.
1 prêter,	- - à	<i>to lend.</i>	
ir. prévaloir,		<i>to prevail.</i>	
ir. prévenir,	- - de	<i>to anticipate.</i>	
ir. prévoir,		<i>to foresee,</i>	- - - o.
1 prier,		<i>to pray,</i>	- - (subj.) de.
1 priver, -	- - de	<i>to deprive,</i>	- - - de.
1 procéder,	- - à	<i>to proceed.</i>	
1 proclamer,		<i>to proclaim.</i>	
1 procurer,	- - à	<i>to procure,</i>	- - - de.
1 prodiguer,		<i>to lavish.</i>	
ir. produire,		<i>to produce.</i>	
1 profaner,		<i>to profane.</i>	
1 proférer,		<i>to utter.</i>	
1 professer,		<i>to profess.</i>	
1 profiter,	- - de	<i>to improve.</i>	
1 projeter,		<i>to intend,</i>	- - - de.
1 prolonger,		<i>to prolong.</i>	
1 se promener,		<i>to walk.</i>	
ir. promettre,	- - à	<i>to promise,</i>	- - - de.
1 prononcer,	- - à	<i>to pronounce.</i>	
1 propager,		<i>to propagate.</i>	
1 prophétiser,		<i>to foretel.</i>	
1 proposer,	- - à	<i>to propose,</i>	- - - de.
ir. proscrire,	- - de	<i>to proscribe.</i>	
1 prospérer,		<i>to prosper.</i>	
1 se prosterner,	- - à	<i>to prostrate one's self.</i>	
1 protéger,		<i>to protect.</i>	
1 protester-contre,		<i>to protest.</i>	
ir. provenir *,	- - de	<i>to proceed.</i>	
1 publier,		<i>to publish,</i>	- - - o.
2 punir, -	- - de	<i>to punish,</i>	- - - de.
1 purger,		<i>to purge.</i>	
1 purifier,		<i>to purify.</i>	
1 se putréfier,		<i>to rot.</i>	

Q.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Inf.
1 Quadrupler,		<i>to quadruple.</i>
1 qualifier,		<i>to qualify.</i>
1 quereller,		<i>to scold at.</i>
1 questionner,		<i>to ask questions.</i>
1 quêter,		<i>to beg.</i>
1 quitter,		<i>to quit.</i>

R.

1 Rabaisser.			<i>to abate.</i>
1 raccommoder,			<i>to mend.</i>
1 racheter,	-	- de	<i>to redeem.</i>
1 racheter,			<i>to buy again.</i>
1 raconter,	-	- à	<i>to relate.</i>
2 se radoucir,			<i>to be appeased.</i>
2 raffermir,			<i>to strengthen.</i>
1 raffiner,			<i>to refine.</i>
2 rafraichir,			<i>to cool.</i>
2 se raidir,			<i>to grow stiff.</i>
1 raisonner,	-	- de	<i>to reason.</i>
2 ralentir,			<i>to relent.</i>
1 rallier,			<i>to rally.</i>
1 rallumer,			<i>to kindle again.</i>
1 ramasser,	-	- de	<i>to pick up.</i>
1 ramener,	-	- à	<i>to bring back.</i>
2 ramollir,			<i>to soften.</i>
1 ramper,	-	- à	<i>to crawl.</i>
1 rançonner,			<i>to ransom.</i>
1 ranger,			<i>to set in order.</i>
1 ranimer,			<i>to revive,</i> - - - <i>à.</i>
1 râper,			<i>to grate.</i>
1 rappeler,	-	- à	<i>to call again.</i>
1 rapporter,	-	- à	<i>to bring back.</i>
ir. apprendre,			<i>to learn again.</i>
1 rapprocher,	-	- de	<i>to draw near again.</i>
1 raréfier,			<i>to rarefy.</i>
1 raser,			<i>to shave.</i>
1 rassasier,	-	- de	<i>to satisfy,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
1 rassembler,			<i>to join together.</i>
1 rassurer,			<i>to encourage.</i>
1 ratifier,			<i>to ratify.</i>
1 ratisser,			<i>to scrape off.</i>
1 rattacher,	-	- à	<i>to tie again.</i>
1 raturer,			<i>to scratch out.</i>
1 ravager,			<i>to lay waste.</i>
2 ravir,	-	- de	<i>to ravish,</i> - - - <i>de.</i>
1 rayer,	-	- de	<i>to bar, to erase.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 réaliser,		<i>to realise.</i>
1 réassigner,		<i>to assign anew, - - - à.</i>
2 rebâtir,		<i>to rebuild.</i>
1 rebaptiser,		<i>to rebaptize.</i>
2 reblanchir,		<i>to wash again.</i>
2 rebondir,		<i>to rebound.</i>
1 reborder,		<i>to new border.</i>
1 reboucher,		<i>to stop again.</i>
1 rebrider,		<i>to bridle again.</i>
1 rebuter,		<i>to reject.</i>
1 recacheter,		<i>to seal up again.</i>
1 recéler,		<i>to conceal.</i>
3 recevoir, - - de		<i>to receive.</i>
1 rechanger,	- - de	<i>to change again.</i>
1 recharger,	- - de	<i>to load again.</i>
1 réchauffer,		<i>to warm again.</i>
1 rechercher,		<i>to seek again.</i>
1 réciter,		<i>to rehearse.</i>
1 réclamer, - - de		<i>to claim.</i>
1 recoller,		<i>to glue again.</i>
1 recommander, - à		<i>to recommend, - - de.</i>
1 récompenser, - - de		<i>to reward, - - de.</i>
1 recomposer,		<i>to compose again.</i>
1 recompter,		<i>to reckon again.</i>
1 réconcilier,		<i>to reconcile.</i>
ir. reconduire, - - à		<i>to wait upon one back.</i>
ir. reconnaître,		<i>to know again.</i>
ir. se reconnaître,		<i>to come to one's self.</i>
ir. reconquérir,		<i>to conquer.</i>
1 raconter, - - à		<i>to tell over again.</i>
1 recopier,		<i>to write fair again.</i>
ir. recoudre,		<i>to sew again.</i>
ir. recourir, - - à		<i>to have recourse.</i>
1 recouvrer,		<i>to recover.</i>
ir. recouvrir, - - à		<i>to new cover.</i>
1 récréer,		<i>to recreate.</i>
1 se récrier,		<i>to exclaim.</i>
1 récriminer,		<i>to recriminate.</i>
ir. récrire, - - à		<i>to write over, - - de.</i>
1 recruter,		<i>to recruit.</i>
1 rectifier,		<i>to rectify.</i>
ir. recueillir,		<i>to gather.</i>
1 reculer,		<i>to draw back.</i>
1 récuser,		<i>to except against.</i>
ir. redéfaire,		<i>to undo again.</i>
1 redemander, - - à		<i>to ask again, - - à.</i>
4 redescendre,		<i>to come down again.</i>
3 redevoir, - - à		<i>to owe still.</i>
1 rédiger,		<i>to put in order.</i>
ir. redire, - - à		<i>to say again - - de.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Inf.
1 redonner,	- - à	to give again.
1 redorer,		to new gild.
1 redoubler,		to new line.
1 redoubler,	- - de	to redouble.
1 redouter,		to dread, - - - de
1 redresser,		to make straight.
ir. réduire,	- - à	to reduce, - - - à
1 réédifier,		to build up again.
ir. refaire,		to do over again.
1 référer,	- - à	to refer.
2 réfléchir sur,		to reflect.
1 refluer,		to flow back.
4 refondre,		to melt again.
1 réformer,		to reform.
1 réfréner,		to repress.
2 refroidir,		to cool.
1 se réfugier,		to take sanctuary.
1 refuser,	- - à	to refuse, - - - de.
1 réfuter,		to refute.
1 regagner,		to get again.
1 régaler,	- - de	to entertain.
1 regarder,		to look upon, - - - o.
2 regarnir,		to furnish again.
imp. regeler,		to freeze again.
1 régénérer,		to regenerate.
2 régir,		to govern.
1 régler,		to rule.
1 régner,		to reign.
1 regorger,	- - de	to overflow.
1 regratter,		to scratch again.
1 regretter,		to lament, - - - de.
1 réhabiliter,		to rehabilitate.
1 rehausser,		to raise.
1 rejaillir,		to spurt up.
1 rejeter,	- - de	to reject.
1 réintégrer,		to restore.
ir. rejoindre,		to join again.
2 se réjouir,	- - de	to rejoice, - (subj.) de.
1 réitérer,		to repeat.
1 relâcher,		to slacken.
2 relargir,		to make wider again.
1 relaver,		to wash again.
1 reléguer,	- - à	to banish.
1 relever, -	- - de	to raise up again.
1 relier,		to bind.
ir. relire,		to read over.
ir. reluire,		to glitter.
1 remander,	- - à	to send back again, - - de.
1 remarier,	- - à	to marry again.
1 remarquer,		to observe.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.			Before Infinitive.		
1 remballer,				to pack up again.		
1 rembarquer,				to embark again.		
1 rembourser,				to reimburse.		
1 remêler,				to shuffle again.		
1 remener,	-	-	à	to lead back,	-	- o.
1 remercier,	-	-	de	to thank,	-	- de.
1 remesurer,				to measure again.		
1 remédier,				to remedy.		
ir. remettre,	-	-	à	to put again.		
1 remeubler,				to furnish again.		
1 remonter,			{ à	to get up again.		
			{ à	to take up again.		
1 remontrer,	-	-	à	to remonstrate.		
ir. remoudre,				to grind again.		
1 rempaqueter,				to pack up again.		
1 remplacer,				to replace.		
2 remplir,				to fill up.		
1 se remplumer,				to new feather.		
1 remporter,	-	-	à	to carry back.		
1 remprunter,	-	-	de	to borrow again.		
1 remuer,				to stir.		
ir. renaitre,	-	-	de	to be born again.		
1 rechaîner,				to chain up again.		
2 renchérir,				to raise.		
1 rencontrer,				to meet with.		
ir. se rendormir,				to fall asleep again.		
4 rendre,	-	-	à	to return.		
ir. rendre,	-	-	de	to new plaster.		
1 renfermer,				to shut up again.		
1 renfler,				to swell again.		
1 renforcer,				to fortify.		
1 rengainer,				to sheath.		
1 renier,				to disown.		
1 renoncer,	-	-	à	to renounce,	-	- à.
1 renouer,				to tie again.		
1 renouveler,				to renew.		
1 renter,				to endow.		
1 rentrer,	-	-	à	to come again.		
1 renverser,				to throw down.		
ir. renvoyer,	-	-	à	to send back,	-	- o.
4 répandre,				to spill. to spread.		
1 réparer,				to repair.		
ir. reparaître,				to appear again.		
2 répartir,	-	-	à	to reply.		
ir. repartir *,				to go back again.		
1 repasser,				to cross again.		
1 repasser,				to iron.		
1 repenser,	-	-	à	to remind,	-	- à.
ir. se repentir,	-	-	de	to repent,	-	- de.
1 répéter,	-	-	à	to repeat.		

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infia.
1 repeupler,	- - de	to repeople.
1 remplacer,		to place again.
1 replanter,		to plant again.
1 replier,		to fold again.
1 répliquer,	- - à	to reply.
1 replisser,		to plait again.
1 replonger,		to dip again.
1 repolir,		to polish again.
4 répondre,	- - à	to answer.
1 reporter,	- - à	to carry back.
1 se reposer,		to rest.
1 repousser,		to drive back.
ir. reprendre,	- - de	to chide, - - - de.
1 représenter,	- - à	to represent.
1 réprimander,	- - de	to rebuke, - - - de.
1 réprimer,		to repress.
1 reprocher,	- - à	to reproach, - - - de.
ir. reproduire,	- - à	to reproduce.
1 répudier,		to divorce.
1 répugner	- - à	to repugn, - - - de.
1 repurger,		to purge again.
1 réputer,		to repute, - - - o.
ir. requérir,	- - de	to require, - - - de.
1 réserver	- - à	to reserve.
1 résider,	- - à	to reside.
1 résigner,	- - à	to resign, - - - à.
1 résilier,	- - à	to cancel.
1 résister,	- - à	to resist.
ir. résoudre,		to resolve, - - de or à.
ir. se résoudre,	- - à	to resolve upon, - - - à.
1 respecter,		to respect.
1 respirer,		to breathe.
1 ressembler,	- - à	to resemble.
ir. ressentir,		to feel.
1 resserrer,		to tie tighter.
ir. ressortir,		to go out again.
ir. se ressouvenir,	- de	to remember, - - - de.
1 ressusciter,		to raise from the dead.
1 restaurer,		to restore.
1 rester,		to stop, - - - à.
1 restituer,	- - à	to return.
ir. restreindre,		to limit, - - - à.
1 résulter,	- - de	to result from.
1 résumer,		to recapitulate.
2 rétablir,		to re-establish.
1 retarder,		to put off.
ir. retenir,		to detain, - - - à.
1 retirer,	- - de	to draw back.
1 se retirer,	- - de	to withdraw.
1 retomber,		to fall again.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.		Before Infm.	
4 retordre,			<i>to twist again.</i>	
1 retoucher,			<i>to revise again.</i>	
1 retourner	{	à	<i>to return,</i>	- - - 2.
			<i>to turn again.</i>	
1 retracer,			<i>to draw again.</i>	
1 se rétracter,	-	- de	<i>to recant,</i>	- - - de.
1 retrancher,	-	- à	<i>to diminish.</i>	
1 se retrancher,			<i>to intrench.</i>	
2 rétrécir,			<i>to make narrow.</i>	
1 rétrograder,			<i>to retrograde.</i>	
1 retrouver,			<i>to find again.</i>	
1 réveiller,	-	- de	<i>to awake.</i>	
1 révéler,	-	- à	<i>to reveal.</i>	
1 revendiquer,			<i>to claim.</i>	
4 revendre,	-	- à	<i>to sell again.</i>	
ir. revenir*,	-	- à	<i>to come again,</i>	- - - o.
1 rêver,			<i>to dream,</i>	- - - o.
1 réverbérer,			<i>to reflect.</i>	
1 révéler,			<i>to honour.</i>	
ir. revêtir,	-	- de	<i>to invest.</i>	
ir. revivre,			<i>to revive.</i>	
2 réunir,	-	- à	<i>to reunite.</i>	
ir. revoir,			<i>to see again.</i>	
1 se révolter,			<i>to revolt.</i>	
1 révoquer,			<i>to repeal.</i>	
2 réussir,			<i>to succeed,</i>	- - - à.
1 rider,			<i>to wrinkle.</i>	
1 ridiculiser,			<i>to laugh at.</i>	
1 rimer,			<i>to rhyme.</i>	
1 réimprimer,			<i>to reprint.</i>	
1 riposter,	-	- à	<i>to reply.</i>	
ir. rire,	-	- de	<i>to laugh,</i>	- - - de.
1 risquer,			<i>to venture,</i>	- - - à or de.
1 rissoler,			<i>to roast brown.</i>	
1 river,			<i>to rivet.</i>	
1 rogner,	-	- à	<i>to cut, to pare.</i>	
ir. rompre,	-	- à	<i>to break.</i>	
1 ronfler			<i>to snore.</i>	
1 ronger			<i>to gnaw.</i>	
2 rôti,			<i>to roast.</i>	
2 rougir,			<i>to blush, to redden,</i>	- - - de.
1 rouler,			<i>to roll.</i>	
2 roussir,			<i>to grow red.</i>	
ir. rouvrir,			<i>to open again.</i>	
1 ruiner,			<i>to ruin.</i>	
1 se ruiner	-	- à	<i>to ruin one's self,</i>	- - - à.

S.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 Sabler,		<i>to gravel.</i>
1 sabrer,		<i>to cut with a hanger.</i>
1 saccager,		<i>to plunder.</i>
1 sacrer,		<i>to consecrate.</i>
1 sacrifier,	- - à	<i>to sacrifice, - - - à.</i>
1 saigner,		<i>to let blood.</i>
2 se saisir,	- - de	<i>to lay hold of.</i>
2 salir,		<i>to foul.</i>
1 saluer,		<i>to salute.</i>
1 sanctifier,		<i>to sanctify.</i>
1 saper,		<i>to sap.</i>
1 sarcler,		<i>to weed.</i>
1 satiriser,		<i>to satirise.</i>
ir. satisfaire,		<i>to satisfy, - - - de.</i>
ir. savoir,		<i>to know, - - - o</i>
1 sauter,		<i>to leap, to jump.</i>
1 sauver,	- - de	<i>to save.</i>
1 scandaliser,		<i>to scandalise, - - de.</i>
1 scier,		<i>to saw.</i>
1 sculpter,		<i>to engrave.</i>
1 sécher,		<i>to dry.</i>
1 seconder,		<i>to help.</i>
1 secouer,		<i>to shake</i>
ir. secourir,		<i>to relieve.</i>
ir. séduire,		<i>to seduce.</i>
1 séjourner,	- - à	<i>to stay in a place.</i>
1 sembler,	- - à	<i>to seem, - - - o.</i>
1 semer,		<i>to sow.</i>
ir. sentir,		<i>to feel, to smell.</i>
1 séquestrer,		<i>to sequester.</i>
1 serrer, - - - à		<i>to squeeze.</i>
ir. servir, - - - à		<i>to serve, - - - à.</i>
1 sevrer,		<i>to wean.</i>
1 siffler,		<i>to whistle.</i>
1 signaler,		<i>to make famous.</i>
1 signer,		<i>to subscribe.</i>
1 signifier,	- - à	<i>to notify, - - - de.</i>
1 solliciter,	- - à	<i>to solicit, - - - à or de.</i>
1 sommeiller,		<i>to slumber.</i>
1 sommer,		<i>to summon, - - - de.</i>
1 sonder,		<i>to sound.</i>
1 songer,	- - à	<i>to think, - - - à.</i>
1 sonner,		<i>to ring.</i>
ir. sortir, - - - de		<i>to go out, - - - de.</i>
1 se soucier,	- - de	<i>to care for, - - - de.</i>
1 souffler,	- - à	<i>to blow.</i>
ir. souffrir,		<i>to suffer, - (subj.) o.</i>
1 souhaiter,	- - à	<i>to wish, - (subj.) o.</i>

Conjug.	Before	Reg.	Ind.	Before Infin.
1 souiller,	-	-	de	<i>to dirty.</i>
1 soulager,	-	-	de	<i>to relieve.</i>
1 se souler,	-	-	de	<i>to cloy one's self.</i>
1 soulever,	-	-	de	<i>to raise.</i>
ir. soumettre,	-	-	à	<i>to submit,</i> - - - à
1 soupçonner,	-	-	de	<i>to suspect,</i> - - - de.
1 souper,				<i>to sup.</i>
1 soupirer,				<i>to sigh.</i>
ir. sourire,	-	-	à	<i>to smile.</i>
ir. souscrire,	-	-	à	<i>to subscribe.</i>
ir. soustraire,	-	-	à	<i>to subtract.</i>
ir. soutenir,	-	-	à	<i>to maintain,</i> - - - o
ir. se souvenir,	-	-	de	<i>to remember,</i> - - - de.
1 spécifier,				<i>to specify.</i>
1 statuer,				<i>to ordain,</i> - - - de.
1 stipuler,				<i>to stipulate.</i>
1 stupéfier,				<i>to stupefy.</i>
1 subdiviser,				<i>to subdivide.</i>
2 subir,				<i>to undergo.</i>
1 submerger,				<i>to sink.</i>
1 subordonner,	-	-	à	<i>to subordinate.</i>
1 suborner,				<i>to corrupt.</i>
1 subroger,				<i>to substitute.</i>
1 subsister,				<i>to subsist.</i>
1 substituer,	-	-	à	<i>to substitute.</i>
1 subtiliser,				<i>to subtilise.</i>
ir. subvenir,	-	-	à	<i>to relieve.</i>
1 succéder,	-	-	à	<i>to succeed.</i>
1 sucrer,				<i>to sugar.</i>
ir. suffire,	-	-	à	<i>to suffice,</i> - - - de.
1 suffoquer,				<i>to stifle.</i>
1 suggérer,				<i>to suggest,</i> - - - de.
ir. suivre,	-	-	à	<i>to follow.</i>
1 supplanter,				<i>to supplant.</i>
1 suppléer,	-	-	à	<i>to supply.</i>
1 supplier,	-	-	de	<i>to entreat,</i> - (subj.) de.
1 supporter,				<i>to suffer, to bear up.</i>
1 supposer,	-	-	à	<i>to suppose,</i> (ind. subj.) o.
1 supprimer,	-	-	de	<i>to suppress.</i>
1 supputer,				<i>to compute.</i>
1 surcharger,	-	-	de	<i>to overcharge.</i>
ir. surfaire,				<i>to exact.</i>
1 surmonter,				<i>to excel.</i>
1 surnager,				<i>to swim over.</i>
1 surpasser,				<i>to excel.</i>
ir. surprendre,				<i>to surprise,</i> - - - de.
ir. survivre,	-	-	à	<i>to survive.</i>
4 suspendre,	-	-	à	<i>to hang up.</i>
1 sustenter,				<i>to give sustenance.</i>
1 sympathiser,				<i>to sympathise.</i>

T.

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infin.
1 Tacher,		<i>to stain.</i>
1 tâcher,	- - - {	<i>to endeavour, - - - dc.</i>
1 tacheter,		<i>to aim at, - - - à.</i>
1 tailler,		<i>to speckle.</i>
ir. taire,		<i>to cut out.</i>
1 tamiser,		<i>to keep silent.</i>
1 taner,		<i>to sift.</i>
1 tapisser,		<i>to tan.</i>
1 tarder,		<i>to furnish with hangings.</i>
1 tarir,		<i>to delay, - - - à.</i>
1 tasser,		<i>to dry up.</i>
1 tâter, - - - à		<i>to heap up.</i>
L. taxer, - - - de		<i>to feel.</i>
ir. teindre,		<i>to tax, - - - de.</i>
1 tempérer,		<i>to dye.</i>
1 temporiser,		<i>to allay.</i>
4 tendre, - - - à		<i>to delay.</i>
ir. tenir, - - - à		<i>to tend, - - - à.</i>
1 tenter,		<i>to hold.</i>
1 tergiverser,		<i>to tempt, - - - de.</i>
1 terminer,		<i>to shift.</i>
1 terrasser,		<i>to terminate.</i>
1 tirer, - - - { à		<i>to throw down.</i>
1 toiser,		<i>to draw.</i>
1 tolérer,		<i>to shoot.</i>
1 tomber*,		<i>to measure.</i>
4 tondre,		<i>to tolerate.</i>
imp. tonner,		<i>to fall.</i>
1 toucher, - - - à		<i>to shear.</i>
1 tourmenter,		<i>to thunder.</i>
1 tourner, - - - à		<i>to touch.</i>
1 tournoyer,		<i>to plague.</i>
1 tousser,		<i>to turn round.</i>
1 tracer, - - - à		<i>to whirl about.</i>
ir. traduire, - - - de		<i>to cough.</i>
1 trafiquer,		<i>to draw.</i>
2 trahir,		<i>to translate.</i>
1 traîner,		<i>to trade,</i>
ir. traire,		<i>to betray.</i>
1 traiter,		<i>to drag along.</i>
1 tramer,		<i>to milk.</i>
1 trancher, - - - à		<i>to treat.</i>
1 tranquilliser,		<i>to plot.</i>
ir. transcrire,		<i>to cut off.</i>
1 transférer, - - - à		<i>to quiet.</i>
1 transformer,		<i>to transcribe.</i>
		<i>to transfer.</i>
		<i>to transform.</i>

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.			Before Indef.		
1	transgresser,			<i>to transgress.</i>		
1	transiger,			<i>to transact.</i>		
ir.	transmettre,	-	- à	<i>to transmit.</i>		
1	transpirer,			<i>to perspire.</i>		
1	transplanter,			<i>to transplant.</i>		
1	transporter,	-	- à	<i>to transfer.</i>		
1	transposer,			<i>to transpose.</i>		
1	transvaser,			<i>to decant.</i>		
1	travailler,	-	- à	<i>to work,</i>	-	- à.
1	traverser,			<i>to cross.</i>		
2	se travestir,			<i>to disguise one's self</i>		
1	trébucher,			<i>to stumble.</i>		
1	trembler,	-	- de	<i>to shiver.</i>		
1	tremper,			<i>to soak.</i>		
1	trépaner,			<i>to trepan.</i>		
ir.	tressaillir,	-	- de	<i>to start.</i>		
1	tricoter,			<i>to knit.</i>		
1	triompher,	-	- de	<i>to triumph,</i>	-	- de.
1	tripler,			<i>*to treble.</i>		
1	tromper,			<i>to deceive.</i>		
1	tronquer,			<i>to mutilate.</i>		
1	troquer,			<i>to barter.</i>		
1	trotter,			<i>to trot.</i>		
1	troubler,			<i>to trouble.</i>		
1	trouver,			<i>to find out,</i>	-	- à.
1	tyranniser,			<i>to oppress.</i>		

U.

1	Ulcérer,			<i>to ulcerate.</i>		
2	unir,	-	- à	<i>to unite.</i>		
1	user,			<i>to wear out.</i>		
1	user,	-	- de	<i>to make use of.</i>		

V.

1	Vaciller,			<i>to stagger.</i>		
ir.	vaincre,			<i>to vanquish.</i>		
ir.	valoir,	-	- à	<i>to be worth.</i>		
ir.	valoir mieux,			<i>to be better.</i>	-	- o.
1	vanter,			<i>to commend.</i>		
1	se vanter,	-	- de	<i>to boast,</i>	-	- de.
1	végéter,			<i>to vegetate.</i>		
1	veiller,	-	- à	<i>to watch,</i>	-	- à.
4	vendre,	-	- à	<i>to sell.</i>		
ir.	venir *,	-	- à	<i>to come to,</i>	-	- o.
				<i>to happen,</i>	-	- à.
				<i>to have just,</i>	-	- de.
1	venter			<i>to blow.</i>		
2	verdir,			<i>to become green.</i>		

Conjug.	Before Reg. Ind.	Before Infm.
1 vergette,		to brush.
1 vérifier,		to verify.
2 vernir,		to varnish.
1 vernisser,		to varnish.
1 vexer,		to vex.
1 vicier,		to viciate.
1 vider,		to empty.
2 vieillir,		to grow old.
1 violer,		to transgress, to violate.
1 viser, - - - à		to aim at, - - - à.
1 vitrer,		to glaze.
ir. vivre,		to live.
ir. voir,		to see, - - - o.
1 voler, - - - { à		to rob. - - - o.
1 vouer, - - - à		to fly, - - - o.
ir. vouloir,		to devote. (subj.) o.
		to be willing, - (subj.) o.



OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS. See page 84.

N. B. You must apply here, and always in future, the rules for the place of adjectives, and those for the gender and the plural of nouns and adjectives.

A. * I have a new riband; thou hast a hat; she has a new gown; we
neuf ruban chapeau m robe f
 have new stockings; you have new ruffles; they have a fine
des bas des manchette beau
 nosegay. — AA. I have had a good dog; thou hast had a new coat;
bouquet chien m habit
 we have had five birds. — B. I had a good master; thou hadst ambition;
oiseau m bon maître —f
 she had a good mistress; we had good brothers; you had good
maitresse de frère de
 sisters; they had good friends — BB. I had had some ripe apples;
sœurs de ami mûr pomme f
 thou hadst had some fine oranges; they had had a friend. — C. I had a
—f ami m
 large garden; he had a great house; we had two large gardens; you
grand jardin maison deux
 had two great houses; they had a young turkey for their dinner. —
jeune dindon pour dîner

* The letter A denotes the present tense of the indicative mood, B the imperfect, C the preterite definite, D the future, E the conditional, F the present of the subjunctive, G the imperfect, and H the imperative, and for compound tenses, the letter of the simple tense is double.

cc. Thou hadst had a pen ; we had had a rabbit. — d. I shall have a
plume f *lapin m*
white horse ; he will have a white waistcoat ; we shall have white
blanc cheval *veste f* *des*
curtains ; you will have a bad supper ; they will have a bad excuse.
rideau *mauvais souper* — f
— dd. I shall have had twelve pears ; thou shalt have had some shoes ;
poire f *soulier m*
they shall have had some grapes. — e. I would have delicious fruit ;
raisin m *un délicieux* —
she would have a delicious pear ; we would have a precious jewel ; you
poire *précieux joyau*
would have a precious stone ; they would have a bloody war. — ee.
pierre *sanglant guerre*
Thou wouldst have had (too much) pleasure ; we would have had
trop de plaisir
some good books ; they would have had some enemies. — f. That I
livre m *ennemi m* *que*
may have sincere friends ; that he may have elevated sentiments ; that
des — *ami* *des élevé* —
we may have delightful landscapes ; that you may have prepossessing
des délicieux paysage *des prévenant*
manners ; that they may have enlightened judges. — ff. That I may
manière *des éclairé* *juge*
have had a long peace ; that he may have had a good brother ; that
paix f *frère m*
you may have had a good grammar. — g. That I might have a sword,
grammaire f *épée*
a musket, and pistols ; that he might have a furnished house ; that
fusil *des pistolet* *garni maison*
we might have faithful servants ; that you might have a pretty dressing-
des fidèle domestique *joli cabinet*
room ; that they might have a beautiful drawing-room. — gg. That
de toilette *superbe salon de compagnie*
thou mightst have had health ; that we might have had zealous
santé *zélé*
friends ; that they might have had courage and virtue. — h. Have
ami m — *m* *vertu f* *s des*
new gloves ; let him have precious jewels ; let us have a skilful
neuf gant *qu'il* *des précieux bijou* *habile*
gardener ; have large buildings ; let them have a regular conduct
jardinier *pl* *de grand bâtiment qu'ils* *régulier conduite f.*

ETRE, to be. See page 86.

A. I am sick ; thou art young ; thou art learned ; he is unhappy ; she
malade *jeune* *savant* *malheureux*
is unhappy ; we are laborious ; you are modest ; they are lazy. — aa. I
— *rieux* — *te* *paresseux*
have been studious ; thou hast been too hasty ; he has been troublesome ;
studieux *trop prompt* *important*

she has been amiable; we have been fortunate; you have been bold;
aimable heureux hardi
 they have been grateful. — n. I was prudent; she was prudent; we
reconnaissant
 were discreet; you were studious; they were jealous; your sisters
-cret — dieux jaloux sœurs
 were jealous. — nn. Thou hadst been imprudent; they had been
 charitable; they had been frivolous. — c. I was his intimate friend;
— f frivole — me ami
 she was my greatest enemy; we were generous; you were ungrateful;
plus grand ennemie généreux ingrat
 they were cruel; your daughters were cruel. — cc. I had been
— filles
 steady; she had been vain; we had been pleased; she had been firm.
posé — satisfait ferme
 — d. I shall be a brave soldier; he will be a handsome man; she
*— soldat * bel homme*
 will be a handsome woman; we will be faithful to our country; you
** femme fidèle pays*
 will be in continual fears; they will be our mortal enemies. —
dans des — nul crainte f — tel ennemi
 dd. I shall have been attentive; thou shalt have been restless; she
appliqué inquiet
 shall have been obstinate; we shall have been whimsical. — e. I
opiniâtre capricieux
 should be ready; she would be troublesome; we should be very
prêt incommode très
 ridiculous; you would be too eager; they would be extremely
— le trop empressé extrêmement
 unpolite. — ee. Thou wouldst have been eager; we would have been
malhonnête empressé
 proud; they would have been distrustful. — f. That I may be so
fier défiant si
 impatient; that he may be obstinate; that we may be unreasonable;
— entêté déraisonnable
 that you may be humane and generous; that they may be guilty. —
humain généreux coupable
 ff. That I may have been envious; that thou may'st have been
envieux
 discreet; that they may have been kind. — g. That I might be grateful;
discret f doux reconnaissant
 that she might be careful; that we might be attentive; that you
soigneux — tif
 might be credulous; that they might be inconsiderate. — gg. That
— le indiscret
 I might have been sarcastic; that thou might'st have been guilty; that
moqueur coupable
 he might have been temperate; that we might have been humane;
sobre humain

that you might have been modest; that they might have been
modeste
 unreasonable. — *h.* Be benevolent; let him be firm and courageous; let
dérisonnable s bienfaisant qu'il ferme —geux
 us be reserved; be economical and temperate; let them be kind and
réserve pl économe sobre qu'ils doux
 indulgent.
compatissant.

THE FOUR REGULAR CONJUGATIONS.

FIRST CONJUGATION.

PARL-ER, to speak.* See page 90.

A. I love my father; thou adorest God; he alarms the country;
aimer père —rer Dieu —mer pays
 she dances very well; we announce good news; you water the
—ser très-bien annoncer de nouvelles arroser
 garden; they attack the enemy. — **B.** I did sweep the school; he did
jardin attaquer ennemi balayer école
 warm the bed; she did embroider her gown; we did seal the letter;
bassiner broder robe f cacheter lettre f
 you did begin your exercise; they did condemn my conduct. — **C.** I
commencer thème m condamner conduite f
 rewarded the servant; thou gavest thy word; he considered the
récompenser domestique m donner parole f considérer
 question; she comforted her mother; we satisfied our master; you
— consoler contenter maître
 corrected the faults; they unsealed the letter. — **D.** I will decide the
corriger faute décacheter lettre f décider
 question; thou wilt eat some turkey; he will declare war; she
— manger dindon m déclarer la guerre
 will breakfast with us; we will arm the wicked; you will undeceive
déjeuner avec armer méchant plur. dé tromper
 my sister; they will defer the punishment. — **E.** I would frequent
sœur différer punition fréquenter la
 good company; thou would'st discover the plot; he would engrave my
compagnie dévoiler complot graver
 arms; she would humble your pride; we would print a grammar;
armes humilier orgueil imprimer grammaire f
 you would forget injuries; they would reform their conduct. — **F.**
oublier les —re réformer

* The pupil must repeat the English words, which answer to every tense and person of the French verbs. This will be an easy task, if he remember, that to is the mark of the infinitive; was do-ing, the mark of the imperfect; shall or will, of the future; would, could, or should, of the conditional; may, of the present of the subjunctive; might, of the imperfect; and let, of the imperative.

That I may give this plaything to my sister; that thou may'st blame
donner joujou sœur blâmer
 her conduct; that he may propose a salutary advice; that we may
conduite f — ser — tairs avis
 admire the beauty of that landscape; that you may think of my
— rer beauté paysage penser à
 misfortunes; that they may forget an essential circumstance. — a.
malheur oublier — tiel circonstance
 That I might surmount the obstacles; that thou might'st relieve the
surmonter — soulager
 poor; that he might reinforce his party; that we might shut
passer m plur. renforcer parti fermer
 the shutter; that you might begin that charming history; that they
volet commencer — mant histoire
 might protect that bad man. — n. Sacrifice thy interest to the public
protéger méchant homme s intérêt
 good; let him unravel that business; let us finish this book; appease
bien qu'il débrouiller affaire f achever livre m appaiser
 his anger; let them avoid the danger.
colère f qu'ils éviter

SECOND CONJUGATION.

AG-IR, to act. See page 93.

A. I shorten the way; thou punishest the guilty; he softens the
accourir chemin coupable m plur adoucir
 heart; she liberates her slaves; we remove difficulties; you ap-
— cour pl affranchir esclave applanir les — té
 plaud what he says; they examine into the question. — a. I did
*— dir à ce qu'il dit approfondir **
 warn your brother of his danger; thou didst choose a good picture;
avertir — choisir tableau m
 he did build the fortifications of our town; we did banish the wicked
bâtir — ville bannir méchant
 from our society; you did choose a bad colour; they did convert the
société choisir mauvais couleur — tir
 impious. — c. I unfurnished the house; thou succeeded'st without
impie pl dégarnir maison réussir sans
 me; he demolished the wall; we disobeyed our master; you invaded
démolir mur désobéir à maître envahir
 their country; they filled the bottle with wine. — d. I shall finish
pays emplir bouteille de vin finir
 my work to-night; this tree will soon blossom; thou wilt not sleep
ouvrage ce soir arbre fleurir bientôt dormir
 (to-night); he will furnish this room; we shall succeed in our
cette nuit garnir chambre f réussir dans un
 dertaking; you will enjoy good health; they will languish a long
*treprise jouir d'une santé languir * long-*
 while. — e. I would feed the chickens; thou wouldst not blemish
temps nourrir poulet flétrir

thy name; he would betray my interest; we would weaken their
nom trahir intérêt pl affaiblir
 party; you would roast the hare; they would undergo the punish-
parti rôtir lièvre m subir puni-
 ment. — *r.* That I may pity his sorrows; that thou may'st return
tion compatir à chagrin revenir
 next Monday; that he may embellish his country-seat; that we
prochain Lundi embellir maison de campagne
 may soften our enemies; that you may enrich your family; that
fléchir ennemi enrichir famille
 they may sully their glory. — *a.* That I might cherish my relations;
ternir gloire chérir parent
 that thou might'st weaken thy memory; that she might soften that
affaiblir mémoire f attendrir
 unfeeling heart; that we might reflect on the shortness of life; that
insensible cœur réfléchir sur brièveté la vie
 you might shudder with horror; that they might submit to an
frémir d'horreur fléchir sous
 unjust yoke. — *h.* Punish thy scholars for their inattention; let him
injuste joug punir écolier de qu'il
 establish wise laws; let us rebuild our farm; polish those spoons;
établir des sage loi rebâtir ferme polir cuiller
 let them bless the providence.
qu'ils bénir

THIRD CONJUGATION.

REC-EVOIR, to receive. See page 95.

a. I perceive how that has happened; thou owest me five pounds;
concevoir comment cela est arrivé devoir à cinq livre f
 he perceives your intention; we owe ten pounds to your father; you
apercevoir — devoir dix livre
 receive a letter; they perceive the danger. — *b.* I did receive my
lettre f apercevoir — percevoir
 revenues; thou didst receive thy books; he did (owe still) a great
— au recevoir livre m redevoir
 sum; we did frustrate his hopes; we did owe two thousand pounds;
somme décevoir espérance devoir mille livre
 you did perceive his atrocity; they did receive his compliments with
apercevoir — té —
 contempt. — *c.* I received a visit from your sister; thou conceived'st
mépris visite f de sœur concevoir
 a good plan; she conceived great hopes; we perceived a thief; you
— m concevoir de apercevoir voleur
 received (yesterday) a great sum of money; they conceived a great
hier somme argent
 horror for his conduct. — *b.* I shall receive a letter from France
horreur de conduite f lettre f
 in a few days; thou shalt perceive his situation; he will owe me two
sous peu de jours apercevoir — f

hundred pounds at the death of my mother; we shall receive a
cents livre à mort
 reward for that brilliant action; you will easily perceive if they
récompense pour cette brillant — apercevoir aisément s'ils
 be guilty; they will conceive a new project. — *z.* I would receive
a coupables nouveau projet
 his advice; thou should'st receive thy rents; he should write to his
avis recevoir loyer m devoir écrire
 brother; we should perceive if he said the truth; you ought to do.
*frère apercevoir s'il dit vérité devoir *faire*
 your exercise: they would receive your presents with joy. — *r.* That
thème présent joie
 I may perceive the defects of that work; that thou may'st deceive.
défauts ouvrage décevoir
 thy friends; that he may owe more than he possesses; that we may.
ami m plus qu'il ne posséder a
 conceive a sentence which perhaps the author himself does not con-
*phrase f que peut-être auteur lui-même * ne*
 ceive; that you may receive unjust taxes; that they may receive
a pas percevoir des injusts impôt
 that company with great respect. — *a.* That I might (owe still)
compagnie grand —
 a trifle; that thou might'st (owe again) a large sum; that he might
bagatelle redevoir gros somme f
 deceive his friend by fine promises; that we might owe respect to
décevoir par de beau promesse du —
 his misfortunes; that they might conceive the depth of his plan;
malheur profondeur —
 that you might perceive the castle (from such a distance). — *z.* Re-
château de si loin
 ceive my thanks for all thy kindness; let him receive the interest
remerciement de toutes bonté pl qu'il percevoir intérêt
 of that money; let us conceive the importance of our duties; receive
argent — devoirs
 that stranger with affection; let them conceive how far their impru-
étranger — qu'ils jusqu'où
 dence will take them.
mener d

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

VEN-DRE, to sell. See page 97.

a. I expect company to-day; thou sell'st thy lands; he an-
attendre compagnie aujourd'hui terre f ré-
 swers impudently; we hear a great noise; you defend your country;
pondre impudemment entendre bruit défendre pays
 they spill human blood. — *z.* I did suspend my judgment; thou
répandre le humain sang —dre jugement
 did'st return his books; that dog did bite every body; we did spread
rendre chien mordre tout le monde répandre la

terror every where; you did aim in vain at that place; they did
terreur partout prétendre en — à —
 (take down) their bed.—c. I sold my house; thou lost'st thy
détendre lit
 money; he condescended to her desires; we melted the lead; you
argent —dre désir fondre plomb
 lost your time yesterday; they stretched their arms.—d. I will
perdre temps hier tendre les bras
 answer in few words; thou shalt twist the rope; he will hear what
répondre en peu de mots tordre corde entendre ce qu'
 they say; we shall lose our friends; you will shear your sheep;
disent perdre ami tondre brebis pl
 they will sell their country-house.—e. I would confound his pride;
maison de campagne. confondre orgueil
 thou wouldst expect thy friends; he would wait for an answer;
attendre ami attendre réponse f*
 we would defend that honest man at the hazard of our life; you
honnête homme à péril vie
 would render justice to every body; they would hang the rebela.
rendre à tout le monde pendre rebelle
 —f. That I may wait his return with impatience; that thou may'st
attendre retour avec —
 answer his insults; that he may confound these notions one with
répondre à — l'une
 another; that we may waste our time about trifles; that you
l'autre perdre temps à des bagatelle
 may throw the graces of expression into your speeches; that they
répandre — l' — dans discours
 may sell their incense to the pride of a blockhead.—g. That I might
encens orgueil sot
 aim at an honest end; that thou might'st hear my reasons; that
tendre à honnête but entendre raison f
 he might (come down) at the first order; that we might hear
descendre à premier ordre m
 the music of the new opera; that you might recompose a work so
musique f nouvel — refondre ouvrage
 full of errors; that they might correspond with their relations.
plein erreur —pondre parent
 —h. Hear their justification; let him (come down) immediately;
s — qu'il sur-le-champ
 let us expect our happiness from ourselves; ye sovereigns, make the
attendre bonheur nous-mêmes souverain rendre*
 people happy; let them answer your letters.
peuple m heureux qu'ils à lettres

 OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS. See page 99.

For brevity's sake we shall give only the first person of each tense; whenever all the others are formed regularly from this first person.

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN ER. 177

The learner must therefore refer to the following table, where he will find all the remaining terminations of the tenses in every verb when there is no irregularity.

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

SINGULAR.				PLURAL.		
	<i>Je</i>	<i>tu</i>	<i>il or elle</i>	<i>nous</i>	<i>vous</i>	<i>ils or elles</i>
A. { 1st conj.	e,	es,	e ;	ons	es,	ent.
{ 2d conj.	a,	a,	t ;			

IMPERFECT.

B.	ais,	ais,	ait ;	ions.	iez,	aient.
----	------	------	-------	-------	------	--------

PRETERITE.

C. { 1st conj.	ai,	as,	a ;	âmes,	âtes,	èrent.
{ 2d conj.	a,	a,	t ;	mes,	tes,	rent.

FUTURE.

D.	rai,	ras,	ra ;	rons,	rez,	ront.
----	------	------	------	-------	------	-------

CONDITIONAL.

E.	rais,	rais,	rait ;	rions,	riez,	raient.
----	-------	-------	--------	--------	-------	---------

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

F.	e,	es,	e ;	ions,	iez,	ent.
----	----	-----	-----	-------	------	------

IMPERFECT.

G. { 1st conj.	asse,	asses,	ât ;	assions,	assiez,	assent.
{ 2d conj.	ase,	ases,	t ;	ssions,	ssiez,	ssent.

IMPERATIVE.

H. { 1st conj.	e,	e ;	} ons,	es,	ent.
{ 2d conj.	a,	e ;			

N. B. When the letters *d*, *t*, or *c*, are in the root of the present tense, they receive no addition in the third person singular.

The irregular verbs are classed by groups, according to the termination of their infinitive mood.

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN ER.

See page 99. to 120

- A. I go every day to the park ; he sends back to you your books ;
tous les jours *parc*

we go to-night to the play; they go to dine (out of town).—*a.* I
*ce soir comédie * diner à la campagne*
 (was going) (to your house) when I met you.—*c.* We went yes-
chez vous quand ai rencontré
 terday to see a review.—*d.* He will go to Richmond next week;
** voir revue la prochaine semaine f*
 we shall send succour to our allies; you will go (to-morrow) to
du secours allié
 fetch my coat; they will (send back) our horses.—*e.* He would go
habit cheval
 without me; you would send too little money.—*f.* That we may
sans trop peu d'argent
 go into the wood; that they may send me my razors.—*g.* That
dans bois rasoir
 she might dismiss her chambermaid; that we might go to church.
femme de chambre l'église
 —*h.* Go to school; let us go to Vauxhall; send your children
sing. l'école à enfant
 (to take a walk).
à la promenade

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN IR.

a. I acquire every day new knowledge; he collects a
acquérir tous les jours de nouveau connaissance pl recueillir
 selection of useful books; that water boils too fast; we (have recourse)
choix m utile livre eau bouillir trop fort recourir
 to your generosity; you gather fruits which are not ripe; they
générosité cueillir des — mûr
 clothe all the poor of their parish.—*b.* I did incur the hatred of
revêtir pauvre pl paroisse encourir haine f
 that cruel man; that affair required all your attention; we did
 — *affaire f requérir* —
 clothe all the orphans of our neighbourhood; you did inquire about
vêtir orphelin voisinage s'enquérir de
 idle stories; they were dying with fear.—*c.* I ran at his voice;
vain histoire se mourir de peur accourir à voir
 Alexander conquered a great part of Asia; we ran away at the
conquérir partie l'Asie s'enfuir à
 first appearance of danger; you did not succour him in time;
premier apparence — secourir à temps
 they died last year.—*d.* I shall flee from bad companies; he will
*mourir dernier l'année fuir * les mauvais compagnies*
 discourse upon the immortality of the soul; we shall assault the
discourir sur — té âme assaillir
 enemy to-morrow in their entrenchments; by your imprudence,
ennemi pl demain dans retranchement par —
 will you not concur to the ruin of your brother? they will receive
concourir ruine frères accueillir

you with kindness. — x. I would (run over) all that province; he
avec bonté parcourir — f
 would start with joy; we should run faster than your friend; you
tressaillir de joie courir plus vite que ami
 would incur the displeasure of your parents; the would (throw off
encourir disgrâce — se dévêtir
 some clothing) before summer. — y. That I may reap corn
avant l'été recueillir du blé
 and wine for two years; have a care that the milk do not
*du vin pour deux ans H * soigner lait **
 (boil again); that we may request that favour from you; that you
rebouillir requérir faveur
 may flee bad example; that they may die in the arms of their
le mauvais exemple dans bras
 friends. — a. That I might run after chimæras; that he might
après des chimères
 collect the fruit of his labours; that we might start with fear; that
— travail de peur
 you might clothe yourself more fashionably; that those ladies might
*se vêtir * plus à la mode dame*
 acquire a general esteem by their modesty. — n. Gather these
l'estime f — tis
 flowers and fruits for thy sisters; let him run away rather than
fleur ces — pour sœur plutôt que
 (expose himself) to perish; let us run over the career of life with
de s'exposer périr carrière la vie avec
 patience and resignation; inquire about that event; let them run
— — de événement accourir
 at the voice of that honest man and assist him.
à voix honnête qu'ils

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN MIR, TIR, VIR.

A. I consent to the marriage of my son; she (tells a falsehood)
consentir mariage fils mentir
 as often as she opens her mouth; we (set out) for France to-morrow;
toutes les fois qu'elle ouvre la bouche partir pour la — demain
 you apprehend misfortunes before they come; they (lull asleep) the
pressentir les malheurs avant qu'ils arrivent endormir
 children. — B. I did sleep very well; he did smell very bad; we did
enfant dormir sentir très-mauvais
 serve our country; you did (go out) before me; they did feel the
servir pays sortir avant moi ressentir
 effects of his anger. — c. I slept very well yesterday; he felt his
effet colère f hier sentir
 misfortune; we consented to pay your father; you (went out)
malheur à payer père
 without my leave; they (went out again) as soon as they were returned.
sans permission ressortir aussi-tôt revenir

— d. I shall (go out) to-morrow if it be fine weather; he will serve
demain s'il fait temps servir
 his friend; we shall smell the dinner when it is ready; you will con-
ami diner quand il sera prêt
 sent (to go there); they will (set out) to-morrow for London. —
à y aller partir pour Londres
 e. I would contradict that report; he would sleep immediately; we
démentir rapport sur-le-champ
 should injure you more than serve you; I thought you would
vous desservir plus que nous ne vous servir e croyais que
 (set out again) before him; the children would sleep. — f. That I
avant lui enfant
 may consent to that bargain; that he may belie his character; that
marché démentir caractère m
 we may (clear the table) before we (go out); that you may sleep
desservir avant que de f
 all night; that they may wheedle that credulous man by vain
toute la nuit endormir crédule par de —
 promises. — g. That I might (set out) sooner than I thought; that
promesse plus tôt que je ne pensais
 he might (tell a falsehood) designedly; that we might foresee your
mentir de dessein prémédité pressentir
 designs; that you might serve me with more zeal; that they might
dessein avec plus de zèle
 feel the horror of their situation. — h. (Be sensible of) all my good-
sentir l'horreur — sentir toute bonté
 ness to thee; let him (sleep again) for a few hours; let us (go
*envers toi qu'il redormir * * quelques heures*
 out again) (as soon as possible); consent to be miserable rather
au plus tôt — plutôt
 than to offend God; let them (go out) when they will.
que d'offenser Dieu qu'ils quand voudront

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN FRIR, VRIR.

a. I offer my services to your father; my cousin suffers (very
offrir — m souffrir beau-
 much); we discover your design; they open the window. — b. I
coup découvrir dessein ouvrir fenêtre f
 did suffer with patience; he did offer too little; we did (open a little)
souffrir avec — trop peu entr'ouvrir
 the door; you did undervalue that stuff too much; they did renew all
porte f mésoffrir trop de cette étoffe rouvrir toutes
 the wounds of my heart. — c. I discovered his malice; he suffered
plaie cœur découvrir — f
 with much courage; we afforded our assistance to your brother;
avec beaucoup de — secours pl frère
 you covered the table with money; they (covered again) the bed. —
couvrir — f d'argent recouvrir lit

d. I shall suffer more than you think; he will discover the fraud;
plus que vous ne pensez *fraude f*
 we will open our heart to our father; they will offer a great sum of
cœur *grand somme*
 money. — e. I would discover the snare; he would cover that man
argent *piège* *couvrir*
 with filth; we should (open again) the shop: you would (cover again)
d'ordure *rouvrir* *boutique f* *recouvrir*
 this book; they would (open a little) the window. — f. That I may
livre m *entr'ouvrir* *fenêtre f*
 discover the plot formed against me; that he may offer a great sum
complot formé contre *somme*
 for that land; that we may suffer with patience; that you may open
de *terre* *avec* —
 your heart to your friends; that they may (open a little) their eyes.
cœur *ami* *les yeux*
 — g. That I might (open again) that trunk; that she might discover
malle
 all his perversity; that we might suffer your ill treatment;
toute — *té* *mauvais traitement*
 that you might offer to (set off) with him; that they might cover
de *partir avec lui*
 him with confusion. — h. (Cover again) this pot; let him suffer
de — *s* — *qu'il*
 without complaining; let us uncover the roof of my house; (open
sans se plaindre *découvrir* *toit* *maison*
 again) the coach; let them offer my thanks to the minister.
carrosse qu'ils *remercement* — *tre*

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN ENIR.

A. I hold my book; she comes to see us every fortnight; we agree
tenir *livre m* *venir * voir* *tous les quinze jours* *convenir*
 with you that he was in the wrong; you become an honest man;
*qu'il avait * * tort* *devenir * honnête*
 these horses belong to my father. — a. I did maintain the fact; he
cheval appartenir *soutenir* *fait*
 did obtain a good place; we did return home; you did detain my
obtenir — *revenir à la maison* *détenir*
 son; they did retain a part of the money. — c. I disowned what he said;
fil *retenir* *partie* *argent* *disconvenir de ce qu'il dit*
 he maintained discipline in the army; we restrained the mob; you
 — *tenir la* — *f* *dans* *armée* *contenir* *populace*
 interposed in the affair; they kept their promises, — d. I shall
intervenir dans *affaire* *tenir* *promesses*
 obtain the consent of the king; she will return to-night from town;
obtenir consentement *roi* *revenir ce soir de la ville*
 we shall attain our end; you will support your rank; they will return
parvenir à *but* *soutenir* *rang* *revenir*

in a few days. — *E*. I would maintain my family; he would become
sous peu de jours *entretenir* *famille* *devenir*
 a learned man; you would detain the captain; they would obtain
 * *savant* *détenir* *capitaine* *obtenir*
 what they ask. — *F*. That I may relieve the wants of that unfortunate
ce qu' demander *subvenir aux besoin* *malheureux*
 family; that he may deceive his judges; that we may prevent the
famille *circonvenir* *juges* *prévenir*
 bad effects of the prejudices of their infancy; that you may agree
mauvais effet *préjugé* *enfance* *convenir*
 that my reasons are better than yours; that they may attain the
raison *meilleur que* *parvenir à*
 highest pitch of glory. — *G*. That I might obtain better terms from
plus haut comble m gloire *de* *condition de*
 him; that she might become more prudent, that we might sustain
devenir plus — *soutenir*
 the weight of affliction with courage; that you might (come back)
poids *l'* — *avec* — *revenir*
 before the end of this month; that they might detain him till the
avant *fin* *mois* *retenir* *jusqu'au*
 beginning of next week. — *H*. Keep thy word; let him be-
commencement la prochain semaine *f* *tenir* *parole* *f* *qu'il*
 come learned; let us prevent the mischiefs which could proceed from
instruit *mal pl* *pourraient provenir de*
 his imprudence; confess that you return too late; let them support
 — *convenir que* *A* *trop tard* *qu'ils soutenir*
 the part of the innocent.
parti — *pl*

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN OIR.

A. I (have a glimpse of) something shining under the bed;
entrevoir *quelque chose de brillant* *sous* *lit*
 thou (art not) better than thy brother; the spring which moves
ne valoir pas mieux que *ressort qui mouvoir*
 the machine is very simple; it is necessary to practise virtue, if we
 — *f* *fort* — * *pratiquer la vertu si l'on*
 wish to be happy; we can be very useful to you on that
vouloir *98 A* *heureux* *pouvoir* *très utile* * *dans*
 occasion; you do not know your lesson; they see that they were
 — * *savoir* *leçon* *voir* *s'étaient*
 mistaken. — *N*. I did foresee that you would not succeed; it did rain
trompés *prévoir* *réussir* *x*
 yesterday; we could not (set off) sooner; you did prevail over us;
hier *pouvoir* *partir plus tôt* *prévaloir sur*
 they did (stir up) the passions of the audience. — *C*. I foresaw the
émouvoir *auditeur pl*
 dangerous consequences of that step; he (sat down) under the shade
dangereux — *démarche* *f* *s'asseoir* *à* *ombre*

of a tree; we revised his work before it was printed; you provided
arbre m revoir ouvrage avant qu'on l'imprimât pourvoir
 for the safety of your house; the judges did (put off the execution of
à sûreté maison juges surseoir —
 the arrest that they had decreed. — D. I shall know how to
*arrêt B rendu * **
 remunerate you for your diligence; (he shall suffer for it); we shall
récompenser de — il me le revaloir
 (sit down again) when they are gone; you will see better from this
se rasseoir quand D partis mieux
 place; their apology will be equivalent to a refusal. — E. I would
— excuse pl équivaloir refus vouloir
 with all my heart oblige you in that affair: the king would promote
de cœur — ger affaire f roi promouvoir
 him to a higher office, if he would only seem to wish
*plus haut charge f. s'il vouloir à seulement paraître * désirer*
 for it; we should (put off) the pursuit of our designs; you would
** la surseoir poursuite f dessein*
 move the heart of that unfeeling man; they would provide for our
émouvoir insensible à
 wants. — F. That I may prevail upon his hard-heartedness; I do not
besoin sur la dureté de son cœur
 think that it will rain to-day; that we may see again those happy
penser F aujourd'hui revoir heureux
 days; that you may move that stone; that their estates may be
jour pierre terres
 equivalent to ours. — G. That I might sit down among his judges;
s'asseoir parmi juge
 that it might be necessary to ask his pardon; that we
*falloir * lui demander * —*
 might comfort him; that you might know where to find him; that
*pouvoir consoler où * trouver le*
 those stockings might (be good for nothing). — H. See the conse-
bas ne valoir rien —
 quences of thy folly; let him provide for the happiness of his
folie à bonheur
 children; let us foresee the danger; (sit down) by me; let
enfant — s'asseoir auprès de
 them know three or four pages of their catechism before dinner.
trois ou quatre — catéchisme avant le dîner.

FIRST EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN AIRE.

A. I do no harm; she milks her cows; we satisfy our masters;
ne faire pas de mal traire vache satisfaire maitre
 you (ask too much) for that meadow; they extract all the finest
*surfaire * prairie extraire plus beaux*
 passages of that work. — B. I was undoing all the seams of my
— ouvrage défaire toutes couture

gown; he distracted his school-fellows; we subtracted the fourth of
robe f distraire camarades soustraire quart
 the sum; you did fine-draw the tapestry; they did attract the birds.
somme rentrer tapisserie attirer oiseaux
 — c. I (made again) a journey to Paris; he (got rid) of the false
refaire le voyage de — se défaire faux
 opinion he had conceived of their merit; we (undid again) five or
— qu'il a conçue mérite m cinq ou
 six times the same hem; you made a great mistake; they mimicked
— fois même ourlet méprise f contrefaire
 the singularities of that (young lady). — d. I shall redeem that land;
ridicule demoiselle retraire terre
 he will abstract from those bodies all the accessory qualities; we
abstraire corps accessoire —té
 shall satisfy you (as much as) we can; you will not withdraw those
satisfaire autant que pouvoir d soustraire
 guilty persons from the rigour of the laws; they will not distract me
*coupable * à rigueur loi distraire*
 from my studies. — e. I would not do it for (any thing) in the
étude ne le pour rien à
 world; she would fine-draw her gown; we would withdraw our
monde m robe f soustraire
 pupils from the dangers of bad companies; you would extract the
élève à — des mauvais compagnie extraire
 salts of these plants; they would distract us by their prattle. —
sel plante par babil
 f. That I may (ask too much) for that muslin; that salt may attract
** mousseline f le sel*
 pigeons; that we may satisfy you in (every thing); that you may
les — en tout
 not (get rid) of your prejudices; that they may not do again their
se défaire préjugé refaire
 exercises. — g. That I might not (undo again) my work; that he
thème redéfaire ouvrage
 might not (ask too much) for his goods; that we might (take again)
** marchandise refaire*
 a walk; that you might not mimic every body; that they might not
promenade tout le monde
 make any noise. — h. Milk thy goats; let us satisfy our parents;
de bruit chèvre —
 pay more attention to your writing.
faire plus de — écriture.

SECOND EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN AIRE.

A. I please all the family; he (is silent) when I speak; we
plaire à tout famille se taire quand A
 (are displeased) in that situation; you (take pleasure) in contradicting;
nous déplaire dans — vous plaire à contredire

they delight in their works. — a. I did (remain silent) against my
se complaire *ouvrage* *me taire* *contre*
 wish; he did please everybody; we did displease the governor; you
gré *à tout le monde* *déplaire au gouverneur*
 did delight in your vices; they did conceal the truth. — c. I
vous complaire — *taire* *vérité*
 (was pleased) with doing that; he displeased by his haughtiness;
me plaire *à faire cela* *arrogance*
 we (remained silent) (in spite of ourselves); you displeased your
nous taire *malgré nous* *à*
 uncle; they delighted in tormenting me. — d. (I will be silent);
oncle *se plaire* *à me tourmenter* *me taire*
 he will please the king; we shall (be pleased) with him; you will
au roi *nous plaire avec lui*
 displease my mother; these books will please me. — e. I would be
déplaire à *livre*
 pleased with reading; his friend would displease me; we would
me plaire à lire *ami*
 conceal that event; you would (be pleased) with talking with him;
taire *événement* *vous plaire à converser avec*
 his manners would please you. — f. That I may please by my
manières *par*
 condescension; that she may displease by her spirit of contradiction;
—dame *esprit* —
 that we may conceal the true motives of his conduct; that you may
vrai motif *conduite f*
 delight in tormenting every one; that their answers may displease
vous plaire à tourmenter tout le monde *réponse f*
 every virtuous man. — g. That I might (remain silent) when I am
à tout vertueux *me* *se taire* *quand*
 (so much) offended; that my son might please you; that we might
tellement outragé *fil*
 displease by our sincerity; that you might delight in your faults;
—té *vous complaire* *défauts*
 that those beautiful descriptions might please at every time. —
superbe *en tout temps*
 h. Please by thy submission; let him conceal the greatest part of
soumission *qu'il* *plus grand partie*
 what he has heard; let us (be pleased) in cultivating sciences;
ce qu' *à entendu* *plaire nous à —ver les* —
 (hold your tongues).
taire vous.

FIRST EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN AÎTRE AND ÔÎTRE.

A. That man thirsts (after nothing but) blood and slaughter; we
ne se repaître que de *sang* *de carnage*
 are all born liable to many infirmities. — B. Hope revived in his
sujet beaucoup de —tés *l'espérance renaitre dans*

heart; their flocks fed on the tender grass. — c. Virgil was born
cœur troupeau paître tendre herbe f Virgile*
 at Mantua; those fools (fed themselves) upon chimeras. — d. Arts
à Mantoue insensé se repaître de chimère les —
 and sciences will revive under his reign. — e. Could that man
les — renaitre sous
 feast his eyes on that cruel sight? — f. I wish that happiness may
repaître ail de spectacle souhaiter le bonheur
 revive for him. — g. I did not think that he might feast his imagination
renaitre pour penser à repaître —
 tion with that hope.
de espoir.

SECOND EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN AITRE AND OITRE.

a. I know your father; he forgets his friends; we increase our
connaître méconnaître amis accroître
 income; you appear very dull; they appear and disappear in a
revient paraître très-triste paraître disparaître dans
 moment. — b. I did (entertain myself) with that hope; his mare did
— me repaître de espoir jument f
 graze in the park; we did appear before the judges; you did (not
paître parc comparaître devant juge mé-
 recognize) your handwriting; they did (appear again) upon the
connaître écriture reparaitre sur
 stage. — c. I knew your sister when she spoke; she knew the world
théâtre m reconnaître sœur quand parler c monde m
 before you; we appeared in public; you appeared dissatisfied; they
avant en public mécontent
 knew their horse again. — d. I will know (the whole business); she
reconnaître cheval toute l'affaire*
 will appear handsomer; we shall grow this year; they will know
plus beau croître année
 your father and mother. — e. I would acknowledge your innocence;
père votre mère reconnaître —
 she would grow every day, if she were not ill; we would know the
croître tous les jours n'était pas malade
 forces of the enemy; you would appear older than I; they would
— ennemi plus âgé que moi
 know the truth. — f. That I may know my duty; that she may
vérité devoir
 acknowledge her errors; that we may appear before that tribunal;
reconnaître erreur comparaître devant —
 that you may disappear for some time; that they may know me. —
pour quelque temps
 g. That I might know him after an absence of several years; that he
reconnaître après — plusieurs années
 might (not acknowledge) his friends since his preferment; that we
méconnaître ami depuis agrandissement

might increase our possessions; that you might (appear again) in
 your (native country); that these trees might grow rapidly. —
patrie *arbres* *rapidement*
 11. Acknowledge thy imprudence; let her appear more reserved;
 let us increase every day our reputation by new acts of courage;
accroître tous les jours — *par de nouveau acte* —
 know all the extent of your folly; let them appear joyful and
toute étendue *folie* *qu'ils* *joyeux*
 satisfied.
content.

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN OIRE, URE, AND IRE.

A. I read an interesting book; he thinks to (impose upon me);
lire *intéressant livre* *m* *croire* * *m'en imposer*
 we drink with ice; you speak truth; they curse their fate. — B. I
boire à la glace *dire la vérité* *maudire* *destinée*
 did laugh heartily; he did pickle cucumbers; we did contradict that
rire bon cœur *confire des concombres* *contredire*
 news; you did read again my letter; they did forbid him the
nouvelle *relire* *lettre* *f* *interdire* *lui*
 entrance of their house. — C. A ray of hope smiled at us in the midst
l'entrée *maison* *rayon* *sourire* * *d* *milieu*
 of our misfortunes; he smiled at him as a sign of approbation; we
malheur * *lui en* * *signe* —
 foretold those disasters; you did hurt your interests; they elected
prédire *désastre* *nuire* *d* *intérêt* *élire*
 an honest man for their representative. — D. I will not drink again of
honnête *pour* *représentant* *reboire* *
 that liquor; he will exclude his son from his succession; we shall
liqueur *exclure* *fils* —
 not slander any one; you will conclude, if you like, that we are
ne médire de personne *conclure* *vouloir* A *avoir*
 wrong; the Rabbins will circumscribe several children to-morrow. —
tort *circoncire* *plusieurs enfant* *demain*
 E. I would not contradict you in any manner; that would not suffice
ne dédire *en aucun manière* *cela* *suffire*
 me; that diamond would not shine (so much), if it were not pure;
diamant *reluire* *tant* *s'il* B *fin*
 we should laugh at his expense; you would hurt me more than you
rire à ses dépens *plus* *ne*
 think; they would preserve peaches with brandy. — F. That I may
croire A *confire des pêche* *d l'eau-de-vie*
 exclude him from my company; that he may read attentively; that
compagnie *lire* — *ment*
 we may drink with sobriety; that you may elect a president; that
avec — *été* *prés* —

they may curse their perverseness. — *a.* That I might read again
 — *sité*
 that poem; that she might slander her best friends; that we might
poème *médire de* *meilleur ami f*
 suffice to ourselves; that you might tell a falsehood; that they
se suffire *nous-mêmes* *fausseté*
 might drink the health of the king. — *h.* Conclude thy speech; let
à *santé* *roi* *conclure* *discours*
 him smile to his mother; let us curse nobody; tell me again
mère *ne maudire personne* *redire* *
 your adventure.
aventure.

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN CRIRE.

A. I transcribe my exercise; he inscribes his name in a register; we
 — *crire* *thème m* — *crire* *nom dans* — *tre m*
 subscribe for your work; you prescribe more than I can do; they
souscrire pour *ouvrage* *prescrire plus que* *ne puis faire*
 circumscribe his authority in narrow limits. — *B.* I did write every
circonscrire *autorité dans d'étroites limites* *écrire tous les*
 day to my sister, who did answer me very seldom; we did transcribe
jours *sœur* *récrire très-rarement*
 all your letters; you did consent to every thing he said; they did
lettre f *souscrire à tout ce qu'il disait*
 describe a horrid tempest. — *C.* I wrote last week to my attorney,
décrire horrible tempête f *la semaine dernière* *procureur*
 who answered me yesterday; we proscribed every delay in that
récrire hier — *crire* *tout délai*
 affair; you inscribed the names of persons unknown to every one;
affaire f *nom personnes inconnues de tout le monde*
 they proscribed all their enemies. — *D.* I will prescribe nothing
ennemi *ne* *rien*
 without your advice; he will subscribe to (every thing) you wish;
sans avis *tout ce que* *désirer A*
 we will transcribe his memorial; you will (write again) your exercise;
mémoire m *récrire* *thème*
 they will describe what they have seen. — *E.* I would transcribe all
ce qu' *A* *vu*
 that work; he would (write again) his letter; we would proscribe
ouvrage
 vicious people from our society; you would write better if you were
les gens vicieux *société* *mieux si* *B*
 more attentive; they would order their scholars to study more
—tif *prescrire à* *écolier d'étudier*
 attentively. — *F.* That I may describe all the charms of that beautiful
—ment *tous* *charme m* *superbe*
 landscape; that he may circumscribe our power; that we may write
paysage *pouvoir*

upon that subject ; that you may inscribe all the principal inhabitants
sur sujet tous — habitant
 among your subscribers ; that they may prescribe unjust orders. — g.
parmi souscripteur des injusts ordre
 That I might proscribe all vain splendour from that ceremony ; that
— pompe f cérémonie
 she might (write again) her novel ; that we might accept the conditions
roman souscrire à —
 they prescribe ; that you might transcribe anew all the regular verbs
qu'ils A de nouveau tous régulier verbe m
 of your grammar ; that they might write in a legible manner. —
grammaire de lisible manière
 h. Inscribe my name immediately after thine ; let him describe more
nom — ment après qu'il plus
 clearly the circumstances of that event ; let us circumscribe our
clairement circonstances événement
 wishes in the limits of uprightness ; transcribe two or three pages
désir la droiture deux ou trois —
 of that book ; let them proscribe every affectation from their
livre m qu'ils toute —
 writings.
écrit

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN UIRE.

A. I instruct youth ; she leads them into error ; we translate
instruire la jeunesse induire en erreur traduire
 English into French ; you seduce the ignorant by your discourses ;
l'Anglais en Français séduire — pl par discours
 these trees produce good apples every year. — a. I did introduce
arbres — duire de pomme tous les ans — duire
 a new custom ; he did destroy the wall ; we did build a ship ; you
nouveaux coutume f détruire mur construire vaisseau
 did conduct the enterprise ; they did produce their title. — c. I
conduire entreprise titre
 deducted the expenses ; he behaved very well ; we translated their
déduire dépense se conduire très-bien
 work ; you seduced the witnesses ; they led young people into error.
ouvrage témoin induire les jeunes gens en erreur
 — d. I shall convey the water into the meadow ; he will construct a
conduire eau dans prairie construire
 palace ; we will reduce your brother to silence ; you will instruct
palais réduire frère au —
 their children ; they will destroy the fortifications. — e. I would
enfant —
 translate Italian ; he would introduce my son to the Court ; we
l'Italien fils Cour
 would reconduct you home ; you should plaster the wall ; they
— duire à la maison enduire mur

would produce a good effect. — r. that I may dress that meat; that
 he may refuse his brother; that we may hurt your interests; that
 you may (show home) that lady; that these diamonds may shine
 in the dark. — a. That I might (produce again) the papers of my
 family; that he might (plaster anew) the outside of his house; that
 we might introduce a new custom; that you might instruct youth
 in true religion; that they might seduce by their modest exte-
 rior. — n. Translate thy exercises more literally; let him deduct at
 least the half of that sum; let us manage our affairs with more cir-
 cumspicion; introduce that history in your new work; let them
 destroy all obstacles.

tous les —

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN TRE, DRE, PRE, VRE, AND CRE.

A. I admit that principle; thou takest (too much) trouble; the
 wood which is burnt resolves itself into ashes and smoke; we submit
 ourselves to your decision; you surprise me (very much): strong
 waters dissolve metals. — a. I did fight for my country; thou didst
 not follow the lessons of thy tutor; that did not convince me; we
 did compromise ourselves to serve him; you did pursue an innocent
 person: they did omit an essential duty. — c. I ground all the coffee;
 thou didst not learn thy lesson; he did not out-live that misfortune;
 we promised him a reward; you interrupted his sleep; they transmitted
 their glory to their posterity. — d. I will not intermeddle in their
 dispute; thou shalt conquer thy enemies; he will grind again the
 grain; we shall permit you to go to the fair; you will unlearn

—

all that you have learnt; you see the consequences that will ensue.—
tout ce que apprendre voir — qui s'ensuivre
 x. I should grind my razors; thou wouldst disjoint thy leg; he
émoudre rasoir se démettre la jambe
 would not understand that explanation; we should convince him;
comprendre explication convaincre
 you would absolve them; they would pull down their castle.—*r.*
absoudre abattre châteaux
 That I may (be deceived) upon that point; that she may sew her
se méprendre sur — coudre
 gown; that he may commit the crime; that we may break the truce;
robe f commettre — m rompre trêve f
 that you may thrash the corn; that fathers may revive in their children.
battre blé les père revivre dans enfant
 —c. That I might undertake that journey; that she might sew again
entreprendre voyage recoudre
 that hem; that we might put more order in our affairs; that you
ourlet mettre plus d'ordre affaire
 might live more regularly; that they might (beat again) these
vivre régulièrement rebattre
 mattresses.—*h.* Put again all thy books in their place; let her
matelas remettre livre m à —
 unsew this seam; let us not corrupt the morals of youth; chide your
découdre surjet corrompre mœurs la jeunesse reprendre
 pupils for their faults; let them resolve to suffer much.
élève de défaut se résoudre souffrir beaucoup.

EXERCISE ON THE IRREGULAR VERBS IN INDRE.

A. I fear my master; she extinguishes the fire; we pity the
craindre éteindre feu plaindre
 unfortunate; you paint very well; they complain of every body.—
malheureux pl. peindre très-bien se plaindre tout le monde
 x. I did fear your anger; he did pity my sister; we did dye the silk;
colère f sœur teindre soie
 you did constrain my cousin to sell his house; they did paint a
contraindre à vendre maison
 shipwreck.—c. I feigned to be sick; he transgressed the laws of his
nauffrage feindre d'être malade enfreindre lois
 country; we joined hands; you (put out) the candles; they
pays joindre les mains éteindre chandelle
 compelled their son to learn mathematics.—d. I will enjoin
contraindre fils à apprendre les mathématiques enjoindre
 the servant to stay at home; she will transgress your orders;
au domestique de rester à la maison ordre
 we will paint our room; you will pity their folly; they will fear to be
chambre folie d'être
 discovered.—e. I would compel the enemy to fight; he would fear
découverts ennemi à combattre
 to displease his master; we would feign (to believe them); you
de déplaire de les croire

would paint very well; they would infringe the constitution.—*f.*
très-bien. enfreindre

That I may join my efforts to yours; that her aunt may fear
— tante

the effects of her levity; that we may compel him to alter his
effet légèreté changer de
conduct; that you may pity his fate; that they may pity his misfortune.
conduite sort malheur

—*a.* That I might join my opinion to that of the other judges; that
— celle autre juges

he might draw your picture; that we might feign to be satisfied with
peindre portrait de content de
him; that you might fear those spectres; that they might dye that
—

cloth in black.—*h.* Fear God during all thy life; let him paint his
éttoffe f en noir pendant vie qu'il

house anew; let us enjoin our children to respect (old people);
maison à neuf à enfant de respecter les vieillards
compel him to follow your advice; let them fear my anger.

suivre avis pl qu'ils colère f

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE COMPOUND TENSES.

Combinations of the auxiliary verbs with a participle past are called compound tenses: as, *j'ai parlé*, I have spoken; *je suis venu*, I have come.

When a participle past is preceded by any tense of the verb *être*, it agrees in French with the noun antecedent in gender and number, few cases excepted: as, *mon frère est estimé*, *ma sœur est estimée*; *mes frères sont estimés*, *mes sœurs sont estimées*. When the participle comes after any tense of the verb *avoir*, it is only variable in French in the cases mentioned in rule 143. In the following exercise it will be variable after the verb *être*, and invariable after *avoir*. The feminine and plural of participles are formed like those of adjectives, p. 56.

I have spoken to the queen of England; the law is abolished; we
▲ parler reine Angleterre loi ▲ abolir
have slept ³very ¹well²; we have (found out) his fraud; his fraud
▲ dormir très-bien ▲ découvrir —de f ▲
is found out; we are come to dine with you; you have received a
*▲ venir * dîner ▲ recevoir*
letter; the letters are received; we have concealed that affair; that
lettre f ▲ ▲ taire affaire f
affair was concealed; we have (put out) the candles; the candles
c ▲ éteindre chandelle
are put out; we have understood their intentions; their intentions
▲ ▲ connaître —

were known ; you have translated many English books into French ;
B connaître A traduire plusieurs Anglais livre m en Français
many English books are translated into French ; I have sold my
A vendre
horses ; my horses are sold ; he has written his answer ; his answer
cheval A écrire réponse f
is written ; she has sung a pretty song ; the song was well sung ;
A chanter joli chanson C
I had built a house ; my house was built ; we had foreseen these
A bâtir maison B B pressentir
misfortunes ; you had served your friends ; your friends were gone ;
malheurs A servir amis B partir
they have offered a reward ; a reward was offered ; they had obtained
A offrir récompense C B obtenir
his favour ; his pardon was obtained ; we had perceived the enemies ;
faveur grâce C B apercevoir ennemi pl
the enemies were perceived ; I have known your sister ; your sisters
C A connaître sœur
are well known ; we have reduced your sisters to silence ; your sisters
A A réduire au —
were reduced to silence ; you have sealed the letter ; the letter is
C A cacheter lettre f A
sealed ; they had filled the bottles ; the bottles were filled ; they had
B remplir bouteille B B
detained my sisters ; my sisters were detained ; we have joined the
détenir C A joindre
two parts together ; the two parts are joined together ; they had
partie ensemble A B
acknowledged my innocence ; my innocence was acknowledged ; we
reconnaître — C
have introduced this custom ; this custom was introduced ; you have
A —duire coutume f C A
corrupted the witnesses ; the witnesses are corrupted ; they had
séduire témoin A B
answered to my questions ; your letters were received.
répondre — lettre f C recevoir

SEVERAL MANNERS OF CONJUGATING VERBS.

A verb may be conjugated with affirmation, negation, interrogation, and pronouns, as follows :

RULE 1. With Affirmation. — By putting the subject before the verb in French, as in English. Example :—

Je parle,
tu parles,
il parle,
elle parle,
mon frère parle,
ma sœur parle,

I speak.
thou speakest.
he speaks.
she speaks.
my brother speaks.
my sister speaks.

nous parlons,
vous parlez,
ils, or elles parlent,
mes frères parlent,
mes sœurs parlent,

we speak.
you speak.
they speak.
my brothers speak.
my sisters speak.

RULE 2. With Negation. — By putting the particle *ne* between the subject and the verb, and *pas* or *point* after the verb. Example:—

Je ne parle pas,
tu ne parles pas,
il ne parle pas,
elle ne parle pas,
mon frère ne parle pas,
ma sœur ne parle pas,
nous ne parlons pas,
vous ne parlez pas,
ils or elles ne parlent pas,
mes frères ne parlent pas,
mes sœurs ne parlent pas,

I do not speak.
thou dost not speak.
he does not speak.
she does not speak.
my brother does not speak.
my sister does not speak.
we do not speak.
you do not speak.
they do not speak.
my brothers do not speak.
my sisters do not speak.

RULE 3. With Interrogation. — By putting the subject after the verb, if it be a pronoun. Example:

Parlé-je ?
parles-tu ?
parle-t-il ?
parle-t-elle ?
parlons-nous ?
parlez-vous ?
parlent-ils ?
parlent-elles ? }

Do I speak ?
dost thou speak ?
does he speak ?
does she speak ?
do we speak ?
do you speak ?
do they speak ?

N. B. When the first person ends with a mute *e*, it is changed into an acute *é*: when the third person singular ends with a vowel, a *t* between two hyphens is placed between the verb and the pronoun.

When the subject of the verb is a substantive, it is placed before the verb, and the pronoun *il*, or *elle*, for the singular; *ils*, or *elles*, for the plural, is put after. Example:

Mon frère parle-t-il ?
ma sœur parle-t-elle ?
mes frères parlent-ils ?
mes sœurs parlent-elles ?

Does my brother speak ?
does my sister speak ?
do my brothers speak ?
do my sisters speak ?

When an interrogative sentence is also negative, *ne* is placed at the beginning of the sentence, or after the substantive when there is one, and *pas* after the verb and the pronoun. Example:—

Ne parlé-je pas ?
ne parles-tu pas ?
ne parle-t-il pas ?
ne parle-t-elle pas ?
mon frère ne parle-t-il pas ?
ma sœur ne parle-t-elle pas ?

Do I not speak ?
dost thou not speak ?
does he not speak ?
does she not speak ?
does not my brother speak ?
does not my sister speak ?

ne parlons-nous pas ?	<i>do we not speak ?</i>
ne parlez-vous pas ?	<i>do you not speak ?</i>
ne parlent-ils pas ?	<i>do they not speak ?</i>
ne parlent-elles pas ?	
mes frères ne parlent-ils pas ?	<i>do not my brothers speak ?</i>
mes sœurs ne parlent-elles pas ?	<i>do not my sisters speak ?</i>

RULE 4. *With governed Pronouns.* — By putting the governed pronoun immediately before the verb, whether the sentence be affirmative, negative, or interrogative. Example : —

1. AFFIRMATIVE SENTENCE.

je lui parle,	<i>I speak to him.</i>
tu lui parles,	<i>thou speakest to him.</i>
il lui parle,	<i>he speaks to him.</i>
elle lui parle,	<i>she speaks to him.</i>
mon frère lui parle,	<i>my brother speaks to him.</i>
ma sœur lui parle,	<i>my sister speaks to him.</i>
nous lui parlons,	<i>we speak to him.</i>
vous lui parlez,	<i>you speak to him.</i>
ils or elles lui parlent,	<i>they speak to him.</i>
mes frères lui parlent,	<i>my brothers speak to him.</i>
mes sœurs lui parlent,	<i>my sisters speak to him.</i>

2. NEGATIVE SENTENCE.

Je ne lui parle pas,	<i>I do not speak to him.</i>
tu ne lui parles pas,	<i>thou dost not speak to him.</i>
il ne lui parle pas,	<i>he does not speak to him.</i>
elle ne lui parle pas,	<i>she does not speak to him.</i>
mon frère ne lui parle pas,	<i>my brother does not speak to him.</i>
ma sœur ne lui parle pas,	<i>my sister does not speak to him.</i>
nous ne lui parlons pas,	<i>we do not speak to him.</i>
vous ne lui parlez pas,	<i>you do not speak to him.</i>
ils or elles ne lui parlent pas,	<i>they do not speak to him.</i>
mes frères ne lui parlent pas,	<i>my brothers do not speak to him.</i>
mes sœurs ne lui parlent pas,	<i>my sisters do not speak to him.</i>

3. INTERROGATIVE SENTENCE.

Lui parlé-je ?	<i>Do I speak to him ?</i>
lui parles-tu ?	<i>dost thou speak to him ?</i>
lui parle-t-il ?	<i>does he speak to him ?</i>
lui parle-t-elle ?	<i>does she speak to him ?</i>
mon frère lui parle-t-il ?	<i>does my brother speak to him ?</i>
ma sœur lui parle-t-elle ?	<i>does my sister speak to him ?</i>
lui parlons-nous ?	<i>do we speak to him ?</i>
lui parlez-vous ?	<i>do you speak to him ?</i>
lui parlent-ils ?	<i>do they speak to him ?</i>
lui parlent-elles ?	
mes frères lui parlent-ils ?	<i>do my brothers speak to him ?</i>
mes sœurs lui parlent-elles ?	<i>do my sisters speak to him ?</i>

4. INTERROGATIVE AND NEGATIVE SENTENCE.

Ne lui parlé-je pas ?	<i>Do I not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parles-tu pas ?	<i>dost thou not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parle-t-il pas ?	<i>does he not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parle-t-elle pas ?	<i>does she not speak to him ?</i>
mon frère ne lui parle-t-il pas ?	<i>does not my brother speak to him ?</i>
ma sœur ne lui parle-t-elle pas ?	<i>does not my sister speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parlons-nous pas ?	<i>do we not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parlez-vous pas ?	<i>do you not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parlent-ils pas ?	<i>do they not speak to him ?</i>
ne lui parlent-elles pas ?	
mes frères ne lui parlent-ils pas ?	<i>do not my brothers speak to him ?</i>
mes sœurs ne lui parlent-elles pas ?	<i>do not my sisters speak to him ?</i>

OBSERVATION. — In the compound tenses, you apply these rules with the auxiliary *avoir* or *être*, as if there were no other verb, because the participle is put the last : as, *j'ai parlé*, *je n'ai pas parlé*, *ai-je parlé* ? *je ne lui ai pas parlé*, *ne lui ai-je pas parlé* ?

N. B. The figures 1, 2, 3, 4, have reference to the four rules above.

EXERCISE UPON THE PRECEDING RULES.

You know the king ; you do not know the king ; do you know
 1 *connaître* 1 *roi* 1 2 3
 the king ? you know him ; you do not know him ; do you know
 1 4 1 2 4 3
 him ? he sells his horse ; he does not sell his horse ; does he sell his
 4 1 *vendre* 1 *cheval* 1 2 3
 horse ? he does not sell it ; does he sell it ? has he sold it ? they are
 1 2 4 *le* 3 4 3 4 *l'* 1
 sick ; are they sick ? they are not sick ; I will give a watch to
malade 3 1 2 1 *donner* 1 *montre* f
 your son ; I will not give a watch to your son ; I have given it to
fils 1 2 n 1 f 4 *l'*
 your son ; I have not given it to your son ; I do not blame your
fils 1 2 f 4 *l'* 1 2 *blâmer*
 conduct ; does she choose a fine colour ; we hold him ; have you
conduite f 3 *choisir* *beau* *couleur* 1 *tenir* 4 *le* 3
 answered to their questions ? you have translated the book ; but you
répondre — 1 *traduire* *livre* m *mais* 1
 have not translated ² it well¹ ; do not threaten them ; has he spoken
 2 4 *l'* *bien* 2 *menacer* n 4 *les* 3
 (to them) ? we have pacified him ; they have not pardoned me ; do
 4 *leur* 1 — *fier* 4 *l'* 1 2 *pardonner* 4 m'
 you look for your book ? yes, I have lost it ; they do not sing well ;
 3 *chercher* * *oui* 1 *perdre* 4 *l'* 1 *chanter*
 have you breakfasted ? he has not received a letter from his father ;
 3 *déjeuner* 1 2 *recevoir* *de* *lettre*

I have sent him a book; has he received it? no, sir, he has not
 1 *envoyer* 4 *lui* 3 4 *l'non monsieur* 1 2
 received it; you do not neglect your friends; have you not neglected
 4 1 2 *négliger* *ami* 3 2
 me? the Austrians have not ratified the treaty; but the French
 4 *m' Autrichiens* 2 — *fier traité Français pl*
 will force them to do it; have you decided the question?
forcer 4 *les à faire* 4 *le* 3 *décider* —

EXERCISE UPON THE SIMPLE TENSES OF THE REFLECTED VERBS. See their Conjugation, p. 122.

A. I abstain from doing it; thou tormentest thyself in vain; he
s'abstenir de le faire se tourmenter —
 (stoops down); we bathe every summer; you (go to bed) before
se baisser se baigner tous les étés se coucher avant
 your brother; they rebel. — B. I did (nurse myself) (too much);
se révolter s'écouter trop
 thou didst applaud thyself of thy folly; he did mean to travel; we
s'applaudir folie se proposer de voyager
 did torment ourselves about that affair; you did despair without
*se tourmenter * pour affaire f se désespérer sans*
 reason; they did applaud themselves for their folly. — C. I retracted;
*raison s'applaudir * de sottise f se rétracter*
 thou trusted'st thyself to thy strength; the river overflowed; we
force plur. rivière se déborder
 distrusted your sister; you (made haste); they were very well. — D.
se défier de se dépêcher se porter très-bien
 I shall seize upon his fortune; thou wilt remember thy faults; he
s'emparer de — f se souvenir faute
 will (be eager) to do it; she will (fall asleep); we shall (grow bold);
s'empresse de le faire s'endormir s'enhardir
 you will (catch cold); they will (take root). — E. I would (grow rich);
s'enrhumer s'enraciner s'enrichir
 thou would'st degrade thyself by that action; he would discourse
se dégrader s'entretenir
 with her; we would rise; you would wonder; they would (fly away);
avec se lever s'étonner s'envoler
 the flowers would blow. — F. That I may perceive your designs;
fleurs s'épanouir s'apercevoir de dessein
 that thou may'st fatigue thyself (to no purpose); that he may
se fatiguer inutilement
 amuse himself at his expense; that he may incur this danger;
*s'amuser * dépens pl se précipiter dans —*
 that you may (be employed) about trifles; that they may (go out)
s'occuper de bagatelle se détourner
 of the right way. — G. That I might yield to his reasons; that
droit chemin se rendre raison
 thou might'st flatter thyself of success; that he might employ the
se flatter succès se servir de

means I (point out) to him; that we might (be degraded) in
moyen que indiquer à s'avilir
 our own eyes; that you might (be proud) of this trifling advantage;
propre s'enorgueillir faible avantage
 that they might (love each other) from their infancy.
s'entr'aimer depuis enfance

N. B. The imperative of reflected verbs being conjugated in a different manner, according as it is affirmative or negative, we shall give both.

AFFIRMATIVELY.

Lève-toi,	<i>rise (thou).</i>
qu'il se lève,	<i>let him rise.</i>
levons-nous,	<i>let us rise.</i>
levez-vous,	<i>rise.</i>
qu'ils se lèvent,	<i>let them rise.</i>

NEGATIVELY.

Ne te lève pas,	<i>do not rise.</i>
qu'il ne se lève pas,	<i>let him not rise.</i>
ne nous levons pas,	<i>let us not rise.</i>
ne vous levez pas,	<i>do not rise.</i>
qu'ils ne se lèvent,	<i>let them not rise.</i>

H. O man! remember that thou art mortal; do not rejoice to see thine
se souvenir mortel se plaisir voir
 enemies unhappy; let him (be undeceived); let her not (go to bed)
ennemi malheureux se désabuser se coucher
 so early; let us habituate ourselves to employment; let us not
*de si bonne heure s'habituer * au travail*
 deceive ourselves; rest yourself under the shade of this
*se séduire nous-mêmes se reposer * à ombre*
 tree; do not interfere in that business; let them (make haste); let
arbre se mêler de affaire f se dépêcher
 them not behave so ill.
se comporter si mal.

EXERCISES UPON THE COMPOUND TENSES OF THE REFLECTED VERBS.

A. I have (stolen away); thou hast condemned thyself; she
s'esquiver se condamner
 has (fainted away); we have trusted to your father; you have
s'évanouir se fier père
 (found fault) without occasion; these flowers have (faded away). —
se formaliser sans raison se flétrir

B. I had married; thou had'st repented thy imprudence; she had

se marier *se repentir* —
distrusted me; we had been tolerably well; you had laughed at
se défier de moi *se porter* *assez bien* *se moquer de*
him; they had complained of you. — c. I had rejoiced at that news;

se plaindre *se réjouir de* *nouvelle*
thou hadst recollected all the circumstances; he had repented of
se souvenir de *circonstance* *se repentir de*

his faults; we had walked in the park; you had submitted to
faute *se promener* *se conformer*

their orders; they had remembered me. — d. I shall have

—dre *se ressouvenir de moi*
seized his arms; thou wilt have degraded thyself; she will have
s'emparer de *arme* *se dégrader*

(painted her face); we shall have fancied that he was right;

se farder *s'imaginer* *avoir à raison*
you will have (grown rich); those women will have (stolen away). —

s'enrichir *femme* *s'esquiver*
E. I should have repented of my temerity; thou wouldst have
témérité

betrayed thyself; he would have boasted of his birth; we should have
se trahir *se vanter* *naissance*

devoted ourselves entirely to the service of our country; you
se dévouer * *entièrement* — m *pays*

would have degraded yourselves in the public opinion; they would
se dégrader *

have (been drowned). — f. That I may have (been deceived)
se noyer *se tromper*

so grossly; that thou may'st have devoted thyself; that she
si grossièrement *se dévouer*

may have decided to stay; that we may have (had relaxation) from
se décider *rester* *se délasser*

the fatigue; that you may have disguised yourself so cleverly; that
— f *se déguiser* * *si adroitement*

your sisters may have exposed themselves so rashly. — a. That
s'exposer * *si témérairement*

I might have revenged myself; that thou might'st have disgraced
se venger * *se déshonorer*

thyself; that she might have neglected herself in that important
se négliger *

circumstance; that we might have lost ourselves in the forest;
circonstance *s'égarer* * *forêt*

that you might have conversed about plots against the state;
s'entretenir de complot contre *état*

that they might have annoyed (one another) in that law-suit.

se desservir réciproquement *procès.*

CHAP. VI.

OF ADVERBS.

The word Adverb signifies joined to a Verb.

The Adverb is a word indeclinable, which modifies a verb, a participle, or an adjective, and may be considered as a substitute for an additional phrase by way of explanation.

Example :

Dieu est *infiniment* juste ; il punira *sévèrement* les impies.

God is infinitely just ; he will punish severely the impious.

Most of the French adjectives become adverbs by altering their final according to the three following rules :

RULE I.

Adjectives which end in *ant* or *ent* become adverbs by changing the final *ant* into *amment*, and *ent* into *emment* : as *constant*, *prudent*, *patient*, adjectives ; *constamment*, *prudemment*, *patiemment*, adverbs. The only exceptions are *lentement*, and *présentement*, from the adjectives *lent* and *présent*.

RULE II.

Adjectives which end in a vowel, become adverbs, by adding *ment* to the final : as, *sage*, *poli*, *ingénu*, adjectives ; *sagement*, *poliment*, *ingénument*, adverbs. The adjectives *beau*, *fou*, *nouveau*, and *mou*, become adverbs by adding *ment* to their feminine *belle*, *folle*, *nouvelle*, and *molle* : *bellement*, *follement*, *nouvellement*, *mollement*.

RULE III.

Adjectives which end neither in a vowel, nor in *ant* or *ent* in the masculine singular, become adverbs by adding *ment* to their feminine termination : as, *grand*, *doux*, *heureux*, adjectives masculine ; *grande*, *douce*, *heureuse*, adjectives feminine* ; *grandement*, *doucement*, *heureusement*, adverbs.

* For the formation of the feminine of adjectives, see page 56.

The *e* which precedes *ment* is mute in all adverbs formed from adjectives, except in the following, in which it takes an acute accent : *aisément, assurément, aveuglément, commodément, communément, conformément, délibérément, démésurément, désespérément, désordonnément, déterminément, effrontément, énormément, expressément, figurément, importunément, impunément, incommodément, inconsidérément, indéterminément, inespérément, inopinément, malaisément, modérément, nommément, obscurément, obstinément, opiniâtrément, passionnément, posément, précisément, prématurément, privément, profondément, profusément, proportionnément, sensément, séparément, serrément, subordonnément.*

DIFFERENT SORTS OF ADVERBS.

Besides the great number of adverbs formed from adjectives according to the three preceding rules, there are many others, which may be divided into nine classes, according to their signification ; they are as follows :

1. ADVERBS OF ORDER : as, *premièrement*, first ; *secondement*, secondly ; *troisièmement*, thirdly, &c. *devant*, before ; *derrière*, behind ; *après*, after ; *ensuite*, afterwards, &c.

2. ADVERBS OF PLACE : as, *où*, where ; *d'où*, from whence ; *ici*, here ; *là*, there ; *dedans*, within ; *dehors*, without ; *en haut*, above ; *en bas*, below ; *loin*, far ; *près*, near, &c.

3. ADVERBS OF TIME : as, *à présent*, now ; *aujourd'hui*, to-day ; *hier*, yesterday ; *autrefois*, formerly ; *bientôt*, soon ; *dans peu*, shortly ; *désormais*, hereafter, &c.

4. ADVERBS OF QUANTITY : as, *combien*, how much ; *beaucoup*, much ; *peu*, little ; *assez*, enough ; *tant*, so much ; *autant*, as much ; *trop*, too much ; *trop peu*, too little, &c.

5. ADVERBS OF COMPARISON : as, *comme*, as ; *de même*, in the same manner ; *aussi*, as ; *autant*, as much ; *plus*, more ; *moins*, less ; *pareillement*, likewise, &c.

6. ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION : as, *oui*, yes ; *à la*

vérité, indeed ; *vraiment*, truly ; *sans doute*, without doubt ; *assurément*, assuredly ; *certainement*, certainly, &c.

7. ADVERBS OF NEGATION : as, *non*, no ; *ne pas*, not ; *point du tout*, not at all ; *nullement*, by no means, &c.

8. ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION : as, *quand*, when ; *pourquoi*, why ; *combien*, how much ; *comment*, how ; *où*, where, &c.

9. ADVERBS OF DOUBT : as, *peut-être*, perhaps ; *probablement*, very likely, &c.

EXERCISE UPON THE FORMATION OF ADVERBS.

My father can do that easily ; you speak freely ; they act
pouvoir (ir) ▲ faire cela 1 aisé 1 libre agir
 prudently ; he died suddenly ; they fight vigorously ; he
2 prudent mourir (ir) c 3 soudain combattre (ir) 3 vigoureux
 answered wisely ; do you speak seriously ? you suffer patiently ;
répondre c 1 sage 3 sérieux souffrir 2 patient
 he denied the fact absolutely ; they are happily out of danger ; they
nier c fait 1 absolu 3 heureux hors
 will come probably ; I have eaten sufficiently ; speak to them
venir 1 probable manger 2 suffisant parler H leur
 separately ; he answered affirmatively ; you do not speak clearly ;
1 séparé répondre c 3 affirmatif 3 clair
 I am constantly occupied ; they speak figuratively ; children are
2 constant occupé 3 figuratif les enfans
 naturally fond of pleasure ; your loss is really great ; he
3 naturel passionné pour le plaisir perte f 3 réel
 comes regularly ; you did that secretly.
venir 3 régulier faire (ir) c cela 3 secret

PLACE OF THE ADVERBS.

Adverbs are generally placed in French after the verb, but never between the personal pronouns and the verb as in English, as will be further explained in Chap. xix. of the Syntax, Rules 172. and 173. Example :

They never say what they think,
Ils ne disent jamais ce qu'ils pensent,
 and not
Ils ne jamais disent.

We always patiently suffer their insults ; he seldom reads ;
toujours patiemment souffrir insulte rarement lire (ir)

they bravely assaulted the enemy; we distinctly see; they
—ment assaillir (ir) c *—tement voir (ir)*
 miserably died; we are sometimes deceived; you
misérablement mourir (ir) c * *quelquefois se méprendre (ir) A*
 often contradict me; they secretly retired; I willingly
souvent contredire (ir) *secrètement se retirer c* *volontiers*
 consent to that bargain; they reluctantly promised to go there;
consentir *marché* *à contre-cœur promettre (ir) c* *d'y aller*
 they strongly opposed that measure; they really deceive
fortement s'opposer c à *mesure* *réellement tromper*
 you; he minutely inquired about that affair; they are
minutieusement s'enquérir (ir) c *de* *affaire* *
 grossly mistaken.
grossièrement se méprendre (ir) A.

CHAP VII.

PREPOSITIONS.

PREPOSITIONS are indeclinable words, so called from the Latin verb *præponere* (which signifies to place before), because they are always put in French before the word they govern. Example: *Ce qui se fait dans la passion, se fait souvent contre la raison, et nous donne dans la suite de grands sujets de repentir.* What is done in passion is often done against reason, and gives us in time great cause of repentance.

Prepositions are indeclinable. They serve to denote the several relations of *nouns*, *pronouns*, or *adverbs*, with one another. They are the following:

Prepositions which govern DE.

à cause de, on account of.	à l'exclusion de, excepting.
à côté de, by.	à l'insu de, unknown to.
à couvert de, secure from.	à l'opposite de, over against.
à fleur de, even with.	à moins de, under.
à force de, by dint of.	à raison de, at the rate of.
à l'abri de, sheltered from.	à rebours de, contrary to.
à la faveur de, by means of.	au deçà de, on this side.
à la manière de, after the fashion.	au dedans de, within.
à la réserve de, excepting that.	au dehors de, without.
à l'égard de, with regard to.	au delà de, on that side
à l'exception de, excepted.	au derrière de, behind.

au dessous de, <i>under.</i>	aux environs de, <i>round about.</i>
au dessus de, <i>upon.</i>	en deçà de, <i>on this side.</i>
au devant de, <i>before.</i>	en dépit de, <i>in spite of.</i>
au lieu de, <i>instead.</i>	en présence de, <i>in presence of.</i>
au milieu de, <i>in the middle of.</i>	ensuite de, <i>after.</i>
au moyen de, <i>by means of.</i>	faute de, <i>for want of.</i>
au niveau de, <i>even to.</i>	hors de, <i>out of.</i>
au péril de, <i>at the peril of.</i>	le long de, <i>along.</i>
auprès de, <i>near.</i>	loin de, <i>far from.</i>
au prix de, <i>at the expense of.</i>	pour l'amour de, <i>for the sake of.</i>
au risque de, <i>at the danger of.</i>	près de, <i>near.</i>
autour de, <i>around.</i>	proche de, <i>nigh.</i>
au travers de, <i>through.</i>	tout auprès de, <i>close to.</i>
aux dépens de, <i>at the expense of.</i>	vis-à-vis de, <i>opposite to.</i>

Prepositions which govern no other Preposition.

après, <i>after.</i>	malgré, <i>in spite of.</i>
à travers, <i>through.</i>	moyennant, <i>for.</i>
avant, <i>before.</i>	nonobstant, <i>notwithstanding.</i>
avec, <i>with.</i>	outré, <i>besides.</i>
chez, <i>at.</i>	par, <i>by.</i>
contre, <i>against.</i>	parmi, <i>among.</i>
dans, <i>in.</i>	pendant, <i>during.</i>
depuis, <i>since.</i>	pour, <i>for.</i>
derrière, <i>behind.</i>	proche, <i>near.</i>
dès, <i>from.</i>	sans, <i>without.</i>
devant, <i>before.</i>	sauf, <i>safe.</i>
durant, <i>during.</i>	selon, <i>according to.</i>
en, <i>in.</i>	sous, <i>under.</i>
entre, <i>between.</i>	suisant, <i>according to.</i>
envers, <i>towards.</i>	sur, <i>upon.</i>
environ, <i>about.</i>	touchant, <i>concerning.</i>
excepté, <i>except.</i>	vers, <i>towards.</i>
hormis, <i>except, but.</i>	

Observe, that the prepositions formed with *à*, *au*, or *aux*, and a noun, require the preposition *DE*, and that most others require no preposition after them.

These four, *conformément à*, according to; *jusqu'à*, as far as; *par rapport à*, with respect to; *quant à*, as for; do not require *DE*.

Prepositions joined to a Verb.

Many prepositions come in English after a verb, and make a part of its signification; such are the following, which are not expressed in French :

abattre, *to pull down.*
 abandonner, *to give up.*
 cacheter, *to seal up.*
 combler, *to fill up.*
 déchirer, *to tear off.*
 déraciner, *to root out.*
 s'envoler, *to fly away.*
 époudrer, *to wipe off.*
 s'évanouir, *to faint away.*
 expulser, *to turn out.*
 extirper, *to root out.*
 se lever, *to get up.*
 mander, *to send for.*

ôter, *to take away.*
 paraphraser, *to comment upon.*
 ramener, *to bring back.*
 trouver, *to find out.*
 monter, *to go up.*
 descendre, *to go down.*
 entrer, *to come in.*
 sortir, *to go out.*
 regarder, *to look at.*
 chercher, *to look for.*
 admirer, *to wonder at.*
 attendre, *to wait for.*

Verbs composed with a Preposition.

The English give to the most part of their verbs a signification quite opposite to the primitive one, by prefixing to them the preposition *un* or *dis*. The French give it by prefixing *dés* to the words which begin with a *vowel* or *h* mute; and *dé* to those which begin with a consonant. Example :

border, *to border.*
 déborder, *to unborder.*
 charger, *to load.*
 décharger, *to unload.*
 faire, *to do.*
 défaire, *to undo.*
 apprendre, *to learn.*
 désapprendre, *to unlearn.*
 habiller, *to dress.*
 déshabiller, *to undress.*
 friser, *to curl.*
 défriser, *to uncurl.*
 lacer, *to lace.*
 délacer, *to unlace.*
 lier, *to tie.*
 délier, *to untie.*
 compter, *to count.*
 décompter, *to discount.*
 se fier, *to trust.*
 se défier, *to distrust.*
 couvrir, *to cover.*
 découvrir, *to uncover.*

paver, *to pave.*
 dépaver, *to unpave.*
 plaire, *to please.*
 déplaire, *to displease.*
 posséder, *to possess.*
 déposséder, *to dispossess.*
 tromper, *to deceive.*
 détromper, *to undeceive.*
 voiler, *to veil.*
 dévoiler, *to unveil.*
 tordre, *to twist.*
 détordre, *to untwist.*
 approuver, *to approve.*
 désapprouver, *to disapprove.*
 armer, *to arm.*
 désarmer, *to disarm.*
 honorer, *to honour.*
 déshonorer, *to dishonour.*
 obéir, *to obey.*
 désobéir, *to disobey.*
 unir, *to unite.*
 désunir, *to disunite.*

The English put the word *again*, after a verb, to express the reiteration of a thing. The French express the reiteration by prefixing the preposition *re* to the verb, when it begins with a consonant, and *r* only when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute. Thus we say

appeler, *to call.*
rappeler, *to call again.*

cacheter, *to seal up.*
recacheter, *to seal up again.*

composer, *to compose.*
recomposer, *to compose again.*

demander, *to ask.*
redemander, *to ask again.*

embarquer, *to embark.*
rembarquer, *to embark again.*

faire, *to do.*
refaire, *to do again.*

lire, *to read.*
relire, *to read again.*

mesurer, *to measure.*
remesurer, *to measure again.*

paraître, *to appear.*
reparaître, *to appear again.*

plisser, *to plait.*
replisser, *to plait again.*

prendre, *to take.*
reprendre, *to take again.*

tomber, *to fall.*
retomber, *to fall again.*

trouver, *to find.*
retrouver, *to find again.*

vendre, *to sell.*
revendre, *to sell again.*

venir, *to come.*
revenir, *to come again.*

There are many other prepositions which come immediately after a verb in English, and change its signification; such are *away, back, upon, out, for, with, off, &c.*; but these cannot be reduced to rules, and can be learned by practice only.

CHAP. VIII.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

CONJUNCTIONS are invariable words, used in a sentence to join together the different parts of speech. Example :

Parlez peu et pensez bien, si vous voulez qu'on vous regarde comme un homme d'esprit.

Speak little and think much, if you would be looked upon as a man of sense.

In this sentence, *et* and *si* are two conjunctions, which

show the dependency and conjunction of the clauses which compose it.

Conjunctions are simple or compound; the simple consist of one word, as *et, ou, ni, &c.*; the compound are formed of two or more words, such as *afin que, au lieu que, si ce n'est que*. Both simple and compound may be shown to have been borrowed from other classes of words. The simple ones are mostly directing words, independent of the subject meant to be told, but introduced for the purpose of enabling us to understand a complicated statement or sentence.

The above explanation being too abstract for many young students, I will dispose the conjunctions in three alphabetical lists. *The first* contains the conjunctions which govern the infinitive mood; *the second* enumerates those which govern the subjunctive; and *the third* comprehends all others.

1. Conjunctions which govern the Infinitive.

A fin de, *in order to.*
à moins de, *unless.*
avant de, *before.*
au lieu de, *instead of.*
de crainte de, *for fear of.*
de peur de, *for fear of.*

faute de, *for want of.*
jusqu'à, *till.*
loin de, *far from.*
plutôt que de, *rather than.*
pour, *for.*
sans, *without.*

2. Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive.

A fin que, *that.*
à moins que, *unless.*
avant que, *before.*
au cas que, *in case that.*
bien que, *though.*
de crainte que, *for fear.*
de peur que, *lest.*
en cas que, *if.*
encore que, *though.*
jusqu'à ce que, *till.*
loin que, *far from.*

malgré que, *for all that.*
nonobstant que, *for all that.*
non pas que, *not that.*
posé que, *suppose that.*
pourvu que, *provided.*
quoique, *though.*
sans que, *without.*
soit que, *whether.*
supposé que, *suppose that.*
Dieu veuille que, *God grant.*
pour que, *that.*

3. Conjunctions which govern neither the Infinitive nor the Subjunctive.

A cause que, *because.*
à condition que, *provided.*
ainsi, *thus.*
ainsi que, *as.*

après que, *after.*
au lieu que, *whereas.*
au moins, *at least.*
aussi, *also.*

aussi bien que, *as well as*.
 aussitôt que, *as soon as*.
 au surplus, *moreover*.
 autant que, *as much*.
 car, *for*.
 cependant, *however*.
 c'est pourquoi, *therefore*.
 comme, *as*.
 d'abord que, *as soon as*.
 d'ailleurs, *besides*.
 d'autant que, *whereas*.
 de façon que, *so that*.
 depuis que, *since*.
 de plus, *moreover*.
 de sorte que, *so that*.
 dès que, *as soon as*.
 donc, *then*.
 durant que, *during*.
 et, *and*.
 en effet, *indeed*.
 enfin, *in short*.
 ensuite, *afterwards*.
 joint à cela, *moreover*.
 lorsque, *when*.
 mais, *but*.
 même, *even*.
 néanmoins, *nevertheless*.
 ni, *nor*.

non plus, *neither*.
 non-seulement, *not only*.
 or, *now*.
 ou bien, *or else*.
 ou, *or*.
 outre, *besides*.
 outre cela, *added to that*.
 parce que, *because*.
 pendant que, *while*.
 pour lors, *then*.
 pourquoi, *why*.
 pourtant, *however*.
 puis, *then*.
 puisque, *since*.
 quand, *when*.
 quand même, *although*.
 selon que, *according as*.
 si, *if*.
 si bien que, *so that*.
 si ce n'est que, *except that*.
 sinon, *else*.
 sitôt que, *as soon as*.
 suivant que, *according as*.
 sur quoi, *whereupon*.
 surtout, *especially*.
 tandis que, *whilst*.
 tant que, *as long as*.
 toutefois, *however*.

OBSERVE, that many adverbs become prepositions when they govern a noun, a pronoun, or a verb : as, *marchez devant*, walk before, adverb ; *marchez devant moi*, walk before me, preposition. Some prepositions in their turn become conjunctions, when they are used to join different parts of speech : as, *faites cela pour moi*, do it for me, preposition ; *je le ferai pour vous plaire*, I will do it to please you, conjunction.

CHAP. IX.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

INTERJECTIONS are some invariable words used to express the affections of the mind, either of *joy*, *grief*, *fear*, *aversion*, *derision*, *surprise*, &c.

- | | |
|-----------------------|---|
| 1. Of joy, as | bon ! <i>well</i> ! vive la joie ! <i>huzza</i> ! |
| 2. Of grief, as | hélas ! <i>alas</i> ! ah ! <i>ah</i> ! &c. |
| 3. Of fear, as | ah ! <i>ah</i> ! hélas ! <i>alas</i> ! hé ! <i>oh</i> ! &c. |
| 4. Of aversion, as | fi ! <i>fie upon</i> ! fi donc ! <i>fie upon</i> ! |
| 5. Of derision, as | oh ! <i>oh</i> ! zest ! <i>oshaw</i> ! |
| 6. Of surprise, as | l'en Dieu ! <i>Voilà God</i> ! eh ! <i>lack a day</i> ! |
| 7. Of encouraging, as | allons ! <i>come on</i> ! courage ! <i>cheer up</i> ! |
| 8. To stop, as | holà ! <i>hold</i> ! tout beau ! <i>softly</i> ! |

PART III.

OF SYNTAX.*

SYNTAX is the regular construction of the different parts of speech, conformably to the rules of grammar, and the genius of a language.

Construction supposes three things in every tongue : the *choice* of words, their *concord*, and their *arrangement* : these objects are fully explained in the following Rules, which point out the different genius of the two languages with accuracy and precision.

Syntax is here divided into twenty-four chapters : the chapters are again divided into sections when occasion requires it.

CHAP. I.

USE OF THE FRENCH ARTICLES.

THIS chapter is divided into *four* sections : *the first* explains the several circumstances in which articles are used in both languages ; *the second* enumerates the cases in which the article is used in French, and not in English ; *the third* describes those in which it is used in English, and not in French ; *the fourth* contains all the circumstances in which both languages take no article.

* The learner must not begin the second chapter of the syntax till he understands the rules of the first ; nor the third before he knows the second ; and so on for all others. It is also proper that he should repeat at least once a week the principal rules which he has already learnt, lest he should forget them.

SECTION I.

ARTICLE USED IN FRENCH AND IN ENGLISH.

RULE 1.—*un, une, a, an.*

The indefinite article (*un*, masc. *une*, fem. in English, *a* or *an*) is used in both languages before a substantive common in the singular, to denote one individual of a class, without specifying which one. Examples :

<i>A</i> book,	<i>a</i> house,	<i>a</i> friend,	<i>a</i> philosopher.
Un <i>livre</i> ,	une <i>maison</i> ,	un <i>ami</i> ,	un <i>philosophe</i> .
England is <i>a</i> fruitful country.			<i>A</i> wise man.
<i>L'Angleterre</i> est un <i>pays</i> fertile.			Un <i>homme</i> sage.

RULE 2.—*le, la, les, the.*

The definite article (*le*, masc., *la*, fem., *l'*, of both genders before a vowel or *h* mute, *les* for the plural of both genders, in English *the*) is used in both languages before a substantive, taken in a particular and specified sense. Examples :

<i>The</i> house of my father.	<i>The</i> book which I read.
<i>La maison</i> de mon père.	<i>Le livre</i> que je lis.
<i>The</i> horse which I have sold to you is excellent.	
<i>Le cheval</i> que je vous ai vendu est excellent.	

RULE 3.—*a* or *an* rendered by *le, la, les*.

The English make use of the indefinite article *a* or *an* before nouns of *measure, weight, and number*, when they want to express how much a thing is worth, or sold for : the French on the contrary use the definite article *le, la, les*, in such cases. Examples :

<i>Measure.</i>	{ That lace is worth a crown <i>a</i> yard. <i>Cette dentelle</i> vaut un écu <i>la</i> verge. Coals cost two shillings <i>a</i> bushel. <i>Le charbon</i> coûte deux schellings <i>le</i> boisseau.
<i>Weight.</i>	{ Butter is sold for ten-pence <i>a</i> pound. <i>Le beurre</i> se vend dix sous <i>la</i> livre.
<i>Number.</i>	{ Eggs are worth fifteen-pence <i>a</i> dozen. <i>Les œufs</i> valent quinze sous <i>la</i> douzaine.

SECTION II.

ARTICLE USED IN FRENCH AND NOT IN ENGLISH.

RULE 4.—*le, la, les*, not *the*.

The definite article (*le, la, les*.) is used in French and not in English, before substantives common, taken in the whole extent of their signification. Examples :

Men are mortal ;	<i>Les hommes sont mortels.</i>
God hates sinners ;	<i>Dieu hait les pécheurs.</i>
Virtue is amiable ;	<i>La vertu est aimable.</i>
Vice is odious ;	<i>Le vice est odieux.</i>

The words *men, sinners, virtue*, and *vice*, are taken in a general sense ; because all men are mortal, God hates all sinners, all virtues are amiable, and all vices odious.

RULE 5.—*le, la, les*, not *the*.

The definite article (*le, la, les*.) is used in French and not in English, before the names of kingdoms, countries, and provinces. Examples :

France and England are two powerful kingdoms.
La France et l'Angleterre sont deux puissants royaumes.
 I have passed through Spain, Switzerland, and Germany.
J'ai passé par l'Espagne, la Suisse, et l'Allemagne.

These nouns usually take no article, when they are after the prepositions *de* and *en*. Examples :

Les royaumes de France et d'Angleterre sont puissants.
J'ai voyagé en Italie. J'arrive d'Allemagne. Je viens de Russie.

However, the names of distant countries take always the article ; such are *le Bengal, le Canada, le Japon, le Mexique, le Pérou*, &c. Some names of provinces follow the same rule : as, *le Dauphiné, le Maine, le Perche, le Mantouan, le Gévaudan*, &c. Thus we say, *je vais au Japon*, and not *en Japon* ; *j'arrive du Canada, l'or du Pérou*.

N.B. When the names of kingdoms and republics are the same as those of their capital towns, they have a less definite use, and in either sense take no article ; of this

sort are *Naples, Venise, and Gènes*: thus we say, *Venise est une république*; not *la Venise est une république*.

RULE 6.—*le, la, les.*

The definite article (*le, la, les,*) is used in French before the adjectives substantively used, whether it is used or not in English. Examples:

The industrious are praised, and the slothful punished;
Les diligents sont loués et les paresseux punis.
 Black and white are two opposite colours;
Le noir et le blanc sont deux couleurs opposées.

RULE 7.—*du, de la, des, some.*

The partitive article (*du, m. sing., de la, f., de l'* before a vowel or *h, m., and des, plur.* of both genders) is used in French before a substantive, when we want to express an indeterminate number, or a portion of a thing: this article answers to the English word *some*, expressed or understood. Examples:

Give me *some* bread, *some* meat, and *some* eggs;
Donnez-moi du pain, de la viande, et des œufs.
 I have bought paper, ink, and pens;
J'ai acheté du papier, de l'encre, et des plumes.

RULE 8.—*de* instead of *du, de la, des.*

If a substantive taken in a partitive sense as before, is preceded in French by an adjective, the preposition *de* is used for both genders and numbers, instead of the partitive article, *du, de la, des.* Examples:

Donnez-moi de bon pain, de bonne viande, et de bons œufs.
J'ai acheté de mauvais papier, et de mauvaise encre.

N.B. Every time the words *some* or *any* are or can be used in English before a substantive, the partitive article *du, de la, des,* or the preposition *de,* must be used in French, according to the distinction of the two preceding rules.

RULE 9.—*Where the Article is required.*

Every noun which is *the subject, or the term* of a verb. must have in French one of the three articles, *defi-*

nite, indefinite, or partitive, as mentioned before. Examples :

Gold and silver cannot render man happy ;
L'or et l'argent ne sauraient rendre l'homme heureux.
 Spain produces wine, oranges, and olives ;
L'Espagne produit du vin, des oranges, et des olives.

N.B. I do not comprehend in this rule the proper names of persons and towns, the substantives preceded by a pronoun or an adjective of number, neither of which has any article, as we shall see in the rules 14th and 15th.

RULE 10.—*Repetition of the Articles.*

The articles are repeated in French before every substantive, and agree with them in gender and number ; in English, on the contrary, they are invariable. Examples :

The genius of the French tongue consists in clearness, purity, elegance, and strength ;
Le génie de la langue Française consiste dans la clarté, la pureté, l'élégance, et la force.
 I have bought meat, cheese, and fruits ;
J'ai acheté de la viande, du fromage, et des fruits.

SECTION III.

ARTICLES USED IN ENGLISH, AND NOT IN FRENCH.

RULE 11.—*the, not le, la, les.*

The definite article (*the*) is used in English, and not in French, before the ordinal numbers, *the first, the second, the third, the fourth, &c.*, used in quotations. Examples :

Book *the first*, chapter *the sixth*, section *the ninth* ;
Livre premier, chapitre six, section neuvième.

No article is used in French before the ordinal numbers which come after the Christian names of sovereigns. Examples :

Charles <i>the first</i> ,	Philip <i>the second</i> ,	George <i>the third</i> * ;
<i>Charles premier,</i>	<i>Philippe second,</i>	<i>George trois.</i>

* Observe, by the preceding examples, that the ordinal numbers (the two first excepted) are rendered in French by the cardinal, after the names of sovereigns, and also often in quotations.

RULE 12. — *a*, not *un* or *une*.

The indefinite article (*a* or *an*) is used in English, and not in French, before nouns which express the *titles*, *professions*, *trade*, *country*, or any other attribute of the substantive antecedent. Examples :

My father was <i>a</i> nobleman ;	<i>Mon père était noble.</i>
Your brother is <i>a</i> physician ;	<i>Votre frère est médecin.</i>
Are you <i>a</i> Frenchman ?	<i>Etes-vous Français ?</i>

RULE 13. — *a*, not *un* or *une*.

The indefinite article (*a* or *an*) is also used in English, and not in French, in the four following cases :

1. Before a substantive used to qualify another. Example :

The King was received in triumph, *an* honour he deserved ;
Le Roi fut reçu en triomphe, honneur qu'il méritait bien.

2. Before a substantive which specifies or explains the thing spoken of. Example :

I have read to-day the Busy Body, *an* esteemed comedy ,
J'ai lu aujourd'hui l'Empressé, comédie estimée.

3. In the title of a book, or of any performance. Example :

A Grammar of the French tongue ;
Grammaire de la langue Française.

4. After the word *what*, used to express surprise. Example :

Quel bruit vous faites ! What *a* noise you make !

SECTION IV.

NO ARTICLE USED IN FRENCH OR IN ENGLISH.

RULE 14. — *No Article in either Language.*

No article is used in French or English before the word *God* (*Dieu*), nor before the proper names of *heathen*

deities, of men, women, towns, villages, days, or months.

Examples :

God is present every where ;

*Dieu est présent partout.**

Cicero and Demosthenes were two great orators ;

Cicéron et Démosthènes étaient deux grands orateurs.

London and Paris are two large capital cities ;

Londres et Paris sont deux grandes capitales.

Jupiter and Venus were heathen divinities ;

Jupiter et Vénus étaient des divinités païennes.

Some (but few) proper names of persons take an article in French : such are, *l'Arioste, le Tasse, l'Arétin, le Titien, &c.*†

Some names of kingdoms, provinces, and towns take also an article : such are, *le Mexique, le Bengal, le Perche, le Maine, la Haye, l'Aigle, la Rochelle, le Havre, le Mans, &c.*

RULE 15. — *No Article in either Language.*

No article is used, in French or in English, before a substantive preceded by any pronoun whatever. Examples :

My friend will come to-morrow ; *Mon ami viendra demain.*

This house is new ; *Cette maison est neuve.*

What's o'clock now ? *Quelle heure est-il à présent ?*

RULE 16. — *The Preposition de.*

No article (but the preposition *de*) is used in French after the words *espèce, sorte, genre, mélange*, or any other of the same signification. Examples :

Man is exposed to all sorts of infirmities ;

L'homme est sujet toutes sortes d'infirmités.

Jealousy is a mixture of love and hatred, of fear and despair ;

La jalousie est un mélange d'amour et de haine, de crainte et de désespoir.

* The definite article should be used before the proper names, if they were in the plural, or particularized. Examples : *le Dieu des Chrétiens est tout-puissant. Les Cicérons sont rares.*

† Before French proper names of persons, preceded by the article *le*, the prepositions *de* and *à* are never contracted with that article ; thus we say, *les tableaux de le Brun*, and not *du Brun* ; except *le Poussin, les tableaux du Poussin*.

RULE 17.—*Transposition of Words.*

No article (but the preposition *de*) is used before the latter of two substantives, when it expresses the *nature, matter, species, quality, or country* of the first. Examples :

A head-ach, a tooth-ach ;	<i>Un mal de tête, an mal de dent.</i>
A gold watch, silk stockings ;	<i>Une montre d'or, des bas de soie.</i>
Spanish wool, Burgundy wine ;	<i>De la laine d'Espagne, du vin de Bourgogne.</i>

The English often make a transposition of words ; this transposition is not allowed in French, and the order must be reversed : thus we say,

The king's guards ;	<i>les gardes du roi.</i>
A chambermaid ;	<i>une femme de chambre.</i>
Diana's anger was the cause of Acteon's death ;	
<i>La colère de Diane causa la mort d'Actéon.</i>	

RULE 18.—*The Preposition de.*

No article (but the preposition *de*) is used in French after words of quantity, measure, scarcity, or exclusion ; as, *abondance*, plenty ; *assez*, enough ; *aune*, ell ; *autant*, as much ; *beaucoup*, much ; *boisseau*, bushel ; *combien*, how many ; *livre*, pound ; *nombre*, number ; *jamais*, never ; *moins*, less ; *pas* or *point*, no ; *peu*, little ; *pinte*, pint ; *pot*, pot ; *plus*, more ; *quantité*, quantity ; *rien*, nothing ; *tant*, so many ; *trop*, too much ; *verge*, yard, &c. Examples :

You have much wit ;	<i>Vous avez beaucoup d'esprit.</i>
He has no prudence ;	<i>Il n'a point de prudence.</i>
You make too much noise ;	<i>Vous faites trop de bruit.</i>
I have but little money ;	<i>Je n'ai que peu d'argent.</i>

Note 1. The words *que* and *quoi*, used in a sentence of admiration, are also followed by *de*. Examples :

How many sorrows !	<i>Que de chagrins !</i>
What more sad !	<i>Quoi de plus triste !</i>

Note 2. The word *bien* is always followed by an article, and *beaucoup* is never.

He has a great many friends ;	
<i>Il a bien des amis, il a beaucoup d'amis.</i>	

RULE 19.—*The Preposition de.*

No article (but the preposition *de*) is used in French when the substantive is taken in a general sense.

1. After an adjective which governs the preposition *de*.
Examples :

You are praise-worthy ;
Vous êtes digne de louanges.
Human life is full of disappointments ;
La vie humaine est pleine de revers.

2. After the verbs and participles which are followed in English by the word *with*. Examples :

You are puffed up with pride ; *Vous êtes bouffi d'orgueil.*
Fill up the bottle with wine ; *Emplissez la bouteille de vin.*

But when the substantive is specified, the article must be used. Examples :

He deserves the praises which are given to him ;
Il est digne des louanges qu'on lui donne.
His life was filled up with the most dreadful misfortunes.
Sa vie fut remplie des plus affreux revers.

RULE 20.—*Cases where no Article is used.*

1. No article is used in either language before nouns which form but one idea with the verb which precedes them ; such may be discriminated by observing that they are, or could be, expressed by one word in English, as in the following examples :

To pity the unfortunate ; *Avoir pitié des malheureux.*
To envy the happiness of others ; *Porter envie au bonheur d'autrui.*
To visit a friend ; *Rendre visite à un ami.*

2. The article is not used after the prepositions *sans*, *avec*, or *par*, when the noun following forms with them a kind of adverb. Examples :

You speak elegantly ;
Vous parlez avec élégance.
To vanquish without danger, is to triumph without glory ;
A vaincre sans péril, on triomphe sans gloire.
I have travelled by land and by sea ;
J'ai voyagé par terre et par mer.

3. The article is not used before the cardinal numbers, *un*, one ; *deux*, two ; *trois*, three, &c. Examples :

Lend me twenty pounds ;
I have six oranges ;

*Prêtez-moi vingt livres.
J'ai six oranges.*

Nevertheless, the definite article masculine (*le, les*) is used in French as in English before the cardinal numbers, when speaking of cards, of things which have a fixed number, of the date of the month, or of a particular number specified by a relative pronoun : thus we say, with an article in both languages, *le huit de cœur*, the eight of hearts ; *les quatre saisons*, the four seasons ; *rendez-moi les vingt livres que je vous prêtai le dix de Mars*, return me the twenty pounds I lent you on the 10th of March.

EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLES.

SECTION I.

CASES IN WHICH ARTICLES ARE USED IN FRENCH AND IN ENGLISH.

RULE 1.—*Indefinite Article, un, une ; a, an.*

A friend cannot be well known in prosperity, nor hidden in
ami ne peut bien connu dans la prospérité ni se cacher
 adversity. Good example is a language which every body under-
l' —tê le bon exemple langue f —que tout le monde com-
 stands. Fortune is a capricious deity. When a man is once out
prend la — f —cieux divinité quand une fois hors
 of the way of God, he easily falls from one fault into another.
voit Dieu aisément tomber une faute f dans une autre
 A wise man values pleasure very little, because it is a bane to the
sage homme estimer le plaisir très-peu parce que c' —poison pour
 mind ; but he values virtue much, because it is an ornament in
l'esprit la vertu beaucoup parce qu'elle —ornement la
 prosperity, a comfort in adversity, and the source of all happiness.
consolation —source f tout bonheur.

RULE 2.—*Definite Article, le, la, les ; the.*

The spring, the summer, the autumn, and the winter are the four
printemps été automne hiver
 seasons of the year. The sight, the hearing, the feeling, the taste, and
saison année vue ouïe toucher goût
 the smell, are the five natural senses. The east, the west, the north,
odorat cinq naturel sens est ouest nord
 and the south are the four cardinal points.
sud cardinal —

The love of glory, the fear of shame, and the design of making one's
*amour la gloire crainte f la honte dessein de faire **
fortune, are often the cause of that valour so much celebrated among
*— f souvent — f valeur si * vanté parmi*
men. The instructions of adversity are wholesome, though
es — de l' salubre quoique
unpleasing; the lessons of prosperity are pleasing, but often
désagréable leçon de la agréable
pernicious: the first discover sometimes concealed virtues, and
—cieux première découvrir a quelquefois des caché
the other hidden vices. The air is very healthy in France, and
autre des secret — m — très-sain en
the climate temperate.
climat tempéré.

RULE 3.—*a, an*, rendered by *le, la, les*.

I sell sugar for five guineas *a* hundred weight; coffee at seven
*vendre le sucre * guinée quintal * le café **
shillings *a* pound, and tobacco at three-pence *an* ounce. Corn is sold
*schelling livre f le tabac * sou once le blé se vend*
for two crowns *a* bushel. This riband costs a shilling *a* yard. This
écus boisseau ruban coûter verge f
cheese costs seven pence *a* pound. Good wine is sold for five shillings
*fromage le bon vin se vend **
a bottle. Bread costs two-pence *a* pound. Beer is sold for five-
*bouteille le pain la bière se vend **
pence *a* pot. (How much) *a* pound? How much *a* yard? How
pot combien verge f
much *a* dozen?
dozaine f

SECTION II.

CASES IN WHICH ARTICLES ARE USED IN FRENCH, AND NOT IN ENGLISH.

RULE 4.—*le, la, les*, not *the*.

Clemency, wisdom, and courage are finer ornaments in a prince,
clémence sagesse — de plus beau ornement dans —
than the jewels with which he is covered. Custom is the legislator
*que joyau * dont couvert usage législateur*
of languages. Charity is the greatest of all christian virtues. History,
des langue charité la plus grande chrétien vertu histoire
geography, and mathematics are necessary sciences. Pride and vanity
géographie mathématique des nécessaire — orgueil —tê

are often the source of many misfortunes. *Heroes* have their fits of
souvent — *f* *bien des malheurs* *héros* *moment de*
 fear, and *cowards* their brave moments. *Intemperance* and *idleness*
crainte lâche moment de bravoure intempérance paresse
 are the two most dangerous enemies of life. *Eloquence*, *painting*,
plus dangereux ennemi vie é— peinture
sculpture, and *poetry* belong to the imagination.
 — *poésie appartenir*

RULE 5.—*le, la, les*, before names of kingdoms.

2. I like to travel; I was last year in Italy;—3. I come
aimer à voyager *à l'an dernier Italie* *venir*
 now from Prussia;—2. I shall stay this winter in England;
à présent Prusse *rester cet hiver Angleterre*
 but I shall go next spring to Germany.
aller (ir) au prochain printemps en Allemagne

1. Europe, Asia, Africa, and America, are the four parts of
 — *Asie Afrique Amérique* *partie*
 the world.—3. The kingdoms of France, Spain, and England
monde m *royaume m* — *Espagne*
 are very powerful.—1. Sicily is the granary of Italy, and Italy
très-puissant Sicile f *grenier l'Italie*
 the garden of Europe.—3. I come from Russia, and I go
jardin de l *venir Russie* *aller (ir) n*
 next spring to America.—1. Touraine, Anjou and Normandy are
au en — *f* — — *dis f*
 three fruitful provinces of France.—1. I set out for Portugal next
fertile — *partir a ** — *m la*
 week.—3. My father comes from Switzerland.
semaine f *venir Suisse*

RULE 6.—*le, la, les*, before adjectives.

Observe that all adjectives, verbs, prepositions, &c., when substantively used, are masculine in French.

Good and *bad* seem to be blended together through all
*bon mauvais sembler ** *mêlé ensemble dans toute la*
 nature, and sometimes to be confounded with each other.
 — *quelquefois ** *confondu l'un avec l'autre.*
White and *black* are two opposite colours. *Green* hurts the sight
blanc noir *opposé couleur vert blesser* *vue f*
 less than red.
moins que rouge

The *wise* man seeketh wisdom, but the *fool* despiseth understand-
*sage ** *chercher sagesse* *fou mépriser* *raison* *4*
 ing. Newton says, that there are seven primitive colours, called
dire (ir) qu'il y a *couleur appelé*
orange colour, red, yellow, green, blue, indigo, and violet.
 * *rouge, jaune, vert, bleu* —

RULE 7.—*Partitive article du, de la, des; some.*

Give me *some bread* and *some butter*; *some beer* or *some wine*; *some*
 donner H pain beurre m bière ou vin
meat or *some cheese*; *some mustard* and *some vinegar*; *some apples*, *some*
 viande f fromage moutarde f vinaigre m pomme
oranges, and *some lemons*.
 — citron

A good christian considers the world as a place of banishment,
 chrétien considérer monde m comme lieu bannissement
 where he meets with *snares*, *difficulties*, and *dangers*. Benefits
 où trouver " piège —té — les service
 procure friends, and one (good turn) deserves another. Money
 —rer ami bienfait en mériter un autre argent
 gives to a woman credit, friends, birth, and beauty. Spain
 donner femme crédit ami naissance beauté Espagne
 produces wine, lemons, oranges, and olives. Give me some cold water
 produire vin citron — — froid eau f
 and red wine.
 rouge vin

RULE 8.—*de, instead of du, de la, des.*

History is full of old generals, conquered by young soldiers.
 L'histoire 9 plein vieux général vaincus jeune soldat
 Great events happened at the death of Cæsar. Good cider
 événements arriver c à mort César bon cidre m
 (is better) than bad wine. We have in our garden fine peaches and
 vaut mieux que mauvais vin jardin belles pêche
 apricots. To write ² well ¹, one must have good ink, good pens,
 beaux abricot pour écrire bien il faut " encre f plume f
 and good paper. There is good bread, but bad meat.
 papier voilà " pain mauvais viande f

RULE 9.—*Where the Article is required.*

Honour is due to kings and magistrates. Let us prefer virtue to
 honneur dû roi —trat préférer H vertu
 interest. Rare events strike us (with admiration.) Ignorance is
 intérêt —événement frapper d'admiration —
 the source of errors, scruples, and superstition. Glory and infamy
 —f erreur scrupule m — Gloire infamie
 are vain, if they do not attend real goods and evils. Iron and
 — accompagner réel biens maux fer
 steel are more useful than gold and silver. Remedies are often
 acier plus utile or argent remède souvent
 disgusting in proportion as they are salutary. Gold and silver
 dégoûtant en — de ce qu' salutaire
 cannot render man happy.
 ne sauraient rendre heureux

RULE 10.— *The Articles must be repeated.*

Politeness is not always born with us; it is often the offspring
Politesse 4 toujours née avec souvent fruit
 of custom, experience, and application. If society is formed of the
usage 4 — si société 4 se forme
 communication of ideas and sentiments, speech must be the essential
— idée 4 — la parole doit en être essentiel
 tie of it; being at once the pencil of wit, and the interpreter of
*lien * * à la fois pinceau esprit 4 interprète*
 the heart. Interest, glory, and ambition are the great motives of our
cœur Intérêt 9 gloire — grand mobile m
 actions. Besides gold and silver, Europe draws from the new
— outre or 4 argent 5 tirer nouveau
 world pepper, sugar, tea, tobacco, and several other things.
monde 7 poivre m sucre m thé tabac plusieurs autre chose
 Vice and virtue have contrary effects.
—m 4 vertu contraire 7 effet.

SECTION III.

CASES IN WHICH ARTICLES ARE USED IN ENGLISH, AND NOT IN FRENCH.

RULE 11.— *the, not le, la, les.*

Observe, that the ordinal numbers used in English after the name of a sovereign are expressed in French by the cardinal *trois, quatre, cinq, six, &c.* the two first excepted; but the cardinal or ordinal are almost indifferently used after the words *livre, chapitre, &c.*, and we can say *livre six, or sixième; règle douze, or douzième; chapitre quatre, or quatrième.*

Charles the second, king of Spain, son of Philip the fourth, left his
roi Espagne fils Philippe laisser c
 kingdom to Philip the fifth. William the third, king of England,
royaume Guillaume Angleterre
 married the princess Mary, daughter of James the second, and
épouser c princesse Marie fille Jacques
 grand-daughter of Charles the first.
petite-fille

Book the third, chapter the sixth, section the second, rule the tenth,
livre m chapitre m — règle f
 volume the fourth, article the fifth.
volume m

RULE 12.— *a, not un or une.*

Socrates was a philosopher; Apelles a painter; Phidias, a sculptor;
a —phé peintre —teur

Cicero, an orator; Livy, an historian; and Virgil, a poet. Harvey
Cicéron —teur; Tite-Live —rien Virgile poète
 a physician of great reputation. I am a Frenchman, but my father
médecin — Français
 was an Englishman. The best coffee comes from Mocha, a town
B Anglais meilleur café venir Moka ville
 of Arabia Felix. Was your father a nobleman? No, he was a
l'Arabie Heureux f B noble Non B
 soldier. The canal of Briare, in the Gatinois, a province of France,
soldat — dans m —
 joins the Loire to the Seine. The king of Prussia was at once a
joindre —f —f Prusse B à la fois
 king, a warrior, and a philosopher.
guerrier —phe

RULE 13.—*a*, not *un* or *une*.

1. A Roman history, from the foundation of Rome to the
Romain histoire depuis fondation jusqu'à
 destruction of the Roman empire.—2. What an unhappy situation
— —m quelle fâcheuse —
 is that which obliges a father in his own defence to expose the failings
celle obliger père dans propre défense à révéler faute
 of his children!—3. The triumph was decreed to Cæsar, an honour
enfant triomphe c décerner César honneur qu'
 he well deserved.—3. Raphael excelled in expression, a rare
mériter B bien — exceller B dans l' —
 talent in painters.
— chez les peintre

SECTION IV.

CASES IN WHICH NO ARTICLE IS USED IN EITHER LANGUAGE.

RULE 14.—*No Article before Proper Names*

Aristotle and Plato flourished in the age of Philip and
—te Platon fleurir c siècle m Philippe
 Alexander. London and Paris are the two greatest capitals in Europe.
d' —dre —dres plus grand —le f de l' —
 Come and see me on Friday or Saturday. September and October are
*venir H * me voir * Vendredi Samedi —bre —bre*
 two fine months in England. Jupiter, Mars, and Venus were heathen
beau mois Angleterre — — Vénus B païennes
 divinities. Demosthenes and Cicero were two great orators; the former
divinité 7 B grand orateur premier
 flourished at Athens, and the latter at Rome.
fleurir c à Athènes second —

RULE 15.—*No Article before Pronouns.*

No one becomes debauched or virtuous on a sudden. Nothing
personne ne devenir débauché vertueux tout d'un coup rien ne
 can be more intolerable than a fortunate fool. Whoever
pouvoir (ir) plus insupportable qu' heureux soit quiconque
 spares the bad, does harm to the good. This watch is new;
épargner méchants faire (ir) tort bons montre f neuf
 give it to your sister.
il à sœur

RULE 16.—*de after sorte, genre, &c.*

There are two kinds of curiosity, the one of interest, which
il y a sorte f —té l'une intérêt
 incites us to desire to learn what may be useful to us;
porter 48 à désirer d'apprendre ce qui pouvoir (ir) A nous être utile
 and the other of pride, which proceeds from the desire of knowing
l'autre orgueil venir désir de savoir
 what others are ignorant of. (Old age) is a sort of tyrant, who
*ce que les autres * ignorer A * vieillesse f sorte tyran*
 forbids, under pain of death, all the pleasures of youth. Politeness
défendre sous peine mort plaisir 4 jeunesse 9 politesse
 is a mixture of discretion, complacency, and circumspection.
mélange m discrétion complaisance circonspection
 Praises are a kind of tribute (that is paid) to true merit.
louange 9 sorte tribut qu'on paye 4 vrai mérite m
 There is in goodness a kind of magnet which attracts all men
il y a dans 4 bonté sorte aimant attirer
 to itself. The hieroglyphics of the Egyptians were figures of men,
soi hiéroglyphes Egyptien B —7
 birds, animals, and reptiles.
oiseau — —

RULE 17.—*Transposition of Words.*

The galleries of the House of Commons are supported by slender
galerie Chambre f des Commune soutenir de petit
 iron pillars, ornamented with Corinthian capitals. Burgundy wine is
fer pilier ornés de Corinthien chapiteau Bourgogne vin 9
 very dear in England. The English cannot manufacture their
cher en Angleterre Anglais ne pouvoir (ir) A —rer
 superfine cloth without Spanish wool. I always wear silk-stockings
—fin drap sans Espagne laine porter toujours soie bas 7
 in summer. On the first day of every parliament, the four re-
*en été * chaque parlement*
 presentatives of the city of London appear in scarlet gowns, and
représentant cité Londres paraître en écarlate robes
 sit near the speaker.
s'asseoir (ir) auprès du président

Socrates' wisdom and Achilles' valour are celebrated in the writings
sagesse valeur célébré dans écrit
 of historians. The character of Esop's fables is simple nature. O
des —rien caractère m des Esops —f la— —
 happiness! our being's end, for thee we live, for thee we dare
bonheur être fin 49 vivre (ir) oser
 to die.
 * *mourir*

RULE 18. — *Preposition de.*

Those who govern are like celestial bodies, which have much
ceux gouverner comme céleste corps 2 beaucoup
 brightness and no rest. Few people have prudence enough to avoid
éclat point repos peu gens — assez pour éviter
 bad company, and to distrust themselves. Mothers have
mauvais compagnie 9 pour se défier d' eux-mêmes mère 9
 often (too much) indulgence for their children. The few vestiges
souvent trop — enfant le peu —
 which remain of the brilliant actions of the Greeks and Romans,
rester brillant — Grec Romains
 are found in Plutarch and several other historians. Authors
se trouvent dans Plutarque plusieurs autre historien auteur
 derive more eloquence, force, and grandeur, from the choice and
tirer plus — — choix
 disposition of words, than from any other cause. Few things (are
— mot que d'aucune —f peu chose
 necessary) to make a wise man happy. Give me two hundred pounds
suffire (ir) pour rendre sage heureux H moi cent livre
 of butter, five yards of riband, and a great quantity of coals.
beurre verge ruban —té charbon sing.

RULE 19. — *de, after an Adjective.*

Human life is full of disappointments. (To die) for one's country,
humain vie 9 plein revers Mourir son pays
 is a death full of charms. A noble but confused thought is a diamond
mort charme — —se pensée diamant
 covered with dust. If fortune has blessed you with her gifts, if
couvert poussière —f 4 favorisé 48 don
 besides you are endowed with wit and judgment, be not puffed up
*outré cela doué esprit jugement ne vous enflez pas**
 with pride, and do not condemn others. No one is fit for
orgueil mépriser les autres on n'est pas propre à
 friendship, who is not endowed with virtue. Whoever attacks
l'amitié quand on doué vertu Quiconque attaque
 the sacred person of a king, is guilty of high treason.
sacré personne f roi coupable haut trahison

RULE 20. — *The Article in several other Cases.*

2. Those who speak without reflection are exposed to many
ceux parler sans réflexion exposés bien 18

errors. —2. We often do by self-love what we think we
*erreur faire (ir) amour-propre ce que croire (ir) **
do through (good nature). —3. Bibliographers arrange books in five
par bienveillance —phe —ger livre en
principal classes; divinity, jurisprudence, history, polite letters,
— *théologie — histoire belles-lettres f*
and arts. —3. The mouth of the Danube has five large canals in
— *embouchure —m grand —*
the (Euxine sea). —3. The temple of Solomon was begun four
Pont Euxin —m Sa— c commencé
hundred and eighty years after the departure of the Israelites from
** quatre-vingts départ —*
Egypt. —1. I have pity (on the) poor.
Egypte pitié des pauvres pl

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE ARTICLES.

Secrecy is the key of prudence, and the sanctuary of wisdom.
secret 9 clef 4 — —aire m sagesse 4
Cares and infelicities are often the attendants of greatness. Lewis
soin 9 malheur 10 souvent compagnon grandeur 4 Louis
the fourteenth was the protector of sciences. The English language
11 c —teur 4 — Anglais langue f
abounds with writings addressed to the imagination and feelings;
abonder en écrit adressé — sentiment
the inventive powers of Shakspeare, the sublime conceptions of
créateur esprit sing. 14 — pensée
Milton, the strength and harmony of Pope, the delicacy of Addison,
force f —nie délicatesse
and the pathetic simplicity of Sterne, render them comparable with
pathétique —té rendre — à
the best authors among the ancients.
meilleur auteur parmi ancien

Some thieves having broken into a gentleman's house, went to
7 voleurs étant entrés dans la particulier 17 aller (ir) c
the footman's bed, and told him, that if he moved, he was a dead man.
domestique lit 17 lui dire (ir) c remuer B B mort
I am sure, replied he, that if I move, I am alive.
sûr répliqua-t-il A en vie

Envy judges of actions by the persons who perform them; but
envie 9 juger — 4 par personne faire (ir)
equity judges of persons by their actions. When God deprives us
équité 4 quand priver 48
of any thing that is dear to us, such as wife, children, friends, or for-
quelque chose f cher telle que femme enfant ami
tune, we must submit without murmur or complaint. Mutual
— f devoir A nous y soumettre sans murmure et sans plainte mutuel

benevolence is the bond of society ; without it, life is grievous, full of
bienveillance 9 *lien* 4 *société* f *sans elle* *vie* 9 *à charge pleine* 19
 fear, and void of comfort. Few people deny the truth of the gospel,
crainte *sans* * *consolation* *peu* 18 *gens* *nier* *vérité* *évangile* m
 and yet many live as if it was not true. The Por-

cependant *plusieurs* *vivre* (ir) *comme s'il* *est* *vrai*
 tuguese send every year a fleet to Brazil, to bring cotton,
 — *gais* *envoyer* (ir) *tous les ans* *flotte* f *au Brésil* *pour apporter* *colon* 7
 amber, saltpetre, and many other articles. Cæsar's first attempt on
ambre, salpêtre m *plusieurs* *chose* 17 *attaque*
 Britain took place fifty-five years before the birth of Jesus Christ.
Bretagne f *eut lieu* *cinquante-cinq* *an* *avant* *naissance*

Possession without right is in many cases of property a better
 — 9 *droit* 4 *plusieurs* *cas* *propriété* *meilleur*

title than right without possession ; but it is not the same in cases
titre m *sans* 4 *mais ce* *la même chose* *en fait*
 of respect and consideration. The sins particularly forbidden in the

— 21 — *péché* — *lièrement* *défendus*
 gospel, are sensual lusts, covetousness, anger, envy, hatred, pride,
évangile *plaisirs des sens, avarice* 10 *colère* f *envie* *haine* f *orgueil*
 vanity, theft, and falsehood. The action of the great Scipio, when

— *té* *vol* *fausseté* *grand Scipion* *quand*
 he added to the fortune of a young princess he had taken prisoner,
ajouter c — f *jeune princesse* *qu'il* *est* *faite* *prisonnière*
 all the money which her friends brought him to ransom her, has
argent *ami* *lui apporter* c *pour sa rançon* *ne lui* *a*
 done him no less honour than his famous conquests.
pas fait *moins* 18 *honneur* *fameux* *conquête* f

Geography gives a true description of the terrestrial globe ; the
géographie *donner* *vrai* — *terrestre* — m
 globe has an imaginary axis, and is surrounded with imaginary
 — *naire* *axe* m *environné* 19

circles ; the axis is a line passing through the centre of the earth,
cercles *ligne* f *qui passe* *par* — m

upon which the whole earth turns like a wheel upon the axle-tree.
sur laquelle *toute la* *tourne* *comme* *roue* f *essieu*

Machiavel (lays down) for maxims in the art of governing, artifice,
établir — *me* *dans* — *gouverner* — 9

stratagem, (despotic power,) injustice, and irreligion. Christopher
 10 — *gène* *despotisme* — — *phe*

Columbus, who discovered America in 1492, was a Genoese, a great
Colomb *découvrir* c *en* *est* 12 *Génois*

seaman, and the best geographer of his age.

marin *géographe* *siècle* m

CHAP. II.

SYNTAX OF SUBSTANTIVES.

RULE 21.—*Two Substantives united by a Conjunction.*

WHEN there is a conjunction between two nouns, they require the same article : and if a substantive is preceded by a preposition, that preposition is repeated in French before all other substantives governed by it. Examples :—

Your advice pleased the king, the minister, and the parliament ;
Votre conseil plut au roi, au ministre, et au parlement.

A man without religion is in a state of doubt and confusion, fear and distrust.

Un homme sans religion est dans un état de doute et de confusion, de crainte et de défiance.

RULE 22.—*The latter of two Substantives is preceded by de.*

The latter of two substantives relating to each other is generally preceded by the preposition *de* in French, whether it is in the genitive or dative in English. Examples :—

Impious men are enemies to virtue ;

Les impies sont ennemis de la vertu.

The dog is a friend to man ; *Le chien est l'amî de l'homme.*

RULE 23.—*Nouns formed of two Substantives.*

When two substantives make a compound word in English, their order is inverted in French, and the preposition *à* intervenes, when the one expresses the use of the other ; as,

Gunpowder ;

De la poudre à canon.

Fire-arms ;

Des armes à feu.

A dining-room ;

Une salle à manger.

It is preceded by *au*, *à la*, or *aux*, when it signifies something proper to drink, or to eat : as,

The hay-market ;

Le marché au foin.

RULE 24. — *A Noun collective general.*

A noun collective general (that is to say, representing the whole object, such as the words *peuple*, *nation*, *armée*, *flotte*, &c.) requires that the *adjectives*, *pronouns*, and *verbs*, to which it has reference, should always be in the singular. Examples :—

The great army was totally defeated ;

La grande armée fut entièrement défaite.

The whole fleet is at sea, it set sail yesterday morning ;

Toute la flotte est en mer, elle partit hier matin.

RULE 25. — *A Noun collective partitive.*

A noun collective partitive (that is, which represents only a part of the whole object, such as *foule*, *nombre*, *multitude*, &c.) followed by a plural, governs the verb and the pronoun in the singular, if it is preceded by a definite article or demonstrative pronoun ; but if not, it governs them in the plural. Examples :—

The multitude of foreigners make bread dear.

La multitude des étrangers rend le pain cher ; — singular.

A multitude of Christians are led astray every day ;

Une multitude de chrétiens s'égarent tous les jours ; — plural.

These few plants deserve your attention ;

Ce peu de plantes mérite votre attention ; — singular.

The reason of this difference is, that the collective is a substantive when preceded by *le*, *la*, *les*, and a kind of adjective when not : in the first case the verb agrees with the collective, and in the second with the substantive which comes after the collective.

N. B. The verb is always put in the plural after the words *la plupart*, *beaucoup*, *nombre*, unless they are followed by a substantive singular. Example : *la plupart le croient ; la plupart du monde le croit.*

How Compound Words form their Plural.

Rule 1. When a word is composed of a substantive and an adjective, both take the mark of a plural. Example : *un gentil-homme*, a nobleman, *des gentils-hommes* ; *un arc-boutant*, buttress, *des arcs-boutants*. But the adjective *demi* is an exception : as, *des demi-dieux*, *des demi-lunes*.

Rule 2. When a word is composed of a substantive and a pronoun, both take the mark of a plural : as, *Monsieur*, Sir, *Madame*, Madam, singular ; *Messieurs*, *Mesdames*, plural.

Rule 3. When a word is composed of two substantives not separated by a preposition, both take also the mark of the plural : as, *un Garde-Suisse*, singular ; *des Gardes-Suisses*, plural.

Rule 4. When a word is composed of two substantives separated by a preposition, the first alone takes the mark of the plural : as, *un arc-en-ciel*, a rainbow, *un chef d'œuvre*, a master-piece, singular ; *des arcs-en-ciel*, *des chefs d'œuvre*, plural.

Rule 5. When a word is composed of a substantive and a verb, or a preposition, the substantive alone takes the mark of the plural, if required by the sense : as, *un avant-coureur*, a forerunner, singular ; *des avant-coureurs*, plural. *Un essuie-mains*, a towel, is better than *un essuie-main* in the singular.

Substantives common have no plural when they denote something that has one uniform aspect or constitution.

Substantives which have no Plural in French.

The nouns which have no plural are, 1. the names of metals, taken in general : as, *l'or*, gold ; *l'argent*, silver ; *le cuivre*, copper ; *le plomb*, lead ; *le fer*, iron. Indeed, we sometimes say *les fers*, *les plombs*, &c. but then we consider these metals as wrought, and do not speak of them generally.

2. The names of habitual virtues and vices, such as, *la foi*, faith ; *l'espérance*, hope ; *la charité*, charity ; *la prudence*, prudence : *l'orgueil*, pride ; *l'avarice*, covetousness, &c.

3. Infinitives and adjectives, substantively used : as, *le boire*, the drinking ; *le manger*, the eating ; *le beau*, the beautiful ; *l'utile*, the useful ; *le vrai*, the true, &c.

4. The following substantives have commonly no plural :—

l'absinthe,	wormwood.	la noblesse,	nobility.
l'artillerie,	artillery.	l'odorat,	smelling.
le courroux,	wrath.	l'ouïe,	hearing.
la disette,	scarcity.	la pauvreté,	poverty.
l'enfance,	infancy,	le pourpre,	red fever.
l'estime,	esteem.	le prochain,	our neighbour.
la faim,	hunger.	la renommée,	fame.
la gloire,	glory.	le repos,	rest.
l'encens,	incense.	le salut,	salvation.
l'eucharistie,	eucharist.	le sang,	blood.
la jeunesse,	youth.	la soif,	thirst.
le lait,	milk.	le sommeil,	sleep.
le miel,	honey,	la vieillesse,	old age.
la mollesse,	effeminacy.	la virilité,	manhood.

Substantives which have no singular in French.

les accordailles,	espousals.	les épousailles,	espousals.
les annales,	annals.	les fiançailles,	betrothing.
les ancêtres,	ancestors.	les frais,	expenses.
les armoiries,	coat of arms.	les funérailles,	funerals.
les arrérages,	arrears.	les gens,	people.
les atours,	elegant dress.	les matériaux,	materials.
les bestiaux,	cattle.	les mœurs,	manners.
les broussailles,	briars.	les mouchettes,	snuffers.
les calendes,	calends.	les munitions,	ammunition.
les catacombes,	catacombs.	les obsèques,	obsequies.
les ciseaux,	scissors.	les pleurs,	tears.
les confins,	the confines.	les proches,	relations.
les décombres,	rubbish.	les prémices,	first-fruits.
les dépens,	cost.	les représailles,	reprisals.
les écrouelles,	the king's evil.	les vivres,	victuals.
les entraves,	shackles.	les ténèbres,	darkness, &c.
les entrailles,	bowels.		

EXERCISE UPON THE SUBSTANTIVES.

RULE 21.— *Two Substantives united by a Conjunction.*

Criticism examines the merit of literary productions under the
critique f —ner mérite m littéraire — 2 sous
 three general heads of thought, arrangement, and expression. One day
point de pensée 4 ordre — un jour
 spent in the practice of virtue and religion, is better than a whole life
passé dans pratique f vertu 4 — vaut mieux que entier vie
 spent in impiety and wickedness. Justice is obedience to written laws
passée impiété 4 méchanceté 9 — f obéissance 4 écrit loi 2
 and constitutions. Corrupted men and of ill lives easily
— corrompu 9 mauvaise vie aisément

believe that there is no more virtue, probity, and sincerity in
croire (ir) a il n'y a pas plus 18 —té —té dans
 others than in themselves. The rules of civility are those of de-
les autres eux-mêmes règle 4 honnêteté celles bien-
 cency and good manners.
séance 4 2 mœurs f

RULE 22. — Substantives preceded by de.

Our consciousness of good and evil shows us what ought to be
*connaissance bien 4 21 mal montre quelle doit **
 the rule to govern our actions. Pleasure is often an enemy to
règle f pour diriger — plaisir 9 souvent l'
 reason and virtue. The corruption of the heart is often the cause
raison 4 21 — cœur — f
 of the corruption of the mind. Peru has rich mines of gold, silver,
esprit Pérou m 5 — 7 or, argent,
 and diamonds.
21 diamant

RULE 23. — Nouns formed of two Substantives.

1. Many pretend that battles are not so bloody since the inven-
Plusieurs prétendre bataille 9 si sanglant depuis —
 tion of fire-arms — 2. Where is the cream-pot? 2. There are a
*feu armes où crèmes f — il y a **
 (great many) silk-worms in Italy.
beaucoup 18 soie ver en Italie

1. Go into the dining-room, the company is there. — 2. I
aller (ir) H dans manger-salle f compagnie y est
 have been to the fish-market, however I have bought no fish, because
poisson marché cependant acheter 18 parce
 it was too dear. — 2. The oyster-woman is at the door. — I have
qu'il a trop cher écuillère porte f
 broken the milk-pot. — 1. I always keep fire-arms in my bed-room for
casser lait — garder feu armes 7 coucher chambre f
 my safety during the night; I have no gunpowder at present;
sûreté pendant nuit n'ai point de canon poudre à
 thus my fire-arms are useless.
ainsi inutile.

RULE 24. — Collective General.

Is it necessary that (the whole universe) (should arm itself) to
nécessaire tout l'univers s'armer f pour
 destroy one man? A drop of water (is enough) to kill him. The
détruire goutte eau suffire (ir) pour le tuer
 society of men would soon be overturned, if (every one) could
société 4 bientôt détruite chacun pouvoir (ir) a
 (with impunity) take from another what he should think proper.
impunément ôter à un autre ce qu' juger à propos

The *people* wish for peace; but the *parliament*, who know best the
peuple m *désirer* * 4 *paix* *parlement* *connaître mieux*
 interests of the nation, have voted for the continuation of the war.
intérêt — *voter* — *guerre*
 The grand *fleet* set sail yesterday. The *enemy* presented
flotte mettre (ir) c à la voile hier *sing. présenter c*
 themselves before the gates of our town, and began the attack on
*se devant porte ville commencer c attaque **
 Tuesday: our *garrison* made a sally on Thursday, and obliged them
*Mardi garnison faire (ir) c sortie ** *Jeudi obliger c 48*
 to raise the siege.
 * *lever* —

RULE 25. — *Collective Partitive.*

The *crowd* of soldiers who came obliged us to retire.
foule f soldats venir c obliger c à nous retirer.
 A *multitude* of inhabitants abandoned their country. A *crowd* of
 — f *habitant abandonner c pays troupe*
 children ran after him.
enfant courir (ir) c après
 A *crowd* of nymphs crowned with flowers swam behind the car of
foule nymphe couronnées 19 fleur nager 3 derrière char
 the goddess. When the unbelievers invaded Spain, an innumerable
déesse quand infidèle envahir c Espagne 5 innombrable
multitude of inhabitants retired into the Asturias, where they pro-
 — f *se retirer c les —ies où pro-*
 claimed Pelagius for their king.
*clamer c Pélage * roi*

CHAP. III.

SYNTAX OF ADJECTIVES.*

THIS Chapter, for the sake of order and perspicuity, is divided into four sections. *The first* explains the concord and the right placing of adjectives; *the second* treats of their government; *the third* has for object the adjectives of dimension; and *the fourth* comprehends whatever concerns the construction of comparatives and superlatives.

* For the formation of the feminine of adjectives, see pages 56. to 59.: their plural is formed from the singular, like that of substantives; see p. 55.

SECTION I.

OF THE CONCORD AND RIGHT POSITION OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE 26.—*All Adjectives are declinable.*

All adjectives in French agree in gender and number with the substantive or pronoun which they qualify : in English, on the contrary, they are all invariable. Examples :

A <i>pious</i> man ;	a <i>pious</i> woman ;	<i>pious</i> girls ;
<i>Un homme pieux.</i>	<i>une femme pieuse.</i>	<i>des filles pieuses.</i>
This picture cost me dear, but it is <i>fine</i> ;		
<i>Ce tableau me coûte cher, mais il est beau.</i>		
This house cost me dear, but it is <i>fine</i> ;		
<i>Cette maison me coûte cher, mais elle est belle.</i>		

RULE 27.—*Adjectives agree with the last Substantive.*

When an adjective or a participle is applied to qualify several substantives, it is put after them in French, if it be not one of those mentioned in Rule 30., and it may agree with the last, especially if they are nearly synonymous, or may be considered as parts of some whole ; but if the adjective were any of those mentioned in Rule 30., it must be repeated before every substantive, and agrees with each. Examples :

I have found the door and window *shut* ;
J'ai trouvé la porte et la fenêtre fermée ; — singular.
 He has an *absolute* power and authority ;
Il a un pouvoir et une autorité absolue.
 She has a *pretty* bird, and a *pretty* cage ;
Elle a un joli oiseau, et une jolie cage.

RULE 28.—*Adjectives relating to Nouns of different Genders.*

When an adjective refers to several substantives of persons, or even to several substantives of things, but is separated from them, it is always put in the plural feminine if the substantives are feminine ; but if they are both masculine, or of different genders, it is put in the plural masculine. Examples :

He made his father and mother *happy* ;
Il rendit son père et sa mère heureux.
 His courage and boldness seem *astonishing* to me ;
Son courage et sa hardiesse me paraissent étonnants ; — pl. m.
 Your mother and sister are *learned* ;
Votre mère et votre sœur sont savantes ; — pl. f.
 My brother and sister are *dead* ;
Mon frère et ma sœur sont morts (not sont mortes).

RULE 29.—*Where Adjectives ought to be placed.*

When two or more adjectives refer to the same substantive, they usually follow it in French. Examples :

An ingenious sensible man ;	<i>Un homme ingénieux et sensible.</i>
A long tedious book ;	<i>Un livre long et ennuyeux.</i>
A wise and virtuous woman ;	<i>Une femme sage et vertueuse.</i>
A young liberal prince ;	<i>Un prince jeune et libéral.</i>

RULE 30.—*Adjectives placed before the Substantive.*

The adjective, *beau*, fine ; *bon*, good ; *grand*, great ; *gros*, big ; *jeune*, young ; *mauvais*, bad ; *méchant*, wicked ; *meilleur*, better ; *moindre*, less ; *petit*, little : *saint*, holy ; *vieux*, old ; those of number, and all the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, or *indeterminate* pronouns (which some grammarians consider as mere adjectives), precede in French as in English the substantive to which they are joined. Examples :

We have lost a *great* general in this war ;
Nous avons perdu un grand général dans cette guerre.
 Young men believe they shall live long ;
Les jeunes gens croient qu'ils vivront longtemps.

Note 1. The adjective *cher*, dear, comes before the substantive, when it denotes affection, as *mon cher père*, *ma chère mère* ; my dear father, my dear mother : it comes after when it denotes the price of a thing, as *un livre cher*, a dear book ; *une maison chère*, a dear house.

Note 2. We say *un grand homme*, for a great man, and *un homme grand*, for a tall man ; *une grosse femme*, for a fat woman ; and *une femme grosse*, for a woman with child ; *une sage-femme*, for a midwife ; and *une femme sage*, for a modest or wise woman ; *un galant homme*, for a man of honour, and *un homme galant*, for a courtier.

RULE 31.—*Adjectives placed after the Substantive.*

The adjectives not mentioned in the preceding Rule are usually placed in French after the substantive which they qualify; in English, on the contrary, they are always placed before. Examples :

Grateful people are like those *fruitful* lands which give more than they receive.

Les personnes reconnaissantes ressemblent à des terres fertiles, qui donnent plus qu'elles ne reçoivent.

Public good is preferable to *private* interest.

Le bien public est préférable à l'intérêt particulier.

Note. Adjectives which express some moral qualities may sometimes be placed before or after the substantive : we may say, for instance, *un ami fidèle*, or *un fidèle ami*, a faithful friend ; but this is not often the case, therefore I advise the learner to put them after.

Observe. We always put after the substantives, 1. The participles considered as adjectives : as, *des idées embrouillées*, confused ideas. 2. Those of figure or colour : as, *une table ronde*, a round table ; *un habit noir*, a black coat. 3. Those which end in *ique*, *esque*, *ile*, *ule*, or *able* : as, *un esprit pacifique*, a pacific mind ; *une figure grotesque*, an odd figure ; *une tâche facile*, an easy task ; *une femme crédule*, a credulous woman. 4. Those of nations : as, *la constitution Anglaise*, the constitution of England. 5. Those which may be substantively used, and in general all those not mentioned in Rule 30. We have said that adjectives agree with the substantives which they qualify, but we must except *demi*, half, *nu*, bare, when placed before the substantive, and *feu*, late, when before the article or a pronoun ; as, *il est nu-pieds*, he is bare-foot ; *je reviendrai dans une demi heure*, I will return in half an hour ; *feu la princesse*, the late princess ; *feu ma sœur*, my late sister. But they agree, if *demi* and *nu* be placed after the substantive, and *feu* between the article, or the pronoun and the substantive ; as, *il va les pieds nus*, he goes barefoot ; *je partirai dans une heure et demie*, I will set out in an hour and a half ; *la feuée princesse, ma feuée sœur*.

SECTION II.

OF THE GOVERNMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE 32.—*Adjectives which govern the Preposition de.*

1. Adjectives and participles which denote *plenty* or *scarcity*, and in general all those which are followed in English by the prepositions *of*, *from*, *with*, or *by*, govern in French the preposition *de*. Examples :

I am deprived of every thing ;
Je suis privé de tout.
 The queen is loaded with honour ;
La reine est comblée d'honneur.
 Your sisters are arrived from France ;
Vos sœurs sont arrivées de France.

2. The following, *accusé, aisé, avide, capable, content, digne, fatigué, furieux, incapable, indigne, joyeux, las, libre, mécontent, plein, ravi, vide*, govern also the preposition *de*. Example : he is praise-worthy ; *il est digne de louanges.*

RULE 33.—*Adjectives which govern à.*

1. Adjectives which denote *aptness, fitness, inclination, ease, readiness*, or *any habit*, govern in French the preposition *à*, and most commonly the verb in the infinitive. Examples :

He is fit for any thing ; *il est propre à tout.*
 That is easy to say ; *Cela est facile à dire.*
 A disturbed mind is not fit to discharge its duties ;
Un esprit troublé n'est pas propre à remplir son devoir.

2. The following, *adroit, agréable, aisé, ardent, beau, bon, conforme, contraire, enclin, facile, habile, ingénieux, inutile, lent, prêt, propre, semblable, sujet, utile*, govern the preposition *à*, and the verb in the infinitive. Example : he is liable to mistake ; *il est sujet à se tromper.*

3. Some adjectives govern *à* in French, and *de* in English : such are *attentif à*, heedful of ; *sensible à*, sensible of ; *insensible à*, insensible of. Example : I am sensible of your kindness ; *je suis sensible à vos bontés.*

RULE 34.—*Adjectives followed by à or envers.*

Some adjectives are followed in French by the preposition *à*, and in English by the preposition *in*; such are, *curieux à*, curious in; *exact à*, precise in; *habile à*, skilful in; *patient à*, patient in; *zélé à*, zealous in. Examples:

You are skilful *in* doing every thing; *Vous êtes habile à tout faire.*

I am precise *in* my engagements; *Je suis exact à mes engagements.*

Others are often followed in French by the preposition *envers*, and in English by the preposition *to*: such are *affable envers*, affable to; *bon envers*, good to; *cruel envers*, cruel to; *poli envers*, civil to. Example:

We must be civil *to* every body.

Il faut être poli envers tout le monde.

SECTION III.

ADJECTIVES OF DIMENSION.

RULE 35.—*De haut, or de hauteur, high.*

The adjectives of dimension can be rendered in French by an adjective, or by a substantive: thus, *high* can be expressed by *de haut*, or *de hauteur*; *long*, by *de long*, or *de longueur*; *broad*, by *de large*, or *de largeur*; *deep* must be expressed by *de profondeur*, not by *de profond*, and in general the substantive is more elegantly used than the adjective.

It must be remembered always to put the preposition *de* before the words of dimension and number, if they are not preceded by a verb. Examples:

A tower two hundred feet high;

Une tour de deux cents pieds de haut, or de hauteur.

A table six feet long;

Une table de six pieds de long, or de longueur.

A river twenty feet deep;

Une rivière de vingt pieds de profondeur (not de profond)

RULE 36.—*Avoir, instead of to be, before the Adjectives of Dimension.*

To express the *height, depth, or breadth* of an object, the English make use of the verb *to be*, and the French of the verb *avoir*, as they always do before a word of number.

N.B. The preposition *de* is left out after the verb *avoir*, but it remains before the word of dimension. Examples :

This tower is two hundred feet high ;
Cette tour a deux cents pieds de hauteur.
 That table is six feet long ;
Cette table a six pieds de longueur.
 That river is twenty feet deep ;
Cette rivière a vingt pieds de profondeur.

SECTION IV.

OF COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.*

RULE 37.—*As, expressed by que, after a Comparative.*

The word *as*, used in English after a comparative of *equality* or *inferiority*, is always expressed in French by *que*, and never by *comme*. Examples :

You are as rich as I am ;	<i>Vous êtes aussi riche que moi.</i>
I am not so learned as you ;	<i>Je ne suis pas si savant que vous.</i>
I have as many books as they have ;	<i>J'ai autant de livres qu'eux.</i>

And not *J'ai autant de livres comme eux* ; nor *je ne suis pas si savant comme vous*.

N.B. The comparatives and superlatives agree in French in gender and number with the substantive which they qualify, in the same manner as adjectives. Example :

The most learned man ;	the most learned woman ;
<i>L'homme le plus savant.</i>	<i>La femme la plus savante.</i>

* See p. 60. for the different kinds of comparatives and superlatives, and the mode of forming them from adjectives.

RULE 38.—By, expressed by *de*, after a Comparative.

The word *by*, which is often used after a comparative, to denote how much a thing exceeds another, is always expressed by *de*, and never by *par*. Examples :

I am taller than you *by* the whole head ;
Je suis plus grand que vous de toute la tête (not *par*).
 You are younger than I am *by* four years ;
Vous êtes plus jeune que moi de quatre ans (not *par*).

RULE 39.—Than expressed by *que* or *de*, after a Comparative.

The word *than*, used after a comparative, is expressed by *que*, when it is followed by a noun or a pronoun. Examples :

Asia is greater than Europe ; *L'Asie est plus grande que l'Europe.*
 He is more fortunate than you ; *Il est plus heureux que vous.*

The word *than* is always expressed by *de* before the cardinal numbers *un, deux, trois, &c.*, instead of *que*, as in a comparison of objects. Examples :

I am more than fifteen years of age ; *J'ai plus de quinze ans.*
 You have more than a hundred guineas ;
Vous avez plus de cent guinées.

Not *j'ai plus que quinze ans* ; nor *vous avez plus que cent guinées.*

RULE 40.—Than expressed by *que de*, or *que ne*, after a Comparative.

The word *than*, used in comparatives, is usually expressed by *que de* before an infinitive mood, and by *que ne* before a verb in the indicative. Examples :

It is more noble to forgive than to revenge ;
Il est plus noble de pardonner que de se venger.
 Riches are more dangerous than poverty is troublesome ;
Les richesses sont plus dangereuses que la pauvreté n'est incommode.

Note 1. If the first infinitive is preceded by the preposition *à*, then the word *than* is expressed by *qu'à*. Example :

He is more inclined to hurt than to oblige you ;
Il est plus disposé à vous nuire qu'à vous obliger.

Note 2. The word *than* is expressed by *que* only before an indicative mood, when there is a conjunction between the word *than* and the verb. Examples :

You learn better *than* when you were in France ;
Vous apprenez mieux que quand vous étiez en France.
 My brother recovers sooner *than* if he was in town ;
Mon frère se rétablit plus tôt que s'il était à la ville.

RULE 41.—The more, *expressed by plus, and not by le plus.*

The English make use of the definite article before the comparatives of proportion, and the French never: thus, *the more* is expressed by *plus*, *the less*, by *moins*, and not by *le plus* or *le moins*, which are used only in superlatives. Examples :

The more you will study, *the more* you will improve ;
Plus vous étudierez, plus vous profiterez (not *le plus*).
The more I know mankind, *the more* I love them ;
Plus je connais les hommes, plus je les aime.

Not *le plus je connais les hommes, le plus je les aime.*

RULE 42.—*Precedency of plus and moins.*

If a comparative of proportion is made with two substantives or two adjectives, they are placed before the verb in English, and after in French.

The words of this sort of sentence are disposed in the following order :—1. We put *plus* or *moins*. 2. The subject of the verb. 3. The verb. 4. The adjective or substantive; the rest as in English. Examples :

The more difficult a thing is, *the more* honourable ;
Plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.
The less money he gets, *the more* expenses he incurs ;
Moins il gagne d'argent, plus il fait de dépense.

In these, and sentences of the like sort, the substantive is preceded by *de*, and the adjective is not.

RULE 43.—*The Superlative governs de and the Subjunctive.*

The superlative always governs, in French, *de* before the noun following, and most commonly the verb in the subjunctive mood. Examples :

The navy of England is the most powerful in the world ;
La marine d'Angleterre est la plus puissante du monde.
 You are the most accomplished lady I know ;
Vous êtes la dame la plus aimable que je connaisse — subj.

RULE 44.—Of the Superlative.

If the substantive precedes the superlative, both take the definite article, *le, la, les* ; but the superlative alone takes an article, if it precedes the substantive. Examples :

The most pleasing company is seldom the best company ;
La compagnie la plus agréable est rarement la meilleure compagnie.
 This is the most beautiful walk ;
Voilà la plus belle promenade, ou la promenade la plus belle.

Note 1. The comparatives and superlatives agree in gender and number with the substantive or pronoun to which they refer, as may be observed from the preceding examples.

Note 2. *Le* is invariable before *plus* and *moins* followed by an adverb, and also by an adjective, when there is no comparison of objects. Example :

Nous devons parler *le plus* clairement qu'il nous est possible ; and not *les plus clairement*—adv.
 Nous ne pleurons pas toujours quand nous sommes *le plus* affligés ; and not *les plus affligés*—adj.

EXERCISE UPON THE ADJECTIVES.

SECTION I.

OF THE CONCORD AND PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE 26.—Agreement of the Adjectives.

Marriage is the most perfect state of friendship ; it lessens our
 9 *Marriage* 44 *plus parfait état* 4 *amitié* *diminuer*
 cares by dividing them, and doubles our pleasures by mutual
soin en divisant 48 *doubler* *plaisir par mutuel* 2
 participation. Our minister has profound judgment, invariable in-
 — *—tre* *un profond jugement* 10 —
 dustry, and a very extensive knowledge of the interests of foreign
 — *—trie* *très étendu* *connaissance* *intérêt* *étranger*

courts. The victory which Cæsar obtained in the plains of Pharsalia,
cour 2 victoire f Cæsar gagner c plaine f Pharsale
 was baneful to his country, pernicious to the Romans, and dismal
c funeste pays —cieux Romains désastreux
 to human nature.
pour 2 humain genre m

RULE 27.—*The Adjective agrees with the last Noun.*

Garrick played with charming taste and nobleness. Sylla
représenter v avec un charmant goût 10 noblesse
 acquired in Rome an absolute power and authority. The Eng-
acquérir (ir) c à absolu pouvoir 10 autorité
 lish fight at sea with wonderful courage and intrepidity. In
combattre (ir) sur mer un surprenant — 10 intrépidité dans
 most courtiers we find nothing but an affected politeness
*la plupart des courtisans on ne trouve * qu' affecté politesse*
 and sincerity. She has her mouth and eyes shut.
sincérité la bouche f yeux fermé

RULE 28.—*Adjectives relating to several Nouns.*

2. Modesty and disinterestedness deserve to be praised and admired.
9 —tie 10 désintéressement mériter d' louer —er
 — 2. The room and the closet were open, but the window and the
chambre f cabinet v ouvert fenêtre f
 drawer were shut. — 2. Men and women are mortal. — 1. My mother
tiroir v fermer femme mortel mère
 and sister are dead. — 2. His son and daughter are happy. — 2. Your
3 sœur mort fils 63 fille heureux
 courage and boldness seem astonishing to me. — 2. Pride and misery
— 63 hardiesse paraître étonnant 47 9 orgueil 10 misère f
 are but too often united. — 2. Health, favour, and power are
ne sont que trop souvent unir 9 santé 10 faveur pouvoir
 common to the good and wicked, and can be taken from us; — 1. but
commun 6 bons 10 méchant peuvent nous être ôté 9
 glory and virtue are solid, sure, and lasting. — 2. (There are) some
gloire 10 solide — durable il y a 7
 persons whose courage and virtue need not be sustained.
personne 80 9 — 10 ont besoin d'être soutenu

RULE 29.—*Place of Adjectives.*

A just and bountiful God. A long tedious book.
un Dieu juste et bienfaisant. un livre long et ennuyeux.
 Great and extensive projects joined to a wise execution, constitute
vaste projet joindre sage — faire (ir)
 the great minister. A shallow argument has often persuaded
—tre faible — souvent persuadé

persons who had not been convinced by palpable and evident proofs.
personnes f 2 convaincu — —7 preuve f
 Courtiers often (flatter themselves) that under a young liberal prince,
courtisan souvent se flatter sous jeune — —
 they (shall be able) to attain to a power which they never could
*pouvoir (ir) * arriver poste m*
 hope for (in the) service of an old frugal prince. Brave and
*n'espérer * au — m âgé économe — —*
 trusty men are generally humane and merciful; while men
constant généralement humain miséricordieux pendant que
 of base and low mind are usually insolent and tyrannical, when
un bas rampant esprit ordinairement — —que quand
 they have power. A plain, simple, and natural style is the only one
*autorité ? uni — —rel — m seul **
 (to be recommended).
recommandable

RULE 30.—*Adjective put before the Substantive.*

A good king often loses, by the ill-conduct of his ministers,
roi souvent perdre mauvais conduite f —tre
 the affection of his subjects. Socrates and Plato were two great
— sujet — Platon 2
 philosophers. Young men hope that they shall live long, but
*—pe les jeunes gens espérer * * * vivre longtemps*
 no one is sure he shall live till to-morrow. Little geniuses are
*personne n' sûr * de jusqu'à demain 2 Petit génie*
 dazzled with (every thing) that sparkles, because (every thing) is
éblouir de tout ce qui briller parce que tout
 new to them; great geniuses, (on the) contrary, admire but few
nouveau pour eux 2 au contraire n'admirer que peu
 things, because few things appear new to them. (How many)
18 f parce que peu paraître nouveau combien 18
 books have you got? I have two grammars and one exercise book.
*livre * grammaires livre de thèmes*
 Is your father at home? No, sir; but my mother is, and she will
à la maison non y est
 be glad to see you.
bien aise de vous voir

RULE 31.—*Adjective put after the Substantive.*

Humility is the basis of christian virtues. A prejudiced mind is
9 —té base f chrétien 2 prévenu esprit
 the source of innumerable errors. The public good is preferable to
—f 16 innombrable erreur bien —
 private interest. Satirical minds are like small insects, whose
particulier intérêt 2 9—que esprit comme petits insecte 2 dont
 existence is manifested only by the efforts which they make to
— ne se manifeste que — faire (ir) pour

corrupt things. Geography is the description of the *terrestrial globe*.
corrompre 9 9 *Géographie* — —tre — m
 A silent awe, a doubtful eye, and a hesitating voice, are the *natural*
silencieux respect *timide œil* *tremblant voix* —rel
 indications of a true and respectful love. The *central fire* is the
marque f *vrai* 29 —*tureux amour* — feu
physical cause of the heat of the *subterraneous springs*.
 —que — f *chaleur* *souterrain* *source f*

SECTION II.

OF THE GOVERNMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

RULE 32.—*Articles which govern de.*

Nature is content *with* little. I am fatigued *with* running. He is
 — *se contente* *peu* *fatigué* *courir*
 accused of robbery. You are loaded *with* honours. They are worthy
 —*sé* *vol* *comblé* *honneur* *digne*
 of praise. Human life is never free *from* troubles. Most men are
louange *humain* 31 *vie* *exempt* — *la plupart des*
 dissatisfied *with* their condition. We are in vain endued *with* reason,
mécontent — *en* — *doué* *raison*
 if we are not endued *with* virtue. Xerxes being loaded *with* all the
comblé
 advantages of body and of fortune, and yet not being satisfied *with*
avantage *corps* 4 10 — f *cependant n'en étant pas satisfait*
 them, proposed a reward to him who should invent new
 —*ser c récompense* *celui qui* *inventer* *x nouveau*
 pleasures for him.
plaisir 8 49

RULE 33.—*Adjectives which govern à.*

Most children are inclined *to* idleness. A disturbed mind is not
la plupart des enfans *enclin* *paresse* 4 *troublé* 31 *esprit*
 fit *to* discharge its duty. A christian ought to be ready *to* die,
propre *remplir* *devoir* *chrétien* *devoir* A * *prêt mourir*
 rather than deny his faith. It is ridiculous to put one's-self in a
plutôt que de renier *foi* *il* —*le* *de mettre se* *en* *
 passion against objects which are insensible of* our anger. I am
colère *contre* *objet* 7 — *colère*
 sensible of your kindness. That is easy *to* say. Marshy places
 — *bonté* *cela* *facile* *dire marécageux* 31 *lieu* 9
 are liable *to* heavy fogs.
sujet *épais* 31 *brouillard* 7

* Sensible and insensible govern *à* in French, and *of* in English.

RULE 34.—*Adjectives followed by à and envers.*

Merchants should be precise in fulfilling their engagements, and
marchand devoir à exact remplir —
 christians patient in suffering injuries. Your brother is skilful in
chrétien — souffrir 9 —re habile
 (doing every thing). Scipio Africanus was respectful to his mother,
tout faire Scipion l'Africain à —tueux — mère
 liberal to his sisters, good to his servants, just and affable to every
libéral sœurs bon domestique juste — tout le
 body. I do not like people who are cruel to animals.
monde. aimer personnes f — —

SECTION III.

ADJECTIVES OF DIMENSION.

RULE 35.—*How to express the Adjectives of Dimension.*

The monument of London is a round pillar of the Doric order,
 — —dres rond 31 pilier 31 —que ordre
 two hundred feet high; it stands on a pedestal twenty feet high. The
cents pied est placé sur piédestal vingt pied
 room of the Tower (in which) is the royal train of artillery, is an
salle Tour où 31 train 16 —rie
 apartment three hundred and eighty feet long, fifty wide, and twenty
*appartement * quatre-vingts cinquante vingt*
 high; it has a passage (in the) middle sixteen feet wide, on each side
f — au milieu seize pied de chaque côté
 of which the artillery is placed.
duquel placé

RULE 36.—*Adjectives of Dimension take avoir.*

London-bridge is nine hundred and twenty feet long, fifty-five
*Londres 17 pont cent * pied cinquante-cinq*
 high, and fifty-six wide. Westminster-bridge is forty-four feet
cinquante-six Westminster 17 pont quarante-quatre
 broad; the (free way) under the arches of this bridge is eight hun-
passage sous — ce
 dred and seventy feet; it consists of fourteen piers, thirteen
** soixante-et-dix est composé pile f 21 treize*
 large arches, and two small ones; the two middle piers are each
*grand — f petit * du milieu 17 chacun*
 seventeen feet wide, and contain two hundred tons of solid stones;
dix-sept contenir tonneau solide 31 pierre

all the others decrease in breadth by a foot on each side. The
autre diminuer en largeur un pied de chaque côté
 (coffee-trees) are commonly forty feet high; they yield twice a
café ordinairement quarante donner deux fois
 year an abundant crop. The famous mine of Potosi in Peru, is
l'an abondant 31 récolte f fameux — f — dans le Pérou
 more than fifteen hundred feet deep.
 39 quinze

SECTION IV.

OF COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES.

RULE 37. — *as* expressed by *que*.

The love of our neighbour is as necessary in society for the
*amour du * prochain nécessaire dans 4 société*
 happiness of life, as in christianity for eternal salvation. Great
bonheur 4 vie 4 —isme éternel 31 4 salut 2
 talents are of every condition; and if they do not shine so com-
 — toute — * briller si com-
 monly in low people as in others, it is for want of care and
*munément dans 2 bas peuple m les autres ce * faute de soin*
 cultivation. The man truly great, preserves his judgment
d'être cultivés véritablement conserver jugement
 (in the) midst of dangers with (as much) presence of mind, as if he
au milieu 4 — avec autant 18 présence esprit
 (was not in) any danger. It is as easy to do good as to do
ne courir (ir) n aucun aisé de faire le bien faire le
 evil. Nothing delights (so much) as the works of nature. The
mal rien ne plaire tant ouvrage 4 —
 Thames is not so rapid as the Rhine. Paris is not so populous as
Tamise f rapide Rhin —14 peuplé
 London.
 —dres

RULE 38. — *by* expressed by *de*.

The condor is a bird of Peru, bigger than the ostrich *by*
 — oiseau du Pérou plus grand autruche
 much. The goddess Calypso was taller than all her nymphs *by*
beaucoup déesse — n plus grand que nymphe
 (the whole head). I am older than you *by* two years; however, you
toute la tête plus âgé que ans cependant
 are taller than I *by* two inches. Your son is more learned than
plus grand moi pouce fils plus savant
 mine *by* much.
 69 beaucoup

RULE 39. — *than expressed by que, or by de.*

Augustus was not perhaps a greater man *than* Antony, but he
Auguste 14 *peut-être* * *Antoine*
 was more fortunate. Nothing is more pleasing to the mind *than* the
B *heureux* 118 *agréable* *esprit*
 light of truth. The simplicity of nature is more amiable *than* all
lumière 4 *vérité* — *té* 4 — *aimable*
 the embellishments of art. Is there (any thing) more natural *than*
 — *lissement* 4 — *y a-t-il rien de* — *rel*
 to love those who do us good? The consumption of wheat
d'aimer ceux *faire (ir)* 47 *bien* 7 *consommation f de blé*
 in London is more *than* five millions and ninety thousand
à — *dres de plus* *cinq* — * *quatre-vingt-dix mille*
 bushels a year; that of oxen and cows more *than* one hundred and
boisseau par an *celle* *bœuf* 21 *vache* * *cent* *
 twenty thousand, and that of sheep and lambs more *than* nine
vingt *celle* *mouton* 21 *agneau*
 hundred thousand. Virtue is more precious *than* riches. Lewis
 4 *vertu* *précieux* 4 *richesses* *Louis*
 the fourteenth, in 1681, had sixty thousand sailors, and more *than*
 11 *en* *B* *soixante* *matelots*
 a hundred men of war.
 * *vaisseau guerre*

RULE 40. — *than expressed by que de, and que ne.*

It is greater to overcome one's passions, *than* to conquer whole
il grand de vaincre ses — *conquérir entières*
 nations. There are some authors who write better *than* they speak,
 31 — 7 *il y a* 7 *auteur écrire mieux* *parler*
 and (some others) who speak better *than* they write. You make
d'autres *faire (ir)*
 greater progress *than* I should have thought; and you behave better
 8 *progrès* *penser* *se conduire mieux*
than when you were young. We flatter ourselves more *than* we
B *jeune* *se flatter* * *plus*
 should. It is harder to avoid censure *than* to gain ap-
devoir *x* *difficile* *d'éviter censure* *gagner des ap-*
 plause; for the latter may (be obtained) by one great
plaudissements *dernier m pl pouvoir (ir)* *Δ s'obtenir*
 action; but to avoid the former, (a man) must never do wrong.
mais pour éviter *premier f on ne devoir Δ jamais mal.*
 Religion teaches us to suffer injuries patiently rather *than*
 9 — *apprendre (ir)* *à* *souffrir* 9 — *re patiemment plutôt*
 to revenge.
nous venger

RULE 41. — *the more expressed by plus.*

The more I know mankind, the more I love them. The more a
connaître les hommes *aimer*

man is adorned with moderation, temperance, and justice, *the more*
doué 32 — 21 —
 valuable is he. *The more* one dropsical drinks, *the more*
il est estimable — *pique boire (ir)*
 thirsty he is. *The less* you study, *the less* you will improve *The*
il est altéré *étudier p* *profiter*
more. I examine that question, *the more* difficult I find it. *The*
 — *ner* — *je la trouve difficile*
 more we want people to serve us, *the less* happy are we.
avoir besoin de gens pour nous servir *nous sommes heureux*

RULE 42. — *Precedency of plus and moins.*

The more elevated in dignity one is, *the less* pride one ought to
élevé en —té on *d'orgueil on devoir A **
 have. *The more* difficult a thing is, *the more* honourable. When
difficile chose f *elle est honorable*
 a man possesses nothing great but his birth, *the higher* that
ne posséder rien 18 que naissance grand
 birth is, *the more* insignificant it must appear. *The shorter* the
 — *fiante devoir A paraître court*
 day is, *the longer* is the night. *The less* money he gets, *the*
jour long nuit d'argent gagner
 less expense he (is at).
de dépense faire (ir)

RULE 43. — *The Superlative governs the Subjunctive and prep. de.*

Probity is one of the greatest qualities a man can possess.
 — *té 9 une* — *té qu' pouvoir (ir) posséder*
 Of all the amusements and pleasures of life, conversation has always
tous — les plaisir 4 vie 9 — toujours
 been looked upon as the most reasonable method of unbending
*considérée * comme raisonnable 31 moyen 44 139 délasser*
 the mind. In the rich crown which his Majesty wears in parliament,
esprit couronne f —té f porter au parlement
 is a large emerald seven inches round, the finest in the world.
il y a grosse émeraude f 35 pouce de tour monde m
 The best quality a man can have, is to be civil and obliging
meilleur qu' pouvoir (ir) d'être — obligeant
 toward the most uncivil and disobliging people. The city of
envers incivil 31 désobligeant 44 personne f pl ville
 Troy was formerly the most famous in Asia Minor. The reign of
Troye B autrefois fameux Asie Mineur règne
 Lewis the Fourteenth was one of the longest, and altogether one of
Louis 11 c tout à la fois
 the most glorious which is recorded in history.
glorieux pl rapportés dans 4 histoire

RULE 44. — *The Superlative takes an Article.*

N. B. The superlatives precede the substantive when they are formed from the adjectives mentioned in rule 30., and usually go after when they are formed from any other.

The most learned men are not often the most virtuous. Savant 31 souvent vertueux sobriété
renders *the most common* way of living agreeable; it gives the
9 rendre commun 31 genre m vie agréable elle donner
most vigorous health, which is the most constant of all pleasures.
vigoureux 31 santé qui plaisir
Pride shuts the mind against the plainest conviction. The Em-
orgueil fermer esprit à évident 31 —
peror Antonius is considered as one of the greatest princes who
—reur Antonin considérer un 30 —
ever reigned. The canal of Languedoc is one of the most
aient jamais régné — du — un
memorable monuments which have been made in the age of Lewis
mé— 31 — qui 43 faits dans siècle m Louis
the Fourteenth. The most ancient and general idolatry, was the
11 29 idolâtrie s
worship rendered to the sun
culte m rendu soleil.

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON ADJECTIVES, COMPARATIVES, AND SUPERLATIVES.

The first wing of the noble and superb edifice of Greenwich was
30 aile f 20 —be bâtiment — c
erected by Charles the Second. The epic poem, whether it appear
élevé — 11 épique 31 poème m soit qu'il paraisse r
in the majestic simplicity of Homer, or in the finished elegance
dans —tueux 31 —té Homère finie 31 élé—
of Virgil, presents an endless variety of grand and beautiful objects,
Virgile présenter sans fin 31 variété 29 — beau objet
which it is impossible to contemplate without a perpetual succession
qu' — de —pler sans perpétuel 31 —
of agreeable emotions. It may be said that a magistrate
agréable 31 émotions on pouvoir (ir) ▲ * dire —trat
is a speaking law, and the law a dumb magistrate.
parlant 31 loi muet 31

The great wall (on the) north of China is about fifteen
muraille au nord la Chine 36 environ quinze
hundred miles long, and the royal canal of that empire is about
35 —31 —
eighteen hundred miles long. The walls of Babylon were two
dix-huit 35 mur Babylone s 36
hundred feet high, and fifty broad.
piéd 35

The fewer desires, the more peace. The more we abstain
 * moins 18 désir * 18 paix 41 on s'abstenir
 from sensual pleasures, the easier we (can do without them);
 sensuel 31 plaisir plus aisément 42 pouvoir A s'en passer
 and the more we indulge them, the more (desirous we are) to
 41 satisfaire 48 41 on désire *
 gratify them. An angry man who suppresses his passion, thinks
 satisfaire 48 en colère 31 étouffer — penser
 worse than he speaks; an angry man who will chide speaks worse
 plus mal 40 parler vouloir (ir) A gronder
 than he thinks. One of the greatest defects of the Pharsalia, is that
 40 un défaut Pharsale f cette
 fury of imagination which Lucan did not know how to repress,
 fougue f — que Lucain savoir (ir) B * * réprimer
 and which made him rather an enthusiast than a poet.

en faire (ir) * plutôt enthousiaste m poète
 I have no pity on the misery of those who, being young and
 n' pas pitié de misère f ceux jeune
 strong, choose rather to beg than to work; but I pity the
 fort aimer mieux * mendier 40 de travailler mais j'ai pitié des
 old who cannot get their livelihood. Westminster
 vieillards pouvoir (ir) A gagner vie 17
 Abbey, within its walls, is three hundred and sixty feet long;
 Abbaye f en dedans des mur 36 cent * soixante pied 35
 at the nave it is seventy feet broad, and at the cross one hun-
 à nef 36 soixante-dix 35 croix *
 dred and ninety. The front of Somerset House towards
 * quatre-vingt-dix façade 17 vers
 the Strand is about one hundred feet long, and the front towards
 — m 36 environ * 35 vers
 the principal court is two hundred feet and more.

31— cour 36
 The most learned men make sometimes the grossest mistakes.
 savant 31 faire (ir) quelquefois grossier 44 faute f
 Obedience is the surest means of pleasing our superiors.
 obéissance 44 moyen sing. plaire 139 à supérieur

CHAP. IV.

OF PERSONAL AND IMPERSONAL PRONOUNS.

THIS Chapter is divided into five sections: *the first* enumerates the circumstances in which the personal pronouns are conjunctive or disjunctive, and shows how to express them in both cases: *the second* treats of the personal pronouns *it*, *they*, or *them*, when they are used in

English with reference to animals or things: *the third* ascribes to the conjunctive personal pronouns their proper place in a sentence, and explains the order in which they must be disposed, when they meet together: *the fourth* teaches when the pronouns are or are not to be repeated before the verb which they govern or are governed by: *the fifth* informs us when the pronouns must be expressed by *lui* or *soi*, and shows their difference with accuracy and precision.

SECTION I.

WHEN THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS ARE CONJUNCTIVE OR DISJUNCTIVE.

RULE 45.—*How to express the Personal Pronouns when Subjects.*

The personal pronouns *I, thou, he, she, we, you, they*, are *conjunctive*, and expressed by *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles*, when they are the subject of a verb, provided they are not joined to another noun or pronoun by a conjunction. Examples:

I read, thou speakest, he owes, she comes, we have, &c.
Je lis, tu parles, il doit, elle vient, nous avons.

Observe, to use always *il* or *ils*, with reference to a noun masculine, and *elle* or *elles* with reference to a feminine: thus, *they are rich*, is expressed in French by *ils sont riches*, speaking of men; and by *elles sont riches*, speaking of women.

The personal pronouns are *disjunctive*, and expressed by *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, or elles*, under the following circumstances:

1. When they come before or after the words *qui, que*, and *seul*. Examples:

It is I who say so; *C'est moi qui le dis* (not *c'est je*).
 He is more learned than I; *il est plus savant que moi*.
 I am younger than he; *Je suis plus jeune que lui*.
 They alone were present there; *Eux seuls y étaient présents*.

2. When they are used in an answer to a question. Examples:

Who has done that? I, he, they:

Qui a fait cela? C'est moi, c'est lui, ce sont eux.

3. When they are joined to a noun or a pronoun by a conjunction. Example:

We learn French, my brother and I;

Mon frère et moi nous apprenons le Français.

4. When they come before a noun, or a verb used in opposition to, or distinction from the first. Example:

You will return to town, and I will go into the country;

Vous reviendrez à la ville, et moi j'irai à la campagne.

Observe to repeat *nous* or *vous* before the verb, when it has two or more subjects which are not both of the third person: as, *vous et moi nous* irona. *Vous et lui vous* danserez ensemble.

RULE 46.—*How to express the Personal Pronouns preceded by de.*

When the personal pronouns are preceded by *de* they are *disjunctive*, and expressed by *de moi, de toi, de lui, d'elle, de nous, de vous, d'eux, d'elles*. Examples:

He complains of me, I do not speak of him;

Il se plaint de moi, je ne parle pas de lui.

They are sometimes, but seldom, *conjunctive*, and expressed by *en*. Examples:

You love my cousin, you speak often of her;

Vous aimez ma cousine, vous en parlez souvent.

Were you speaking of me? Yes, ye were;

Parliez-vous de moi? Oui, nous en parlions.

RULE 47.—*How to express the Personal Pronouns.*

When the personal pronouns are *conjunctive*, they are expressed by *me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur*, before the verb. Examples:

He pleases me;

Il me plaît.

I will do him good;

Je lui ferai du bien.

I will speak to them

Je leur parlerai.

When they are *disjunctive*, they are expressed by *à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, à elles*, after the verb, in three cases.

1. When they come after a noun or a pronoun to which they are joined by a conjunction. Example:

I speak to you as well as to *them* ;
Je vous parle aussi-bien qu'à eux.

2. When they are governed by a reflected verb. **Examples :**

He applies to *me* ; I do not trust *him* ;
Il s'adresse à moi ; je ne me fie pas à lui.

Not *il me s'adresse, je ne me lui fie pas.*

3. When they are governed by any of the following verbs : *aller*, to go ; *courir*, to run ; *accourir*, to run to ; *boire*, to drink ; *penser*, *songer*, to think ; *venir*, to come. **Examples :**

He comes to us,	go to him,	I think of you ;
<i>Il vient à nous,</i>	<i>allez à lui,</i>	<i>je pense à vous.</i>

And *not il nous vient, allez lui, je vous pense.*

RULE 48.—*Personal Pronouns when Regimen.*

When the personal pronouns governed by a verb are the regimen, they are generally *conjunctive*, and expressed by *me, te, nous, vous, le, la, les*. **Examples :**

I know <i>him</i> ;	I will see <i>her</i> ;	I esteem <i>them</i> ;
<i>Je le connais.</i>	<i>Je la verrai.</i>	<i>Je les estime.</i>

And *not je connais lui, je verrai elle, j'estime eux.*

N. B. When *le, la, les*, stand for the English word *the*, and come before a noun, they are articles : as, the father, mother, and children are dead ; *le père, la mère, et les enfants sont morts* : but when *le, la, les*, stand for *him, her, them*, and come before a verb, they are personal pronouns ; as, I know *him*, I know *her*, I know *them* ; *je le connais, je la connais, je les connais*.

RULE 49.—*Personal Pronouns after a Preposition.*

When the personal pronouns are preceded by a preposition, they are always *disjunctive*, and expressed by *moi, toi, lui, elle, &c.* **Examples :**

As for <i>me</i> , I think so ;	<i>Pour moi je pense ainsi.</i>
You will speak after <i>them</i> ;	<i>Vous parlerez après eux.</i>

And *not pour me je pense ainsi ; vous parlerez apres les*

SECTION II.

OF THE PRONOUNS, *IT*, *THEY*, *THEM*.RULE 50.—*The Pronouns, it, they, or them.*

The pronouns *it* and *they*, which the English use with reference to animals or things, are expressed in French by *il*, m. or *elle*, f. for the singular, and by *ils*, m. or *elles*, f. for the plural, when they are the subject of a verb. *It* and *them* are expressed by *le*, m., *la*, f., *les*, pl. when they are governed by a verb : thus, speaking of a house, we say,

It is fine, I will not sell it, I will keep it ;
Elle est belle, je ne la vendrai pas, je la garderai.

Observe, that these pronouns are expressed in French in the same manner as the personal pronouns, of which we have already treated ; and that they also agree in gender and number with the substantive to which they have reference.

RULE 51.—*En used for it or them.*

The pronouns *it* and *them*, used with reference to inanimate objects, are expressed by *en*, when the French verb governs *de*, whether they be preceded in English by the prepositions *of*, *from*, *with*, *about*, *for*, *upon*, or any other. Examples :

Do not speak any more *of it* ;
N'en parlez plus.
 You have done me a service, I thank you *for it* ;
Vous m'avez rendu service, je vous en remercie.
 You have got a good place, I congratulate you *upon it* ;
Vous avez obtenu une bonne place, je vous en félicite.

When the words *some* and *any* come after a verb, and refer to a substantive antecedent, they are also expressed by *en*. Examples :

I have some apples, will you have *any* ? Give me a couple *of them*.
J'ai des pommes, en voulez-vous ? Donnez m'en une couple.
 Take *some* more. What shall I do *with them* ? You will give *some* to your sisters.
Prenez-en davantage. Qu'en ferai-je ? Vous en donnetez à vos sœurs.

RULE 52.—*lui or y, for it or them.*

The pronouns *it* and *them*, governed by a verb which

requires *à* in French, are expressed by *lui* or *leur*, as the personal pronouns, when they refer to animals or plants, and usually by *y*, when they refer to other inanimate objects not personified. Examples :

Your horses are hungry, give *them* some oats ;
Vos chevaux ont faim, donnez-leur de l'avoine.
 This tree is fine, do not hurt *it* ;
Cet arbre est beau, ne lui faites point de mal.
 There is a fine picture, put a frame to *it* ;
Voilà un beau tableau, mettez-y une bordure.
 It is a difficult undertaking, you will not succeed *in it* ;
C'est une entreprise difficile, vous n'y réussirez pas.

And not *mettez-lui une bordure*, nor *vous ne lui réussirez pas*.

If, however, the impersonal pronouns are used for inanimate objects personified, or preceded by the verb *to owe*, or *to be indebted*, they should be expressed by *lui* or *leur* (and not by *y*). Thus *lui* and *y* may be said of the same object, joined to different verbs. Example :

This house is well situated, have some repairs done *to it*, you are indebted *to it* for your health ;

Cette maison est bien située, faites-y faire des réparations, vous lui devez votre santé. (Not *vous y devez*, &c.)

The words *en* and *y*, of which mention is made in the two preceding rules, are also two adverbs of place ; *en* stands for the words *hence*, *from thence* ; and *y* for *there*, or *thither*. Examples :

Will you go to London ? No, I come from *thence* ;
Voulez-vous venir à Londres ? Non, j'en viens.
 Have you been to France ? No, I have never been *there* ;
Avez-vous été en France ? Non, je n'y ai jamais été.

RULE 53.—*When it or them comes after a Preposition it is not expressed in French.*

When the pronouns *it*, *them* are preceded by a preposition, they cannot be expressed by *lui* or *elle*, *eux* or *elles*, which in this case are said only of persons or personified objects ; but they are usually left out, and the preposition used in English becomes an adverb when it conveys the idea sufficiently. Examples :

The king was for the war, but the parliament was *against it* ;
Le roi était pour la guerre, mais le parlement fut contre.
 Come near the fire ; I am *near it* ;
Approchez-vous du feu. Je suis tout auprès.

If the preposition cannot become an adverb, we must give the sentence another turn. Example :

At first the house was burnt, and after it the church ;
D'abord la maison fut brûlée, et ensuite l'église.

RULE 54.—*Use of the supplementary Pronouns, le la, les.*

The supplementary pronouns, *le, la, les*, are always used in French before the verb *être*, in answer to a question, though there be no pronoun expressed in English.

Le is invariable : 1. With reference to adjectives of both genders and numbers. Examples : Are your brothers learned ? No, they are not ; *Vos frères sont-ils savants ? Non, ils ne le sont pas.* Are your sisters sick ? Yes, they are ? *Vos sœurs sont-elles malades ? Oui, elles le sont.*

2. With reference to verbs. Example : Do you think they will come ? Yes, we do ; *Croyez-vous qu'ils viennent ? Oui, nous le croyons.*

3. With reference to substantives adjectively used. Example : *Mesdames, êtes-vous parentes ? Oui, nous le sommes.**

Le invariably is also used with reference to adjectives or verbs, for the word *it* or *so*, sometimes expressed in English, but for the most part understood. Examples : You are happy, and I am not ; *Vous êtes heureuse, et moi je ne le suis pas.* I said so, but you would not believe it ; *Je le disais, mais vous ne vouliez pas le croire.*

But *le, la, les*, agree in gender or number, when they have reference to individuals. Examples : Are you Peter's brother ? Yes, I am ; *Etes-vous le frère de Pierre ? Oui, je le suis.* Are you Peter's wife ? Yes, I am ; *Etes-vous la femme de Pierre ? Oui, je la suis.* Are these your books ? Yes, they are ; *Sont-ce là vos livres ? Oui, ce les sont.* Are these your houses ? No, they are not † ; *Sont-ce là vos maisons ? Non, ce ne les sont pas.*

If the adjectives be substantively used, *la* should be used for the feminine singular, and *les* for the plural. Examples : *Etes-vous la malade pour laquelle on a fait venir*

* We may also answer, *oui, Monsieur ; oui, Madame, &c.* without repeating the verb the question is asked by.

† *Ce* is used in answer to a question asked by *est-ce là*, or *sont-ce là*. Example : *Est-ce là votre chapeau ? Oui, ce l'est.*

le médecin ? Oui, je la suis. Mesdemoiselles, êtes-vous les parentes de monsieur ? Oui, nous les sommes.

SECTION III.

THE RIGHT PLACING OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

RULE 55.—*Place of the Personal Pronouns.*

The personal pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, or elles*, usually precede the verb of which they are the subject. Examples : *Je lis*, I read ; *tu lis*, thou readest, &c.

They may be separated from it by the particle *ne*, and the governed pronouns, if there are any ; but never by any adverb. Examples :

He has not seen them ;

Il ne les a pas vus.

You always speak the truth ;

Vous dites toujours la vérité.

I will not speak to them of it :

Je ne leur en parlerai pas.

He often speaks of you ;

Il parle souvent de vous.

Not vous toujours dites la vérité. Il souvent parle de vous.

The personal pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, or elles*, are placed immediately after the verb, or its auxiliary, in three cases.

1. In an interrogative sentence. Examples :

Do you speak French ?

Parlez-vous Français ?

Have you learnt it long ?

L'avez-vous appris longtemps ?

2. When they are the subject of the verbs *dire, répondre, répliquer, continuer, poursuivre*, or *s'écrier*, used in a sentence as by parenthesis. Examples :

You see, said he, the condition I am reduced to ;

Vous voyez, dit-il, l'état où je suis réduit.

Why, did I answer him, have you not told it me before ?

Pourquoi, lui répondis-je, ne me l'avez-vous pas dit plutôt ?

3. Most frequently when the verb is preceded by the conjunctions *au moins, aussi, ainsi, en vain, peut-être, à peine*, and some others. Examples :

In vain you seek for excuses ;

En vain cherchez-vous des excuses.

Perhaps he will come ;

Peut-être viendra-t-il.

RULE 56.—*The governed Pronouns placed after the Verb.*

When the verb is in the imperative affirmative, the go-

verned pronouns are put after it in French as in English.
Examples :

Speak to *them* ; write to *him* ; answer *us* ; see *them* ;
Parlez-leur ; *écrivez-lui* ; *répondez-nous* ; *voyez-les*.

But if there are two imperatives joined by a conjunction, the governed pronouns are put after the first verb, and before the second. Examples :

Lend or sell it me ; *prêtez-le-moi, ou me le vendez*.
Forgive or punish them ; *pardonnez-leur, ou les punissez*.

If the verb which is in the imperative affirmative governs two pronouns, the subject goes first. Example :

Give it me, sell it them ; *donnez-le-moi, vendez-le-leur*.

When the pronouns *y* or *en* meet with another pronoun, they go last : as *menez-les-y*, *menez-nous-y*, *donnez-leur-en*, &c. : however, *y* is placed before *moi*, and *m'en* is used instead of *moi en*. Examples :

Carry me thither ; *menez-y-moi* ; give me some ; *donnez-m'en*.

Not *menez-moi-s-y*, *donnez-moi-s-en*, as said incorrectly by some persons.

But an *s* is inserted after an imperative in the singular, joined to *en* pronominal : as, *trouves-en*, find some ; *cherches-en*, seek some ; also *vas-y*, go there : but *va en Italie*, where *en* is a preposition.

But if the verb were in the imperative negative, the governed pronouns should go before it, as they do in all other tenses. Examples :

Do not sell it him ; do not give it them ;
Ne le lui vendez pas ; ne le leur donnez pas.

RULE 57.—*The governed Pronouns placed before the Verb.*

When the verb is not in the imperative affirmative, the governed pronouns are always put immediately before it in a simple tense, and before its auxiliary in a compound one. Examples :

You do not know them ; you have not seen them.
Vous ne les connaissez pas ; vous ne les avez pas vus.

The governed pronouns do not precede any other verbs than those they are governed by, or their auxiliaries : thus we say,—

I wanted to speak to them ; he could do it ;
Je voulais leur parler ; il pouvait le faire.

Not *je leur voulais parler ;* nor *il le pouvait faire.*

RULE 58.—*Order in which Pronouns are put before the Verb.*

When two or more pronouns are governed by a verb, those of the first and second persons precede those of the third ; and if they are both of the third person, *le, la, les* are placed before *lui, leur ; y* and *en* go the last ; or, what is the same, the governed pronouns are invariably placed before the verb, in the following order :—

Me, te, se, nous, vous,	<i>go before every other.</i>
Le, la, les	<i>go before lui, leur, y or en.</i>
Lui, leur,	<i>go before y or en.</i>
Y,	<i>goes before en.</i>

Examples :

He gives it me, he has lent it you, he has sent them to us ;

Il me le donne, il vous l'a prêté, il nous les a envoyés.

When he sends them to me, I shall bring them to you ;

Quand il me les enverra, je vous les porterai.

He gives it to him, he will lend it to them, he has sent them to him ;

Il le lui donne, il le leur prêtera, ils les lui ont envoyés.

I will carry you some thither, I have carried some thither to them ;

Je vous y en porterai, je leur y en ai porté.

SECTION IV.

WHEN THE PRONOUNS ARE OR ARE NOT TO BE REPEATED
IN FRENCH.

RULE 59.—*The Personal Pronouns, je, tu, il, &c. repeated.*

The personal pronouns of the first and second persons, such as *je, tu, nous, vous*, are usually repeated in French before every verb of which they are the subject, whether they are repeated or not in English. Example :

You should love God with all your heart, forgive your enemies, and pray for those who persecute you ;

Vous aimerez Dieu de tout votre cœur ; vous pardonnerez à vos ennemis, et vous prierez pour vos persécuteurs.

The pronouns of the third person are usually repeated
—1. When they belong to different tenses. 2. When the

second is preceded by any other conjunction than *et*, *ni*, or *ou*. 3. When the first is affirmative and the second negative, or *vice versa*. 4. When the second verb is separated from the preceding by many words. Examples:

1. She is and will always be modest, I am sure ;
Elle est modeste, et elle le sera toujours, j'en suis sûr.

2. They are lovely, since they please you ;
Elles sont aimables, puisqu'elles vous plaisent.

3. He says so, but he does not believe it ;
Il le dit, mais il ne le croit pas.

4. He spoke yesterday to his father about his sister's marriage, and obtained his consent ;

Il parla hier à son père du mariage de sa sœur, et il obtint son consentement.

In other circumstances, the pronouns *il* or *elle*, *ils* or *elles*, are not usually repeated before verbs which are in the same tense. Thus we say :—

He took towns, conquered provinces, and subdued nations ;
Il prit des villes, conquît des provinces, et subjuguâ des nations.

RULE 60.—*The governed Pronouns are always repeated.*

The pronouns *me*, *te*, *le*, *nous*, *vous*, *lui*, *leur*, *le*, *la*, *les*, are always repeated in French before every verb they are governed by, whether they are repeated or not in English. Examples :

A son well educated never rebels against his father ; he loves, honours, and respects him ;

Un fils bien élevé ne s'arme jamais contre son père ; il l'aime, l'honore, et le respecte.

I love him, and always shall, if he behave well ;

Je l'aime, et je l'aimerai toujours, s'il se conduit bien.

SECTION V.

DISTINCTION BETWEEN *LUI*, *ELLE*, *SE*, AND *SOI*.

RULE 61.—himself, herself, expressed by *se*, *lui*, *elle*, or *soi*.

The compound pronouns, *himself*, *herself*, *themselves*, joined to a verb, are generally expressed by *se*, if it is reflected ; but if not, *himself* is expressed by *lui-même*, and *herself* by *elle-même* ; *themselves* by *eux-mêmes*, for the masculine, by *elles-mêmes*, for the feminine. Examples :

He submits himself to your orders, but he is not satisfied ;
Il se soumet à vos ordres, mais il n'est pas content.
 She always speaks of herself, and never of others ;
Elle parle toujours d'elle-même, et jamais des autres.
 They are come of their own accord into the country ;
Ils sont venus d'eux-mêmes à la campagne.

The compound pronouns, *himself* and *herself*, are expressed by *soi*, speaking of persons in general, and after the indeterminate pronouns, *on*, *chacun*, *quelqu'un*, *qui-conque*, *celui*, or *celle qui*. Examples :

The man who loves nobody but *himself* is not fit for society ;
L'homme qui n'aime que soi n'est pas propre pour la société.
 Every one acts for *himself* in this world ;
Chacun agit pour soi en ce monde.
 Whoever thinks only of *himself* is unworthy to live ;
Quiconque ne pense qu'à soi est indigne de vivre.

The word *soi* is not used with reference to a noun plural.

RULE 62.—*itself* is rendered by *lui* or *soi*.

The impersonal pronoun *itself*, is usually expressed by *soi*, and not by *lui*, when it has reference to a pronoun, or to a substantive singular, taken in a general sense, which represents an inanimate object. Examples :

That is good in itself ; *cela est bon en soi.*
 Loadstone attracts iron to itself ; *l'aimant attire le fer à soi.*

When *itself* has a reference to an animate object, it is expressed by *lui-même* or *elle-même*. It is also expressed by *lui-même*, *elle-même*, and not by *soi*, when it refers to an inanimate object, considered as a person. Example :

La terre est fertile d'elle-même — (not de soi.)
 Earth is fruitful of itself.

EXERCISE UPON THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

SECTION I.

WHEN THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS ARE CONJUNCTIVE OR DISJUNCTIVE.

RULE 45.—*Personal Pronouns when Subjects.*

1. The eagle has a very piercing eye ; he looks at the sun without
*aigle m la très-perçant si vit regarder * soleil sans*

lowering his eyelids; he inhabits the cold countries, he builds his
baisser les paupières habiter froid 31 pays bâtir
 nest on the summit of the highest trees. I am not so learned as
nid sur sommet 31 arbre m si savant que
 your brother, but he is older than I. — 1. You speak too fast. — 2.
frère âgé trop vite
 He and your brother were of the same opinion.
c même —

2. They and my brother are come. — 2. They alone have fought
venir seul combattre (ir)
 the enemy; and consequently they alone deserve to be rewarded for
ennemi conséquemment seul mériter d' récompensés
 that brilliant action which ensures our victory. — 2. Telemachus,
brillant 31 — qui assurer victoire Télémaque
 speaking of his father Ulysses to the goddess Calypso, said to her:
Ulysse déesse — dire (ir) c 47
 Penelope his wife, and I who am his son, have lost all hope
Pénélope femme nous perdu espérance
 (of seeing him again).
de le revoir

Sir, some one has written a book against you. — Who? Scopas. —
*monsieur * on écrire livre m contre qui*
 He? I forgive him; what he writes is read (by no one); he hurts
lui pardonner ce qu' n'est lu de personne ne nuire
 no one but himself. You like the town, and I the country.
** * qu'à lui-même ville f campagne f*

RULE 46.—Personal Pronouns preceded by de.

When one advised Philip to expel from his dominions a
comme on conseiller à Philippe de chasser état
 man who had spoken ill of him; I will take care not to do it,
B mal se garder d bien de le faire
 replied Philip; he would go (every where), and speak ill of me.
*répliquer c aller (ir) e partout **
 In the education of youth, we ought to instruct them in the
*dans é— des jeunes gens on devoir A * instruire 48*
 religious worship which God requires of them. I speak well of you,
religieux 31 culte m Dieu demander dire (ir) du bien
 Damon; you speak ill of me. What a misfortune is ours! Neither
*dire du mal quel * malheur le nôtre on ne nous*
 of us is believed. If you do not behave better, I will com-
croit ni l'un ni l'autre se conduire mieux se plain-
 plain of you to your father.
dre

RULE 47.—Personal Pronouns preceded by à.

N. B. The pronouns *him* and *her* are expressed by *lui*, and *them* by *leur*, when the preposition *to* can be prefixed to them. They are usually expressed by *le*, *la*, or *les*, when it cannot.

1. The forgiveness of our enemies does not consist solely in not
*pardon des * ennemi * consister seulement à*
hurting them in their reputation or fortune; we must besides love
nuire à dans ré— — on devoir à en outre aimer
them and do them good. — 1. A good heart is as grateful to you
48 *faire à du bien cœur sait aussi bon gré*
(for the) advantages you wish him, as (for the) presents you make
du bien que souhaiter à 37 des présent que faire
him. — 2. I forgive both you and him, because I hope you will
pardonner et à à parce que espérer
behave better (for the future). — 2. When your brother came to
se conduire mieux à l'avenir venir c
us, we were not thinking of him. You have deceived me; I will
penser à à tromper
not trust you any more. — 2. The minister is your enemy; if
*ne se fier plus à * * —tre si*
you apply to him you never will succeed. — 1. A young man who
s'adresser à réussir jeune
follows the good advice which is given him, will be a man of
*suivre (ir) conseil pl qu'on * donne à*
merit.
mérite

RULE 48.—*Personal Pronouns when Regimen.*

God is a father to those who love him, and a protector to those
Dieu le de ceux aimer le —teur de
who fear him. Vice often deceives us under the shape of virtue.
craindre à m tromper sous masque m 4
If you would get a friend, you must prove him first, and be not
vouloir (ir) à avoir ami il faut éprouver auparavant
hasty to credit him. A great source of error is the common
prompt à vous fier à —f erreur c'est commun 31
practice of judging what men will appear in a condition (in which)
pratiquer de juger de ce que paraitre — où
we have not seen them, from what they appear in another (in which)
vus d'après ce que une autre où
we see them.
voir (ir)

RULE 49.—*Pronouns after a Preposition.*

May these children be to you what they have been to me! O
puissent enfant envers ce qu' envers
God! do for them what I cannot myself! repay them thirty
H ce que pouvoir (ir) à moi-même rendez leur trente
years of happiness, which I owe to their tenderness and virtue.
ans bonheur devoir tendresse vertu
Pisistratus said of a drunken man, who had spoken against him :
—te dire (ir) c ivre 31 à contre
I am no more angry with him, than if a blind man had run against
*fâché contre aveugle * s'était jeté*

me. The love of enemies consists in desiring their welfare, in
amour ennemi consister à leur désirer du bien à
 praying for them, and in speaking well of them, when occasion re-
prier à parler en bien quand 9 de-
 quires it.
mander le 50

SECTION II.

PRONOUNS USED WITH REFERENCE TO ANIMALS AND THINGS.

Of the Personal Pronouns, it, they, or them.

RULE 50.—The Pronouns, it, they, them.

Ambition is a noble passion, but it often occasions many
 9 — — 31 — *mais souvent — sionner bien des*
 mischiefs. Neglect the pleasures of life; the pains which follow them
mal négliger H plaisir 4 vie peine suivre (ir)
 prove how vain they are. The pleasures of a temperate man are
prouver combien — tempéré 31
 durable, because they are regular; and his life is calm, because it is
 — *parce qu' régulier vie calme*
 innocent. The public approbation is the object which makes us
 — 31 — *objet faire (ir)* 48
 undertake heroical actions, and it is by such actions, that we
entreprendre héroïque 31 7 — c'est de telles —
 deserve it. (This is) a fine apple-tree, it blossoms every spring;
mêriter f voilà pommier fleurir tous les printemps
 yet it seldom produces any fruit. I will cut it down, if it
*rarement produire aucun — abattre (ir) **
 yield no apples this year.
donner 18 pomme années

RULE 51.—en, for it or them.

You have bought fine lace; give me some; buy some, if
acheter 8 dentelle H m' H
 you will have any. — 1. What avail riches to a miser? he does
*vouloir (ir) A * que servent richesses avare*
 not make any use of them. — 2. I have many oranges, will you
faire (ir) aucun usage plusieurs — vouloir (ir) A
 have any? I shall be obliged to you, if you will give me some. —
 * *obligé 47 vouloir A donner*
 1. Life is a gift of God; to destroy it is a crime. — 1. Honour is
 9 *vis don Dieu * disposer en crime 9 honneur*
 an inaccessible island: when you have once gone out of it, you
 31 *ils f aussitôt que être * sortir. **
 cannot (come into it again).
pouvoir (ir) A y rentrer

RULE 52.—*lui, leur, y, it, them.**

1. Your horses are hungry, give *them* some hay. — 2. Before you
*cheval avoir fuim donner n à 7 foim avant de **
 tell a story, it is proper to give the company a true idea of the
conter histoire à propos de donner à compagnie vrai idée
 persons who are concerned in it. When truth appears in all its
personne f intéressé 4 vérité paraltre
 brightness, nobody can resist it. My house is in good
éclat pouvoir (ir) A résister maison en
 air; I am indebted to it (for the) recovery of my health. — 2.
— redevable du rétablissement santé
 Pearls would not (be worth) (so much) money, if luxury did not
9 perle f valoir (ir) x tant 18 argent luxe m
 give value to them. — 2. (How many) people would not be known
donner n 7 prix combien 18 gens connu
 in society, if gaming did not introduce them into it.
4 jeu —duire n 50

RULE 53.—*Pronouns it and them left out.*

The falling of the water of the Nile makes (so much) noise that
chute f eau Nil faire (ir) tant 18 bruit
 it deafens those who dwell near it. Labour is fruitless when
elle rendre sourd ceux demeurer auprès travail 9 inutile
 nature is against it. Do you know where the treasury of London
*4 — contre * savoir (ir) où est trésorerie —dres*
 is? — Yes, Sir, I do; well then, you will easily find your
** oui le sais ch-bien aisément trouver*
 way; near it is York-house, just by is the Horse-Guards, and
chemin auprès 17 tout auprès garde à cheval f
 (over against) it, is the royal chapel, where you want to go.
*vis-à-vis 31 chapelle où vouloir (ir) * aller*

RULE 54.—*Supplying Pronouns, le, la, les.*

1. I thought that Miss B. was married, but she is not. — My
croire (ir) n mademoiselle n marié
 aunts are sick, and I think they will be so for a long time. — 2.
*tants malade penser * * temps*
 Are you the sisters of Mr. Taylor? Yes, we are. 1. Are they
sœurs
 learned? No, they are not. — 2. Are you the brothers of admiral
savant Non l'amiral
 Nelson? Yes, we are. Are you the sister of colonel Jenkinson?
du —
 No, sir, I am not. — 1. Are your brothers learned? Yes, they are.
savant

* When to it or to them are preceded by the verbs to owe or to be indebted, they are always expressed by *lui* or *leur*, even with reference to an inanimate object.

Are your sisters married? No, they *are* not. — Is your mother
marié ? non
 sick? No, she *is* not. — Is your father rich? No, he *is* not. — 2.
malade riche
 Is that your house? Yes, it *is*. Are these your gardens? No,
est-ce là sont-ce là jardin
 they *are* not. Is that your hat? Yes, it *is*. Are these your pens?
est-ce là chapeau sont-ce là plume f
 Yes, they *are*. — 1. Your sisters are happy, and we are not *so*. — 1.
sœur heureux
 They have been rich, but are not so at present.
elles riche 59 à présent

SECTION III.

THE RIGHT PLACING OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

RULE 55.—*Place of the Pronouns je, tu, il, &c.*

We often (pass judgment) upon men's actions, according to our
*juger des 17 — selon **
 love or hatred of the persons who have done them. Do you
haine f pour personne faites 48
 learn French? have you learnt it long? do you speak it
apprendre (ir) 57 longtemps
 fluently? Things do not always strike us in proportion as they
couramment 9 chose f frapper 48 à — qu'
 are obvious; (on the) contrary, some do not strike us at all,
claire au contraire quelques-unes 48 du tout
 because they are obvious (in the) highest degree. Is he young? are
parce qu' au haut degré jeune
 they rich? is she handsome?
riche beau

RULE 56.—*Pronouns after the Verb.*

1. Answer *me*; write to *him*; forgive *them*; speak to *us*. — 2.
répondre écrire pardonner dat. parler
 Love your enemies, and do *them* good, when you can. — 2.
aimer ennemi faire à bien 7 le pouvoir (ir) A
 Obey your parents, love and respect *them* (as long as) you live. —
obéir à respecter tant que vivre D
 1. Consider, O parents! the importance of your obligations towards
considérer — envers
 your children; it depends on you, (whether or not they will be)
enfant dépendre de qu'ils soient ou non
 useful members of society; teach *them* obedience, and they will
utile 31 7—bre 4 société enseigner à obéissance 9
 bless you; teach *them* modesty, and they will be reserved; teach
bénir 48 inspirer à 9—tie réservé inspirer à

them charity, and they will be loved; teach them temperance, and
 —té — porter à 4 —
 they will enjoy good health. — 3. Do not forgive him, but
 jouir d'une santé pardonner à
 punish him directly.
 punir sur-le-champ

RULE 57.—*Pronouns before the Verb.*

The second Brutus would have re-established the Romans in their
 — — rétablir Romain
 ancient liberty, if he had found them as well disposed as they were
 ancien —té — trouver aussi —sé qu'ils 54 —
 in the time of the first.
 temps

Jupiter, vexed that Saturn laid snares for him, armed against
 irrité 14 tendre à 7 piège * lui c contre
 him, drove him out of his kingdom, and constrained him to quit
 49 chasser c * royaume m obliger c de quitter 9
 heaven. Prosperity gets us friends, and adversity tries them.
 ciel 9 —té faire (ir) ami 7 9 —té éprouver
 Do you know the Prince of Wales? I have seen him several
 connaître — Galles voir (ir) plusieurs
 times, but have never spoken to him. We flatter ourselves in vain
 fois mais se flatter * en —
 that we quit our passions, when it is they which quit us. I
 quitter — ce sont elles
 believe him. Do you believe them? He will not punish me. Do
 croire (ir) punir
 you not know her?
 connaître

RULE 58.—*Order of the Pronouns before the Verb.*

I dare not tell it them. Pray, brother, tell it to my mother;
 * oser dire (ir) je vous prie 56
 she knows it, I told it to her yesterday. If you still have your
 savoir (ir) 57 c hier encore
 orange, give it me. I am sorry I cannot give it you; but your
 —f 56 fâché de ne pouvoir
 sister has been a good girl, and I have given it her; I will give you
 * fille f
 some to-morrow, if your exercise be well done.
 51 demain thème A

Do not say to a friend who asks something of you, Go, and
 dire (ir) demander quelque chose m aller (ir)
 come again to-morrow, I will give it you, when you can give it him
 revenir * demain pouvoir (ir)
 (at the time). The duke of Bouillon was obliged to give the
 sur-le-champ duc c obliger de
 town of Sedan to Henry the Fourth; but this prince, satisfied with
 ville — Henri 11 — content de

Are your sisters married? No, they are not. —

sick? No, she is not. — Is your father rich?

Is that your house? Yes, it is. Are these

they are not. Is that your hat? Yes, it is

Yes, they are. — 1. Your sisters are by

They have been rich, but are not so

THE RIGHT PLACE

RULE 55.—Place

We often (pass je)

love or hatred c

learn Frer. — Pronouns je, tu, il, &c. repeated.

fluently? and will always maintain, that we cannot be happy

are obvie practising virtue. Man rises and unfolds his faculties by

because he advances slowly to maturity, and afterwards declines

they gradually, till he sinks into the grave. Beware of

drunkenness; it impairs the understanding, tarnishes reputation, and

consumes the body. He says so, but he does not believe it. We

have spoken, and will speak again in your favour.

RULE 60.—Pronouns te, me, se, &c. repeated.

The most beautiful flowers last but a short time, the least rain

tarnishes them, the wind withers them, the sun scorches them; not to

mention an infinite number of insects, that spoil and hurt

them. A passionate temper renders a man unfit for business, de-

reason, robs him of all that is great in his nature,
 ôter lui * tout ce qu'il y a de —
 fit for society. The Holy Scriptures teach us
 société 4 écriture apprendre (ir)
 let us therefore read them, meditate
 * c'est pourquoi lire (ir) H méditer
 the rule of our conduct. A well-educated
 règle f conduits bien élevé 31
 other; he loves, honours, and respects
 aimer honorer —ter

myself, herself, &c.

myself. — 2. When a man does not
 quand * on
 if, he does not deserve to live. 1. It is not
 on mériter de vivre il n'est pas
 courageous man to expose himself to danger without
 —geux 31 de —ser — sans
 y. — 1. They are easily pardoned who endeavour to
 on pardonne aisément à ceux chercher à
 withdraw themselves from their errors. — 2. When a man loves
 retirer erreur quand * on n'aimer
 nobody but himself, he is not fit for society. — 2. To excuse in one's
 * que on propre 4 * —ser en
 self the faults which one cannot bear in others, is to
 faute on ne pouvoir (ir) A souffrir dans les autres c'est *
 like better to be foolish one's self than to see others so. — 1. Your
 aimer mieux * fou soi-même 40 de voir tels
 brother knows himself; he often makes reflections upon himself,
 connaître souvent faire 7 sur
 and I hope he will soon correct himself of his bad habits.
 espérer bientôt corriger mauvais habitude

RULE 62.—itself expressed by lui or soi.

The remedy which you propose is harmless of itself. Men often
 remède m proposer innocent en souvent
 reject truth, though evident in itself, because the sight (of it) dis-
 rejeter vérité quoique parce que vue en 58 dé-
 pleases them. Self-love directs (every thing) to itself. Virtue is
 plaire leur 58 amour propre diriger tout
 amiable of itself. Whatever is good in itself, is not always approved.
 aimable en tout ce qui bon toujours approuver
 The palm-tree incessantly rises of itself, whatever efforts are made
 palmier sans cesse se relever quelques effort qu'on fasse
 to depress it.
 pour courber 48

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

To forget one's birth by doing bad actions, or to remember it
 * oublier sa naissance en 8 mauvais — se souvenir en
 only (out of) vanity, is to dishonour it equally. God
 58 seulement par c'est * déshonorer la 48 également
 requires your heart; you cannot refuse it him. A flatterer has
 demander cœur ne pouvoir (ir) A — ser 58 flatteur
 not a good opinion of himself nor of others. A gross mistake is
 * — 61 ni des autres grossier 31 faute f
 not only that which every reader perceives, but it is, moreover,
 seulement celle tout lecteur apercevoir c'est encore
 that which we find gross, after another has made us perceive it. If
 celle trouver après qu'un autre faire 58 apercevoir 58
 you have promised any thing to an enemy, you ought not to
 promettre (ir) quelque chose ennemi devoir A *
 break the promise you have made him.
 manquer à promesse que faite 47

We confess small failings, only to persuade others that we
 n'avouer 8 petit défaut que pour — der aux autres nous n'en
 have no great ones. There is no age or condition but
 avons 18 * il n'y a point 18 siècle ni 21 — qui ne
 can reap great benefits from history; when properly
 pouvoir (ir) recueillir 8 avantage histoire elle est bien
 taught, it proves a school of morality for all men; cries down
 enseignée elle devenir école f morale pour tous les 59 décrier *
 vices, unmasks false virtues, dispels vulgar errors, and demon-
 9 démasquer fausses 31 dissiper vulgaire 31 erreur prou-
 strates, by a thousand instances, that there is nothing great but
 ver * exemple qu'il n'y a rien de que
 honour and probity. You will find it impossible, said
 honneur 4 — té trouver * — dire (ir) c
 Mentor to the king of Salentum, to bring men back to the principles
 Salente de ramener 9 * — pe
 of virtue, after you have taught them to despise it.
 la après que n appris leur 47 à mépriser 48

You have promised me a watch; when will you give it me? If
 promis 57 montre f quand donner 58
 we did not flatter ourselves, flattery would not (be hurtful) to us.
 se flatter n nous-mêmes — rie nuire n 47
 The law of nature forbids us to hurt (any body). I have bought
 loi — défendre de nuire à personne acheter
 some new pamphlets; I will send them to you, if you will
 8 nouveau — envoyer (ir) 58 vouloir (ir) A
 return them to me next week. You have many oranges;
 rendre 58 la prochaine 31 semaine beaucoup 18 —
 pray give me some. The merit of our actions comes from
 je vous prie de 51 mérite m — servir

the motives which produce them, and from their conformity to the
motif — *desire* 48 — *té*
 laws of God,
loi

Posterity renders to men of merit the justice which their con-
 9 — *térité rendre* 2 — *mérite* —
 temporaries often refuse them. Lend me your grammar; I will
 — *rain* — *ser leur* 47 *prêter* 56 — *maire f*
 return it to you to-morrow; if you refuse it me, I cannot do
rendre 58 *demain* — *ser* 58 *ne pouvoir (ir) A*
 my exercise, nor learn my lesson; because I have lost mine.
thème *apprendre* *leçon* *parce que* *perdre la mienne.*
 I tell you the truth, and you will not believe me. Do you
 57 *vouloir (ir) A* *croire* 57

know the Princess of Wales? I have seen her, and had the
connaître — *cesse* *Galles* *vus* 57 *j'ai eu*
 honour to speak to her several times. You said you would
de 47 *plusieurs fois* *dire (ir) B que*
 give me a watch when I could write French; my exercise
donner B me 57 *montre f* *pouvoir (ir) B écrire en*
 is without fault; when will you give it me? Have patience; you
sans faute quand 58 H —
 shall have it soon.
bientôt

CHAP. V.

OF POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 63.— *The Possessive Pronouns agree with and are repeated before all their Substantives.*

THE possessive pronouns are repeated in French before all their substantives, and agree with them in gender and number; they are invariable in English, and need not to be repeated. Example:—

My father, mother, and brothers are in the country;
Mon père, ma mère, et mes frères sont à la campagne.

We nevertheless use the pronouns *mon, ton, son*, masc., before a noun feminine which begins with a vowel or an *h* mute, in order to avoid the *hiatus* which would result from the meeting of two vowels. Examples:—

Mon âme, f., ton ambition, f., son humeur, f.

Not *ma âme, ta ambition, sa humeur.*

The English make the pronouns *his* and *her* agree with the noun antecedent; the French, on the contrary, make always *son*, *sa*, *ses*, agree with the noun which follows. Examples:—

Her husband is young; his wife is handsome;
Son époux est jeune; sa femme est belle.

RULE 64.— *The Possessive Pronouns are used in speaking to one's Relations.*

When we speak to our relations or friends, we use, in French, the possessive pronouns *mon*, *ma*, *mes*, before the words *fil*, *fille*, *frère*, *sœur*, *père*, *mère*, *oncle*, *tante*, &c. though they are not used in English. Examples:—

Where are you, daughter? *Où êtes-vous, ma fille?*
 Here I am, father; *me voici, mon père.*
 Brother, will you come with me? Yes, sister;
Mon frère, voulez-vous venir avec moi? Oui, ma sœur.

RULE 65.— *When the Qualifications of Mr. and Mde. &c. are used.*

When we speak to any person respecting their relations or friends, and we mean to pay them some respect, the qualifications of *Monsieur*, *Madame*, *Mademoiselle*, &c. are usually prefixed, in French, to the possessive pronouns *votre* or *vos*. Examples:—

How does your uncle do? *Comment se porte Monsieur votre oncle?*
 Are your sisters at home?
Mesdemoiselles vos sœurs sont-elles à la maison?
 I met with your mother, who told me your father was not well;
J'ai rencontré Madame votre mère, qui m'a dit que Monsieur votre père ne se portait pas bien.

Observe, the possessive pronouns, *mon*, *ma*, of which these words, *monsieur*, *madame*, *mademoiselle*, are composed, are changed into *mes* for the plural: so we say *messieurs*, *mésdames*, *mesdemoiselles*.

Monsieur and *messieurs* are employed as substantives, and may be preceded by an article or another pronoun: as, *le monsieur que j'ai vu*, the gentleman I have seen; *je parlerai à ces messieurs*, I will speak to these gentlemen. But the possessive pronoun is always left out before *dame*, *demoiselle*, used substantively: *cette dame*, or *cette demoiselle*.

selle, est belle, that lady is handsome ; and not *cette madame, cette mademoiselle*.

RULE 66.— *When the Possessive Pronouns are rendered by the Personal.*

The possessive pronouns (*my, thy, his, her, &c.*) are expressed in French by the personal pronouns, *me, te, se, nous, vous, lui, leur*; and not by *mon, ton, son, &c.* when they are joined with the name of any part of the body to which the verb relates ; and in this case an article definite takes the ordinary place of the pronoun. Examples :

You have broken his arm ;	<i>Vous lui avez rompu le bras.</i>
He has cut his finger ;	<i>Il s'est coupé le doigt.</i>
You tread upon their feet ;	<i>Vous leur marchez sur les pieds.</i>
You hurt my hand ;	<i>Vous me blessez la main.</i>

As if it were : you *to him* have broken the arm ; he *to him* has cut the finger ; you *to them* tread upon the feet ; you *to me* hurt the hand : and so on for all other like sentences.

Observe, to express *his, her, and their*, by *se*, when the verb is reflected ; and by *lui, or leur*, when it is not.

RULE 67.— *When the Possessive Pronouns are, or are not to be left out in French.*

If the verb does not express an action over any part of the body, the possessive pronouns (*my, thy, his, her, &c.*) are usually left out in French, and the definite article (*le, la, les*) is used instead of them. Example :

I have a pain in my side ;	<i>J'ai mal au côté.</i>
His eyes are sore ;	<i>Il a mal aux yeux.</i>

But if the sense become obscure by leaving out the possessive pronoun, or for the sake of distinction and contrast, employ the possessive pronouns : as,

I see that my arm swells ;	<i>Je vois que mon bras enfle.</i>
Do you think my hand will ever be cured ?	
<i>Pensez-vous que ma main se guérisse jamais ?</i>	

Observe, I put *mon bras, ma main*, in the latter sentences, because I can see another person's arm swelling as well as mine ; but I put *au côté, aux yeux*, not *à mon côté, à ses yeux*, because I cannot feel pains in any other side than mine, nor can he have other eyes sore than his own.

This distinction is a nice point, and must be particularly attended to.

RULE 68.— *When its or their is to be expressed by son, and when by en.*

When the possessive pronouns *its*, *their*, are used with reference to an inanimate object, they are expressed by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, *leur*, or by *en*, according to the following distinction :

They are expressed by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, *leur*, or *leurs*, first, when they relate to the subject of the preceding verb, as personified. Secondly, when they are preceded by any preposition whatsoever. Thirdly, when, being the subject, they are joined to a substantive, qualified by an adjective, or specified by some other words. Fourthly, when being the subject, the next verb, or its government, is immediately or may be followed by the preposition *de*. Examples :

1. London has *its* beauties ; *Londres a ses beautés.*
2. I admire the size of *its* streets ;
J'admire la grandeur de ses rues.
3. *Its* regular buildings please at the first sight ;
Ses bâtimens réguliers plaisent au premier coup-d'œil.
4. *Its* trade produces immense resources ;
Son commerce produit d'immenses ressources.
Its ships bring the riches of all countries ;
Ses vaisseaux apportent les richesses de tous les pays.

Except on these occasions, *its* or *their* is expressed by *en* before the verb ; and the article, *le*, *la*, *les*, before the substantive. So we should say, speaking still of London :

Its situation is agreeable ;
Le site en est agréable.
Its squares appear to me beautiful ;
Les places m'en paraissent superbes.
I particularly admire *its* rich warehouses ;
J'en admire surtout les riches magasins.

When *its* and *their* have reference to an animate object they are always expressed by *son*, *sa*, *ses*, *leur*, *leurs*. Example :

Your horse has lost *its* shoe ; *votre cheval a perdu son fer.*

RULE 69.— *Of the Possessive Pronouns, mine, thine, &c.*

The possessive pronouns (*mine, thine, his, hers, &c.*) agree, in French, both in gender and number, with the substantive antecedent to which they have reference, and are always preceded by the definite article, *le, la, les*. Example :

Many houses have been destroyed during the siege; *yours* and *mine* have been burnt, but *theirs* has not suffered ;

Beaucoup de maisons ont été détruites pendant le siège ; la vôtre et la mienne ont été brûlées, mais la leur n'a point souffert.

These pronouns form their feminine according to Rule 2, page 73.

RULE 70.— *mine is sometimes expressed by mes.*

When the disjunctive pronouns (*mine, thine, his, hers, &c.*) preceded by *of*, are placed after a substantive to which they relate, they are expressed in French by *mes, tes, ses, nos, vos, leurs*, placed before the substantive, and not by *le mien, le tien, le sien, &c.* Examples :

A friend of mine ; *un de mes amis*—(not *un ami des miens*).

A book of yours ; *un de vos livres*—(not *un livre des vôtres*).

As if it were : one *of my* friends ; one *of your* books ; and in the same way all sentences of this sort.

RULE 71.— *mine, thine, expressed by à moi, à toi.*

The disjunctive, *mine, thine, &c.* are expressed by *à moi, à toi, à lui, à elle, à nous, à vous, à eux, or à elles*, when they come after the verb, *to be*, which has for its subject a substantive, or a personal pronoun. Examples :

That book is mine ;

Ce livre est à moi.

It is not yours, I think ;

Il n'est pas à vous, je crois.

If, however, the verb *être* is preceded by *ce*, then *mine, thine, &c.* should be expressed by *le mien, le tien, le sien, &c.* Example :

Is that your watch ?

Yes, it is mine ;

Est-ce là votre montre ?

Oui, c'est la mienne.

N.B. If a substantive come after, or a relative pronoun come before the verb *être*, signifying *to belong*, they are

in both cases, preceded by the preposition *à* in French.
Examples :

This horse is my father's;
Whose house is that ?

Ce cheval est à mon père.
A qui est cette maison ?

EXERCISES UPON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 63. — Possessive Pronouns.

- Such are men ; *their* ingratitude is often the price of *our* favours.
tels 4 — prix bienfait
- A good king does not (so much) consult *his* own dignity and
elevation, as the advantage and happiness of *his* subjects. — 1. The
élé— 37 avantage bonheur sujet
laborious man shuts out idleness from *his* house ; he considers it as
laborieux 31 bannir 9 * paresse maison —dérer 57
his greatest enemy ; he (rises up early), he exercises *his* mind
ennemie f se lever de bon matin —cer esprit
with contemplation, and *his* body with labour : the slothful man,
dans 4 — corps en travaillant paresseux *
(on the) contrary, is a burden to himself ; *his* body is diseased for
au contraire à charge 61 corps malade *
want of exercise, *his* mind is in darkness, *his* thoughts are confused,
faute —ce esprit dans 4 ténèbres pl pensée —se
his house is in disorder, he deplores *his* fate, but has no resolution to
maison en désordre m déplorer sort mais le courage d'y
remedy it. — 3. *His* mother is dead ; *her* father is dead ; *his*
apporter remède * mère mort père
wife is handsome, *her* husband is young. — 2. *His* ambition is great ;
femme beau mari jeune —
her soul is elevated ; *my* history is short. — *His* shame is great. —
âme f élevé histoire court honte f
- Her* hope is ill-grounded.
espérance mal-fondé

RULE 64. — Possessive Pronouns used in French and not in English.

(At last) the girl being come near the house, *mother, mother,* cried
enfin fille venue près de mère s'écrier c
she, (come out), *mother,* come out, (here is) a gentleman who has
sortir H voici monsieur
brought us a letter from my father : at that summons (out came the
apporter 57 lettre père appel la mère
mother) ; (what is the matter), *child ?* said she, seeing her daughter
sortit qu'avez-vous enfant c en voir (ir) fille
with a messenger, &c. Lend me your knife, brother. I cannot, *sister,*
messager prêter H 56 couteau ne savoir (ir) z

I want it. Where are you, daughter? (Here I am), father. Come,
j'en ai besoin où fille me voici allons
 friends, let us fly to glory.
voler H 4 gloire

RULE 65.—*Monsieur, &c. before votre or vos.*

I have invited your sisters and your cousin to dine with us,
—ter cousine f à dîner
 I hope they will come. Is your father at home? How does your
espérer 83 venir à la maison se porter
 wife do? Do your sisters learn geography? Is your brother
*épouse * apprendre (ir) —phie*
 in France? Is your aunt well? Is not your mother returned from
tante bien revenue
 the country? I saw yesterday your father and mother, but I did
campagne f voir (ir) c hier
 not see your sister; is she ill?
c malade

RULE 66.—*Possessive Pronouns by the Personal.*

My brother died last year in Germany; it was I who
mourir (ir) c l'année dernière en Allemagne c 45
 closed his eyes. I will pare your nails if you will cut my
fermer c yeux rogner ongles vouloir A couper
 hair. My brother broke his leg yesterday morning. Our
cheveux pl casser c jambe f matin
 carriage ran unfortunately over his body, broke his leg, and
voiture passer c malheureusement sur corps c
 bruised his left shoulder. Do not speak so loud, you split my
meurtrir c gauche 31 épaule f H si haut fendre
 head. If you do not take care, you will cut your fingers. A
tête f prendre (ir) A garde couper doigt
 cannon ball (shot off) my arm. Do not tread upon my foot.
boulet de canon emporter c bras marcher H sur pied
 Wash your hands. Warm your feet.
laver H main chauffer H

RULE 67.—*Possessive Pronouns left out.*

1. In the last battle our general lost his leg, my brother was
dernière bataille f perdre c c
 wounded in his shoulder, and I, who stood by him, had my thigh
blessé à épaule 45 être A auprès de lui j' c cuisse f
 (taken off). — He (tells a falsehood) as often as he opens his mouth.
emportée mentir toutes les fois que ouvrir bouche f
 —2. I see that my arm swells. —2. Do you think my foot will ever
*voir (ir) bras enfler croire 83 pied **
 (be cured)? —1. It (would be better) for a man of probity to lose
*guérir r valoir (ir) x mieux —té * perdre*
 his life than his honour by a criminal action. —1. Cæsar had a
vie honneur criminel 31 — Cæsar A la
 bald head, but he covered this defect with a crown of laurels.
chauve 3 tête f cacher A défaut couronne laurier sing.

RULE 68.—*Its expressed by son or en.*

5. This illness is dangerous, I know *its* origin and effects. —
maladie —reux connaître origine effet
2. Jealousy has love for *its* father, and fear for *its* mother. — 5,
jalousie amour crainte
- (This is) a fine tree, *its* fruit is delicious. — 1. Nobles, remember
voici arbre m — pl délicieux — se ressouvenir H
- that an illustrious birth receives from virtue *its* most shining
—tre 31 naissance beau
- lustre. — 2. Flattery has great sweetness in *its* voice; it is dif-
lustre m —rie une douceur voix
- ficult not to listen to it. — 5. This water is not good for you,
—cile de n'y pas prêter l'oreille eau
- I know all *its* qualities, and I would never recommend it in such
connaître —té recommander en pareil
- cases. — 1. Every science has *its* principles.
cas chaque —pe
5. Paris is a fine city; but *its* streets are too narrow, and *its*
ville mais rue f trop étroit
- houses too high. — 1. War has *its* theory like other sciences. —
maison haut guerre théorie comme —
5. To paint the passions with accuracy, it is necessary to have studied
pour peindre passion vérité nécessaire étudier
- the heart of man, and to know all *its* springs.
cœur connaître ressort

RULE 69.—*Mine, expressed by le mien, &c.*

- Your book is better than *mine*, but my gloves are better than
valoir (ir) mieux mais gant
- yours*. His action is blameable, *yours* (on the) contrary, is praise-
— blâmable au contraire digne de
- worthy. I have learnt my lesson, but my sister has not learnt
louange apprendre (ir) leçon
- hers*. Your country is larger than *ours*, however our king is more
pays grand cependant roi
- powerful than *yours*. Is that your book? Yes, it is *mine*. Is that
puissant est-ce là ce est-ce là
- your house? No, it is not *ours*.
ce

RULE 70.—*Mine, expressed by mes, &c.*

- I have found a book of *yours* among *mine*. A book of *mine*, you
trouver parmi 69 dites-
- say, show it me; no, it is not *mine*, I am sure, because I have
vous montrer H 56 71 en sûr parce que
- sold it. Do you know that gentleman? yes, madam, he is a relation
vendre connaître monsieur madame ce parent
- of *mine*. A friend of *ours* came yesterday to see us, who spoke to us
*ami venir c hier * voir parler 57*

about you. (This is) a trick of yours. I think that it is yet
de voilà tour croire (ir) c'est encore
 some contrivance of his own. I have been witness to several
*quelqu'une invention pl * témoin de plusieurs*
 machinations of yours. If you see any friend of mine, do not
 — *voir (ir) quelqu'un pl*
 forget to mention my return.
oublier n de parler de retour

RULE 71.—Mine, expressed by *à moi*.

Is that your house? No, it is not mine, I have sold it. I
est-ce là maison vendue
 thought it was yours.—Whose horse is this?—Mine. And that?
croire (ir) n à qui est ce cheval-ci celui-là
 — My father's. Whose gardens are these? — Mine.
à qui sont ces jardins

(Take up) that watch and carry it to your brother. I think
Prendre (ir) n montre f porter 56 croire (ir)
 it is his. No, certainly, it is not his, he has no watch. Whose
qu' certainement 18 à qui
 is it then? I do not know, unless it be my aunt's, who
donc savoir (ir) à moins que ne r tante
 was here yesterday evening.
n ici hier au soir

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

As a lame person would in vain praise the beauty of
*de même qu'un boiteux * en vain louer*
 his legs, since he cannot (make use of them) without showing
jambe f puisque pouvoir (ir) se servir en 58 , sans montrer
 that they are bad; so a fool would in vain boast of his learning,
mauvais ainsi sot se vanter science
 since he cannot speak without showing his extravagance.
puisque parler sans 63 —

The depravity of human nature is so great, that we oftener
dépravation humain 31 — si souvent
 please with our failings, than with our good qualities. It is a great
par défaut par —tê c'est
 comfort to have a friend to whom you may communicate your
consolation d' ami pouvoir (ir) r —quer
 thoughts, and who participates in your pleasures and pains.
*pensée partager r * 63 plaisir peine*

Cæsar, determined to pass over into Britain, despatched Vol-
*étant déterminé passer * en Bretagne envoyer c*
 senius, a lieutenant of his, to cruise on the coast of that island.
 — 70 * *croiser sur côte f île f*

If you will lend me your horse to-day, I will lend you mine,
vouloir (ir) prêter 47 aujourd'hui prêter 69
 when you want it. England was (at first) called Albion,
aurez besoin en 57 Angleterre 5 c d'abord appeler —
 signifying rich and happy, in regard to its fertility, temperature,
qui signifie heureux par rapport 68 —té 63 —
 and riches.
richesse

Sir, here is one of your books among mine. A book of mine,
voici livre parmi 69 livre 70
 you say, let me see it; no, it is not mine, it is my brother's. You
dites-vous montrez-le-moi 'non 71 frère 71
 hurt my arm. The dog has bit my leg. You will cut your
blesser 66 bras chien mordre 66 jambe f couper 66
 finger. Every language has its peculiar phrases and beauties.
doigt chaque langue 68 particulier 31 — f —té
 Hercules made a present to Philoctetes, his companion and friend,
*—faire (ir) c * — 63 —gnon*
 of his arrows, dyed in the blood of the Hydra. Men often reap
flèche f teindre sang Hydre tirer
 more fruit from their errors, than from their most glorious actions.
18 — erreur 44 glorieux 31 —

CHAP. VI.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 72.—*ce, cet, cette*, that; *ces*, those.

THE demonstrative pronouns (*this* and *that*) are expressed in French by *ce* before a substantive singular and masculine, when it begins with a consonant or *h* aspirated: as, *ce jardin*, this garden; *ce héros*, that hero; and by *cet*, when it begins with a vowel or *h* mute: as, *cet oiseau*, this bird; *cet homme*, this man; by *cette*, before a substantive feminine: as, *cette maison*, that house: *these* and *those* are expressed by *ces*, before a substantive plural of both genders: as, *ces hommes*, these men; *ces femmes*, these women.

The demonstrative pronouns are repeated before every substantive, and agree with each in gender and number. Example :

This garden, this tree, this house, and all this furniture, are not worth three hundred guineas;

Ce jardin, cet arbre, cette maison, et tous ces meubles, ne valent pas trois cents guinées.

To determine more precisely the subject we are speaking of, we add often in French the particle *ci* or *là* to the substantive preceded by *ce*, *cet*, *cette*, or *ces*. Examples :

That man is a rogue ; *cet homme-là est un coquin.*

These pens are good for nothing ; *ces plumes-ci ne valent rien.*

RULE 73.—*ceci, cela, this, that.*

The demonstrative pronouns (*this* and *that*) are expressed in French by *ceci* and *cela*, when they are used to point at some object, without specifying what it is ; when *ceci* and *cela* meet in the same sentence, *ceci* denotes the nearest object, and *cela* the, most distant. Examples :

This is good, that is bad ; *ceci est bon, cela est mauvais.*

You always ask, what is this for, what is that for ?

Vous demandez toujours, pourquoi ceci, pourquoi cela ?

Why did you do that without my leave ?

Pourquoi avez-vous fait cela sans ma permission ?

RULE 74.—*ce qui, or ce que ; what, or that which.*

The pronouns, *that which*, or *what*, signifying *that thing which*, are expressed in French by *ce qui* when subjects ; and *ce que*, when regimens ; of *what* and of *which* by *ce dont*, and to *what* by *ce à quoi* ; which are always singular and masculine. Examples :

What is agreeable to the taste, is often prejudicial to the health ;

Ce qui est agréable au goût, est souvent contraire à la santé.

I do not know of *what* he is accused ;

Je ne sais pas ce dont on l'accuse.

You see to *what* you engage yourself ;

Vous voyez ce à quoi vous vous engagez.

You give me *that which* you do not like ;

Vous me donnez ce que vous n'aimez point.

N. B. When *ce qui* or *ce que* begins a sentence of two parts, the word *ce* is repeated before the auxiliary *être*, if it is followed by a substantive, a pronoun, or a verb. Examples :

What I fear most is treason ;

Ce que je crains le plus, ce sont les trahisons.

*What I wish for most, is that peace may be made ;
Ce que je désire le plus, c'est qu'on fasse la paix.*

The demonstrative *ce* must not be repeated, when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective without a substantive. Example :

*What I have eaten was very good ;
Ce que j'ai mangé était excellent — (not c'était excellent).*

RULE 75.—*celui-ci, celui-là* ; this or that.

When the demonstrative pronouns have reference to several substantives, *this* and *these* refer to the objects nearest or last spoken of ; and are expressed, *this* by *celui-ci*, or *celle-ci* ; *these* by *ceux-ci*, or *celles-ci* ; *that* and *those* have reference to the most distant objects, and are expressed, *that* by *celui-là*, or *celle-là* ; *those*, by *ceux-là*, or *celles-là* ; according to the gender and number of the substantive to which they have reference. Examples :

The body perishes, the soul is immortal : however, we neglect *this*, and sacrifice every thing for *that* ;

Le corps périt, l'âme est immortelle : cependant nous négligeons celle-ci, et nous sacrifions tout pour celui-là.

Here are good books : which do you like best, *these* or *those* ?

Voici de bons livres : lesquels aimez-vous le mieux, de ceux-ci, ou de ceux-là ?

N.B. *The former* is also expressed by *celui-là*, or *celle-là* ; and *the latter* by *celui-ci*, or *celle-ci*.

RULE 76.—*celui de, or celle-de, &c.* that of ; *celui qui, that which.*

When the demonstrative pronouns are followed immediately by the preposition *of*, they are expressed, *that of*, by *celui de, or celle de*, and *those of*, by *ceux de, or celles de*. Examples :

He spends all his fortune, and *that of* his wife ;
Il dépense tout son bien, et celui de sa femme.
Take these horses, or *those of* my son ;
Prenez ces chevaux, ou ceux de mon fils.

When the demonstrative pronouns are followed by *which*, expressed or understood, they are expressed, *that* by *celui*, or *celle*, *those* by *ceux* or *celles*, and *which* by the relative pronoun *que*. Examples :

This house is larger than *that which* I have sold ;
Cette maison est plus grande que celle que j'ai vendue.
 These books are better than *those* you have lent me ;
Ces livres valent mieux que ceux que vous m'avez prêtés.

When the word *which* is used in answer to a question, it is also expressed by *celui*, or *celle que*, if the question is asked by the word *which*. Example :

Which of these oranges will you have ? Which you please.
Laquelle de ces oranges voulez-vous ? Celle qu'il vous plaira.

Observe. The relative pronoun *que* is changed into *dont*, à *qui* or *auquel*, according to the preposition governed by the following verb.

After a preposition, *qui* or *que* are only used when speaking of persons. See the next Chapter.

RULE 77.—he who *expressed in French* by *celui qui*.

When the personal pronouns (*he, she, they, or those*) are the antecedent of *who, that, or which*, they are not expressed by *il* or *elle*, as before ; but *he who* is rendered by *celui qui*, *she who* by *celle qui*, *they who* by *ceux qui*, or *celles qui*, when subjects of the verb, and by *celui que*, *celle que*, *ceux* or *celles que*, when regimens. Examples :

He who cannot keep a secret, is incapable of governing ;
Celui qui ne saurait garder un secret, est incapable de gouverner.
They whom you protect, betray you with indignity ;
Ceux que vous protégez, vous trahissent indignement.

RULE 78.—*celui qui*, he who, *must be joined in French.*

When in an English sentence the pronouns, *he, she, or they*, are separated from the relative pronouns, *who* or *which*, they must be joined in French, and the second part of the sentence is expressed the first. Examples :

He is a bad citizen who rebels against his country ;
Celui qui se révolte contre sa patrie est un mauvais citoyen.
Those are mistaken who believe that kings are happy ;
Ceux qui croient que les rois sont heureux, se trompent.

These pronouns can, however, be separated as in English, by adding the particle *là* to *celui* or *celle*. Examples :

He is a bad citizen who rebels against his country ;
Celui-là est un mauvais citoyen qui se révolte contre sa patrie.

*They are mistaken who think that kings are happy ;
Ceux-là se trompent qui croient que les rois sont heureux.*

EXERCISE ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 72.—*Ce, cette, ces.*

This picture is fine. That man is learned. These oranges are not ripe. This cake is for you ; that bird is mine ; these houses are new.
mûr gâteau oiseau 71 neuf
If you do not alter your conduct, and (make amends for) your former injustice, this widow whom you have oppressed, this poor woman whom you have forsaken, these unfortunate beings whom you have despised, will accuse you (in the) day of judgment.
*changer de * conduite et si 59 ne réparer*
premier —f veuve opprimée
That woman is whimsical, she changes her resolution every day.
*capricieux —ger de * ré— tous les jours*

RULE 73.—*ceci, cela.*

Do not do that, I will do it myself. If you refuse me that, you will repent it. This is good, that is bad ; this is for me, and that for you. Why did you do that ? You should not speak of that before (any body). That is good to eat. You are very curious ; you always ask why this, and why that.
** H 57 moi-même —ser 57*
se repentir en 58
pourquoi avez fait devoir A
devant personne à manger bien
curieux demander

RULE 74.—*ce qui, ce que.*

1. Consider, O man ! *what* the law of God commands, and *what* society requires of you.—2. *What* I ask from you, is a reciprocal friendship, as it existed between your father and mine.—1. Tragedy excites terror : it is *that which* renders it tragical : the epic poem excites admiration ; it is *that which* renders it heroic.
—dérer H loi —der
société demander 46 demander 46 réciproque
31 amitié telle qu'elle exister entre 69
tragédie 9 —ter 9 —reur c'est 50 —que
épique 31 poème m 9 — 50
héroïque

1. Education is to the mind *what* cleanliness is to the body. — 2.
9 — esprit 9 propreté corps

What is treason. — 1. I know what you speak
l'us trahison savoir (ir)

What has not taken place. — 2. What you
voudre A avoir lieu

What shines outwardly, is
vert briller au-dehors

What is substantial inwardly. — 1. What costs little,
solide au-dedans coûter peu

What is of no use.

n'est d'aucun usage

RULE 75.—*celui-ci, celui-là, &c.*

The state of the brute is very different from that of man: *that* is
état — f très-différent 76 4

Armed and armed by nature; *this* is not; *that* soon attains
vêtu armé 4 — ne l'est pas bientôt arriver

its vigour and perfection, *this* continues long in infancy. Which
à 63 vigueur — rester longtemps l'enfance laquelle

of these houses do you advise me to buy? *This* will cost me six
** conseiller 57 d'acheter coûter 57*

hundred pounds, and *that* seven. I do not like either of them;
livre sterling aimer ni l'une ni l'autre

if, however, you take one, I would advise you to
cependant en prendre (ir) A une conseiller 57 d'

buy *this* rather than *that*.

plutôt

RULE 76.—*celui, celle, that.*

The system of Copernicus, which asserts that the earth turns
système Copernic 14 assurer que terre tourner

round the sun, is more probable than *that* of Ptolemy, who is of
autour du soleil — Ptolomée

a contrary opinion. The sight of the mind is more extensive than
contraire 31 — vue f esprit étendu

that of the body. The goods of fortune are not to be compared
*corps bien 4 — f * * comparables*

with *those* of the mind. The disorders of the mind are more
à maladie

dangerous than *those* of the body. The term of life is short; *that*
—reux temps 4 vie court

of beauty still more so.

4 encore davantage 54.

Eternal happiness is infinitely superior to *that* which a man
31 éternel bonheur — ment au-dessus de

can possess in this world. The injuries which we receive from
pouvoir posséder monde in outrage

a man in a passion, are not so great as *those* which the same man
*en * colère si 37*

commits in cool blood.

commettre (ir) de sang froid

288 EXERCISE UPON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

All men hate *those* who are unmindful of a benefit. We
hair ne sont pas reconnaissant bienfait
 ought to encourage *those* who apply themselves to arts and
*devoir A * —rager s'appliquer 61 4—*
 sciences. This play will do you more honour than all *those* you
— comédie 57 plus 18 honneur
 have composed before.
faites auparavant

RULE 77.—*celui qui*, he who.

He who cannot keep a secret is incapable of governing. Nobody
ne pouvoir garder — — gouverner personne
 is more speedily oppressed, than *he who* fears nothing;
ne promptement opprimer craindre
 because security is often the beginning of calamity. *They who*
4 sécurité commencement malheurs pl
 are not satisfied with what they possess at present, will probably
content de 74 posséder à présent
 never be pleased with what they may possess in future. *He who*
le 54 de 74 pouvoir n à l'avenir
 never was acquainted with adversity, says Seneca, has seen the world
*a éprouvé * 9 —té Sénèque n'a vu*
 but on one side, and is ignorant of half the scenes of nature.
*que d' côté * il ignore * la moitié des — 4*
They who overcome their passions, conquer their greatest enemies.
surmonter — terrasser ennemi

RULE 78.—*celui* and *qui* must be joined.

They do not know the human heart, *who* trust to the vain
77 connaître humain 31 cœur se fier
 promises of men. *They* do not always succeed *who* take
promesse réussir prendre (ir)
 their measures best. *He* is happy *who* wants nothing. *They*
mesure le mieux heureux ne manque de rien
 are unworthy the glory of heaven, *who* give themselves up to the
*indigne de gloire ciel se livrer 61 **
 pleasures of this world. *They* are happy *who* content themselves 16
plaisir monde m se contenter
 with little.
de peu

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

We cannot sufficiently esteem those judges, who always
ne pouvoir (ir) assez estimer juge toujours
 directed by equity, never do any thing through favour or
*dirigés 4 équité fuir * rien par faveur 21*

solicitations. We naturally expect from others what we have
solli— —rellement attendre autres 74

done to them before. They who oppress the poor to increase

faire 47 auparavant 77 opprimer pauvre pl pour augmenter

their riches, shall be punished by God.

richesse pl punis de

A philosopher shuns both riches and dignities: he fears these,

—phe éviter * richesse 9 10 —té craindre 75

and despises the former. They (are mistaken) who think that

mépriser celles-là 78 se tromper croire (ir)

kings are the happiest of all men. Cyrus began the Persian

roi 9 commencer c de Perse 17

monarchy, and Ninus that of Assyria. Alexander, though ambitious,

—chie — 76 —rie —dre quoique —tieux

was sensible that he who coveted nothing was more happy than

a persuadé 77 désirer a b

he who aimed at the possession of the whole world.

77 aspirer a à — entier 31 monde m

Cæsar said, after the battle of Pharsalia, he is a great

César dire (ir) c bataille —sale 78

general, who can expose himself like a private soldier,

pouvoir (ir) —ser se 61 comme simple soldat

during the battle; but he is still greater who can rejoice like a

pendant mais 78 encore se réjouir comme

private man after the victory. Wisdom (is content) with what

simple particulier après victoire le sage se contenter de 74

is present, and expects patiently what is to come. Those who

pré— attendre patiemment 74 à venir 77

speak without reflection, are liable to say many (foolish things).

sans réflexion exposé à bien 18 sottise f

Virtue is nothing else but an entire conformity to the eternal

9 n'est autre chose qu' entier 31 —té éternel

rule of things; vice is the infringement of that rule: this

31 règle f 4 9—m infraction 75

causes the misery of men, that makes them happy; let us,

faire (ir) malheur 4 75 rendre 57

therefore, love that, and detest this. He is truly a good

donc n 75 avoir n en horreur 78 vraiment * homme

man, who has a natural abhorrence of vice and love for virtue.

de bien 31 —rel horreur 4 — l'amour de 4

CHAP. VII.

OF RELATIVE PRONOUNS.*

RULE 79.—*qui, que, who, that, or which.*

THE relative pronouns, *who, that, or which*, are expressed by *qui*, for all sorts of objects, when they are the subject; and by *que* when they are the regimen. Examples :

The man *who* speaks ;
L'homme qui parle.

The woman *whom* I have seen ;
La femme que j'ai vue.

The book *which* is on the table ;
Le livre qui est sur la table.

The lesson *which* I have learnt ;
La leçon que j'ai apprise.

N. B. The word to which the relative pronouns have reference is called the *antecedent*.

RULE 80.—*dont or de qui, of whom, whose, or of which.*

The relative pronouns, *whose, of whom, or of which*, are usually expressed by *dont*, for all sorts of objects, when they follow immediately their antecedent. Examples :

I have seen the person *of whom* you speak ;
J'ai vu la personne dont vous parlez.
It is an illness, the cause of *which* is unknown ;
C'est une maladie dont on ne connaît pas la cause.

But if the relative pronouns be separated from their antecedent by another substantive, then *whose*, or *of whom*, are expressed by *de qui*, and *of which* by *duquel, de laquelle, desquels, or desquelles*, according to the gender and number of the substantive to which they have reference. Examples :

He is a man to *whose* discretion I dare not trust ;
C'est une personne à la discrétion de qui je n'oserais me fier.
It is an illness to the progress *of which* one cannot apply too quick remedies ;
C'est une maladie aux progrès de laquelle on ne peut apporter de trop prompts remèdes — not *aux progrès de qui* or *dont*.

* See the definition of relative pronouns, p. 76.

N. B. The relative pronoun *from whom*, which answers to the Latin ablative, is always expressed by *de qui*, and never by *dont*. Thus we say :

The man *from whom* I received a letter yesterday is sick ;
L'homme de qui (not dont) j'ai reçu hier une lettre est malade.

RULE 81.—*qui* or *lequel*, *laquelle* ; whom, which.

When the relative pronouns are after any preposition, they are usually expressed by *qui*, speaking of persons ; and always by *lequel* or *laquelle*, singular, *lesquels* or *lesquelles*, plural, speaking of animals and things. Examples :

Your father is a man *to whom* I am much obliged ;
Votre père est un homme à qui j'ai beaucoup d'obligation.
 The glory *to which* heroes sacrifice, is a false glory ;
La gloire à laquelle les héros sacrifient est une fausse gloire.
 It is a reason *to which* there is no reply ;
C'est une raison à laquelle il n'y a point de réplique.

RULE 82.—*When où can be used for lequel.*

When the relative pronouns are after a preposition, and refer to an inanimate object, they are almost indifferently expressed by *où* or by *lequel*, *laquelle*, &c., if the verb denotes some motion or rest, at least figuratively. Examples :

Avoid the faults *into which* I have fallen ;
Évitez les fautes où (or dans lesquelles) je suis tombé.
 I know the principle *from which* all your system is derived ;
Je connais le principe d'où (or duquel) découle tout votre système.

Note.—*Où* and *d'où* are also adverbs of place, and stand for the words *where* or *whence*. Examples :

Where are you going ? *Où* allez-vous ?
 From *whence* do you come ? *D'où* venez-vous ?
Where have you passed ? *Par où* avez-vous passé ?

RULE 83.—*The Relative Pronouns are never omitted in French.*

The relative pronouns, *who*, *whom*, *that*, and *which* and also the conjunction *that*, are often understood in English ; but *qui* and *que*, which answer to them, are never understood in French. Examples :

I think you are in the wrong ; *Je crois que vous avez tort.*
 The man I was speaking to ; *L'homme à qui je parlais.*
 The lesson I have learnt ; *La leçon que j'ai apprise.*
 The book you read is mine ; *Le livre que vous lisez est à moi.*

RULE 84.—*Place and Concord of the Relative Pronouns.*

The relative pronouns are placed in French immediately after the nouns or pronouns to which they have reference ; and agree with them in gender and number. Examples :

He rejected an advice, the utility of which he knew ;
Il rejeta un avis dont il connaissait l'utilité.
 The books for which I have subscribed are very good ;
Les livres pour lesquels j'ai souscrit sont très-bons.

EXERCISE UPON THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 79.—*qui, que, who, &c.*

Cicero was one of those *who* were sacrificed to the vengeance of the
Cicéron c sacrifier —
 triumvirs. The woman *whom* God formed with one of Adam's ribs
— former c d' une 17 côte
 was the cause of his sin. The books *which* you read are good, but
c — péché livre m lire (ir)
 difficult to (be understood). Synonymous terms are words *which*
difficile à comprendre 9 — me 31 terme mot 7
 signify the same thing. Marcus Aurelius used to say, that he
— fier même chose f Marc-Aurèle avoir n coutume de dire
 would not part with what he had learned for all the gold (in
*vouloir (ir) n donner * 74 n apprendre (ir) or*
 the) world ; and that he had more glory from what he had read or
du monde retirer n plus 18 de 74 n lire (ir)
 written, than from all the kingdoms he had conquered. Titus
écrire que 83 n conquérir (ir)
 spent eighty millions in the public games *which* he once gave
dépenser c — 31 jeux une fois donner c
 to the Roman people.
 31

RULE 80.—*dont, de qui, duquel.*

All the advantages *which* we enjoy on earth come from God. —
avantage dont jouir sur 4 terre venir
 1. The same pride *which* makes us blame the faults from *which* we
orgueil 79 faire 48 blâmer faute f
 think ourselves free, induces us to condemn the good qualities
croire (ir) nous 48 exempt porter 48 à condamner —té
which we have not. — 2. Many affect to contemn those honours
79 plusieurs affecter de mépriser les honneur
 (with the) desire of *which* they are inflamed. — 1. The young man
du désir enflammé homme

of *whom* I have spoken to you, deserves (to be) encouraged. — 2.
parler 47 *mériter d'être encourager*
 Alexander, to *whose* courage they give (so many) praises, died
Alexandre — donner tant 18 louange f mourir c
 at thirty-three years of age. — 1. The clemency of *which* men make
à l'âge de trente-trois ans clémence faire
 a virtue is often practised (out of) vanity. — 2. The daughter of
pratiqué par fille
 Minos gave a thread to Theseus, by means of *which* he (went out)
— donner c fil Thésée au moyen sortir c
 of the labyrinth.
 —the m

RULE 81.—*qui*, or *lequel*, &c.

The glory to *which* heroes sacrifice, is often a false glory. It is
4 héros —fier fausse il
 evident that there is a God, by *whom* all things are governed. Idle-
*é— il y a tout * est gouverner pa-*
 ness is a vice to *which* young people are much inclined. He who
resse 9 —m jeunes gens très-enclin 77
 gets riches knows not for *whom* he gets them, nor for *whose* sake
*amasser 7 savoir (ir) 48 qui **
 he is concerned. Ulysses (carried away) the palladium in *which*
** s'intéresse emporter c — dans*
 the Trojans had particular confidence; it was a statue of
Troyens a une —lier 31 confiance ce a —f
 Minerva, on *which* depended all the success of the war. Lying is
Minerve de dépendre a succès guerre mensonge m
 a vice for *which* we cannot have (too much) horror. The canal
—m ne pouvoir (ir) trop 18 horreur —
 of Languedoc runs across a river over *which* a bridge is built in
du — passer sur rivière sur pont en
 the form of an aqueduct, under *which* the river continues its course.
** forme * aqueduc sous continuer cours*

RULE 82.—*où* or *lequel*, &c.

Many (learned people) do not adopt the principles from *which*
bien des savant —er —pes m
 the system of Descartes is derived. If I had known before the
système — dériver a connaître auparavant
 deplorable condition to *which* you are reduced, I would certainly
dé— 31 état réduire certainement
 have sent you some money. The allies of Rome, ashamed to
envoyer 57 7 argent alliés — honteux de
 acknowledge as their head a city from *which* liberty seemed
reconnaître pour mattresse ville f —té paraître a
 banished, shook off a yoke which they bore with pain.
*bannis secouer c * joug porter a peine*

RULE 83.—*Relative Pronouns never suppressed.*

The exercise you have given me to write, is too long and too
thème donner 57 à écrire trop —
 difficult. The company I keep is very honest. The wine we
difficile —gnie fréquenter honnête vin
 drank yesterday was very good. The man I have spoken to, is
boire (ir) c hier n parler vient
 just come from France. The reasons I rely upon are solid. We
d'arriver — raison se fonder solide il
 must not keep the promises which are hurtful to those to whom
faut garder promesse 79 nuisible ceux
 they were made. I think you are in the right. I believe they
*on les a faites penser avoir * * raison*
 will make peace this year. I will never forget the favour you have
faire paix année oublier grâce
 done me.
faite 57

RULE 84.—*Place of these Pronouns.*

Remember, O man, that thy station on earth is appointed by
se ressouvenir n état 4 terre fixé
 the wisdom of the Eternal, who knows thy heart, who sees the
sagesse Eternel 78 connaître cœur voir (ir)
 vanity of thy wishes, and who often rejects thy prayer. The world
—té désir souvent rejeter prière monde m
 is a stage upon which men, always masked, play upon one
théâtre m 81 toujours masqué se jouer les uns des
 another. Let our appetites obey reason, to which they are sub-
autres que appétit obéir n à la raison 81 sou-
 jected by the law of nature. Grandeur of air, accompanied with
mettre (ir) loi 9 — un air de grandeur accompagné de
 freedom of manners, are qualifications which attract
*manière f pl aisé * est une qualité gagner*
 general approbation.
 31 9 —

 RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Choose a man whom you esteem, who is able and willing
Choisir n 79 estimer r avoir r le pouvoir la volonté
 to serve you in need. The thing of which a miser thinks the least,
de servir 57 au besoin à 81 avoir penser moins
 is to relieve the poor. The christian yoke is safer than full
c'est à soulager les pauvres joug du christianisme sûr une
 liberty; it is a yoke that makes the practice of virtue pleasant,
—té 79 rendre pratique f 4 agréable
 that secures us from the violence of passions, and that prevents us
garantir 57 — 4 — empêcher 57

from ruining ourselves. We should always remember the cares of
perdre nous 57 devoir A nous ressouvenir des soins
 those by whom we have been brought up.
*ceux 81 élevé **

Death is an evil for which there is no remedy. Philip said
Mort mal à 81 il n'y a point 18 remède Philippe dire (ir) c
 to his son Alexander, on giving him Aristotle for his preceptor,
*—dre en donner lui 57 —te * précepteur*

Learn, under so good a master, to avoid the faults into which I
*apprendre H un si * maître à éviter faute f 8 je*
 have fallen. Prudence and moderation gain us the esteem of those
suis tomber — 9 modé— gagner 57 estime
 with whom we converse. Men do not reflect enough on all the
81 —ser réfléchir assez sur

dangers to which they are exposed. Let us consider the effects of
— 81 —ser —dérer H effet
 prosperity and adversity, and then we shall easily perceive
prospérité 9 21 —té alors aisément apercevoir
 which is the most desirable. Let us endeavour to render ourselves
laquelle dé— tâcher H de rendre nous 57

able to fulfil the duties of the situation to which God destines
capables de remplir devoir état 81 —ner
 us. Choose well the friend to whom you intend to give your
*57 choisir H 81 vouloir (ir) **
 confidence. After the existence of God (there is nothing) of which I
confiance après — il n'y a rien 80

doubt less than of the immortality of the soul. Ulysses crossing
douter moins —té âme — traverser
 the sea, commanded his soldiers to stop their ears with wax, and
mer —der c à soldat de boucher 66 oreilles 7 cire f
 caused himself to (be tied) to the mast of the ship to keep
*faire (ir) c se 57 * attacher mât vaisseau pour défendre*
 himself from the charms of the Sirens.
se 57 charmes Sirènes

Ignorance is a dishonour to human kind, and in a manner
— déshonneur pour 4 genre humain en quelque manière
 reduces men below the beasts, whose ignorance is the
59 réduire au dessous de 80
 consequence of their nature, and not the effect of neglect or
consé— — effet 4 négligence 10
 indifference.
indifférence

CHAP. VIII.

OF INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

THE interrogative pronouns are, in English, these three: *who*, *which*, and *what*: they are expressed in French as follows:

RULE 85.—*qui*? or *qui est-ce qui*? *who*?

The interrogative pronouns, *who*, *whose*, *to whom*, &c., which are said of persons only, are expressed in French by *qui*, or *qui est-ce qui*, when they are the subject of a verb; they are expressed by *qui* in all other cases, and never by *que* or *dont*, as the relative pronouns mentioned before. Examples:

<i>Who</i> is there?	<i>Qui est là ?</i> or <i>qui est-ce qui est là ?</i>
<i>Of whom</i> do you speak?	<i>De qui parlez-vous ?</i> — not <i>dont</i> .
<i>With whom</i> do you live?	<i>Avec qui demeurez-vous ?</i>
<i>To whom</i> do you write?	<i>A qui écrivez-vous ?</i>
<i>Whom</i> have you seen?	<i>Qui avez-vous vu ?</i>

RULE 86.—*lequel*, *laquelle*, &c. *which*.

When the word *which* is interrogatively used, it is always expressed by *lequel* or *laquelle* for the singular, and by *lesquels* or *lesquelles* for the plural. Examples:

<i>Which</i> of my sisters will you marry?
<i>Laquelle des mes sœurs voulez-vous épouser ?</i>
<i>Which</i> of these horses do you advise me to buy?
<i>Lequel de ces chevaux me conseillez-vous d'acheter ?</i>
<i>Which</i> of your brothers learns French and Latin?
<i>Lequel de vos frères apprend le Français et le Latin ?</i>

RULE 87.—*quel*, *quelle*? *what*?

When the pronoun *what* is interrogatively used, it is expressed in French by *quel*, m., or *quelle*, f., before a substantive singular, and by *quels*, m., or *quelles*, f., before a substantive plural. Examples:

<i>What</i> crime has this man committed to punish him so?
<i>Quel crime cet homme a-t-il commis pour le punir ainsi ?</i>

To what passion is he inclined? *Quelle passion est-il enclin ?*
What game shall we play at? *À quel jeu jouerons-nous ?*

RULE 88.—what, *expressed by* que, or qu'est-ce que.

When the interrogative pronoun *what* signifies *what thing*, it is expressed in French by *que* or by *qu'est-ce qui* for the subject, and by *que* or *qu'est-ce que* for the regimen. Examples:

What has happened to you?

Que vous est-il arrivé ? or, qu'est-ce qui vous est arrivé ?

What do you blame in that work?

Que blâmez-vous ? or, qu'est-ce que vous blâmez dans cet ouvrage ?

RULE 89.—*what is expressed by quoniam after a Preposition.*

When the pronoun *what* is after a preposition, and signifies *what thing*, it is always expressed by *quoi*, whether the sentence be interrogative or not. Examples:

In *what* am I guilty?

En quoi suis-je coupable ?

I know of *what* he complains; *Je sais de quoi il se plaint.*

Of what do you accuse me? *De quoi m'accusez-vous?*

It is *what* you are mistaken in ; *C'est en quoi vous vous trompez*

EXERCISE UPON THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

RULE 85.—*qui?* who?

Who doubts that a young man who loves virtue and science,
douter *jeune* 9

enjoys more solid happiness, than he who spends his life in
ne jouir d'un solide & bonheur 77 passer dans
dissipation and pleasure? *Who goes there? to whom do you speak?*

— *plaisir* *là* *parler*
whom can one trust to (now-a-days)? For whom does a
pouvoir (ir) *se fier* *aujourd'hui*

miser get riches? *whom* shall I apply to? *who* is the man who
avare amasser ? *s'adresser*

can be certain of constant happiness? *whom* shall I believe hence-
pouvoir ? — *Si bonheur* *croire (ir) désor-*

forth?
mais

RULE 86.—*lequel, laquelle*, which ?

Of all these pictures, *which* should you like best, and *which*
tableaux *aimer le mieux*

do you think (is worth) most money? I have heard that one
croire (ir) valoir le plus 18 argent apprendre (ir)
 of your brothers is dead; pray tell me which? Which
mort je vous prie dire (ir) n 56
 of your sisters learns geography? Which of the maritime powers
apprendre 9 géographie — 31 puissance
 has the best navy? England. Which of these horses will
meilleur marine f cheval vouloir (ir) A
 you buy? You have read Telemachus and Jerusalem Delivered;
lire (ir) — que la — délivrée
 which of these two poems do you prefer?
poèmes préférer

RULE 87.—*quel?* what?

What are your reasons? What are her motives? What passion is
raison motif passion
 he inclined to? What dreadful news! What crime has this man
enclin fâcheux nouvelle crime m
 committed (that he should be punished) so severely? What is the
commettre (ir) pour le punir si sévèrement
 opinion of your father on that affair? What news have you learnt
— sur affaire f nouvelle pl apprises
 in town to-day? What misfortune can we fear after we have lost
en malheur pouvoir après que perdre
 (every thing?)
tout

RULE 88.—*que?* what?

What are men before God? What avail riches without health?
devant servir richesse sans la santé
 What does he want? What have you done with your books? What
demande faire de
 were you doing in the garden? What did the master tell you?
jardin qu'est-ce que maître dire n 57
 What do you say of the French revolution?
31 ré—

RULE 89.—*quoi?* what?

If you be idle when young, you will not know what to ap-
A paresseux vous êtes jeune savoir (ir) ap-
 ply yourself to in your (old age). What are you speaking of?
pliquer vous 57 vieillesse parler A
 On what will you interrogate him? In what am I guilty? Of
sur vouloir (ir) A — ger 57 coupable
 what do you accuse me? In what pray have I neglected to fulfil
accuser 57 je vous prie négliger de remplir
 my duty? What are they complaining of? What do you aim at?
*devoir * se plaindre A viser*
 What does your brother apply himself to?
s'appliquer

CHAP. IX.

ON THE DIFFERENT SORTS OF INTERROGATIONS.

RULE 90.—*Interrogations made with où, d'où, comment, &c.*

BESIDES the interrogative pronouns of which we have treated before, a question is often asked with the following adverbs : *combien*, how much, how many; *comment*, how; *pourquoi*, what for; *quand*, when; *où*, where; *d'où*, from whence; *par où*, through what place. Examples :

How many horses have you got ?
Combien avez-vous de chevaux ?
How does your father do to-day ?
Comment se porte Monsieur votre père aujourd'hui ?
Why do you not answer ? Pourquoi ne répondez-vous pas ?
When will you come to see us ? Quand viendrez-vous nous voir ?
Where are you going ? Où allez-vous ?
From whence do you come ? D'où venez-vous ?

RULE 91.—*The Pronouns je, tu, il, &c. go after the Verb in an Interrogation.*

When the following pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles, ce, or on*, are the subject of a verb interrogatively used, they are placed immediately after it, or its auxiliary. Examples :

<i>Are you sick ?</i>	<i>Have you been sick to-day ?</i>
<i>Etes-vous malade ?</i>	<i>Avez-vous été malade aujourd'hui ?</i>
<i>Do you learn French ?</i>	<i>Have you learnt Italian ?</i>
<i>Apprenez-vous le Français ?</i>	<i>Avez-vous appris l'Italien ?</i>
<i>Is there any news ?</i>	<i>Have you heard any news ?</i>
<i>Dit-on des nouvelles ?</i>	<i>Vous a-t-on dit des nouvelles ?</i>

In an interrogative sentence we put always a hyphen (-) between the verb and the pronoun : as *parlez-vous ? viendront-ils ?* If the verb ends with a vowel, and the pronoun begins with another, we put between them a (-t-) with two hyphens, in order to avoid the hiatus which would result from the meeting of two vowels. Examples :

<i>Does he speak ?</i>	<i>Will he come ?</i>	<i>Does she sing well ?</i>
<i>Parle-t-il ?</i>	<i>Viendra-t-il ?</i>	<i>Chante-t-elle bien ?</i>

A verb which ends in *e* mute in the first person singular, takes an acute accent when it is interrogatively used. Examples :

I speak,	Do I speak ?	I walk,	Do I walk ?
<i>Je parle.</i>	<i>Parlé-je ?</i>	<i>Je me promène.</i>	<i>Me promené-je ?</i>

N.B. When a verb interrogatively used has but one syllable in the first person singular of the present of the indicative mood, we ask the question with *est-ce-que*. Thus :

Do I lose ?	<i>Est-ce-que je perds ?</i> — not <i>perds-je ?</i>
Do I sleep ?	<i>Est-ce-que je dors ?</i> — not <i>dors-je ?</i>

RULE 92.—*In an Interrogation the Substantive goes before the Verb.*

1. When a substantive, or any of the following pronouns, *ceci*, *cela*, *aucun*, *quelqu'un*, *personne*, or *rien*, is the subject of a verb interrogatively used, it begins the sentence in French, and the verb is always followed by *il* or *elle*, *ils* or *elles*, as if there was no subject before. Examples :

Is the dinner ready ?	<i>Le dîner est-il prêt ?</i>
Is that good to eat ?	<i>Cela est-il bon à manger ?</i>
Did any body ask for me ?	<i>Quelqu'un m'a-t-il demandé ?</i>
Is the company come ?	<i>La compagnie est-elle arrivée ?</i>

As if it was: the dinner is *it* ready? that is *it* good to eat? and so on for all others.

2. However, when the sentence begins by an interrogative expression, as *who*, *qui*, *what*, *que* or *quoi*, *how much*, *combien*, *where*, *où*, *when*, *quand*, &c., the pronouns *il*, *elle*, *ils*, *elles*, may be omitted, and the substantive should be placed after the verb, and even after the participle in the compound tenses. Examples :

<i>Who</i> is that man ?	<i>Qui est cet homme ?</i>
<i>What</i> does your son do ?	<i>Que fait votre fils ?</i>
<i>Where</i> is your uncle gone ?	<i>Où est allé votre oncle ?</i>

RULE 93.—*est-ce là*, is that? *n'est-ce pas là*, is not that?

The English put the demonstrative pronouns, *this* or *that*, for the singular, and *these* or *those* for the plural, before the possessive pronouns *my*, *his*, *your*, *their*, &c., when they ask to whom belongs such or such a thing.

Interrogations of this sort are expressed in French by *est-ce là*, or *sont-ce là*, if the sentence is affirmative; and by *n'est-ce pas là*, or *ne sont-ce pas là*, if the sentence is negative. Examples:

Is <i>that</i> your house?	<i>Est-ce là votre maison?</i>
Are <i>these</i> your gardens?	<i>Sont-ce là vos jardins?</i>
Is not <i>that</i> your house?	<i>N'est-ce pas là votre maison?</i>
Are not <i>these</i> your gardens?	<i>Ne sont-ce pas là vos jardins?</i>

All sentences of this kind are expressed in the same manner.

RULE 94. — *Interrogations rendered by est-ce que, or n'est-ce pas.*

The English often ask a question less to be informed if such a thing is or is not, than to show their surprise, that it is so. Interrogations of this sort are expressed in French by *est-ce que*. Examples:

It does not rain, does it?	<i>Est-ce qu'il pleut?</i>
Your brother is not dead, is he?	<i>Est-ce que votre frère est mort?</i>

If the question is negative, the first part of the sentence having positively affirmed that the thing in question is such or such, it is expressed in French by *n'est-ce pas que*, at the beginning of a sentence, or by *n'est-ce pas*, at the end. Example:

It is good weather, is it not?	
<i>N'est-ce pas qu'il fait beau temps?</i> or <i>il fait beau temps, n'est-ce pas?</i>	
We have seen the king, have we not?	
<i>N'est-ce pas que nous avons vu le Roi?</i> or <i>nous avons vu le Roi, n'est-ce pas?</i>	

EXERCISE UPON THE INTERROGATIONS.

RULE 90.—*où, d'où, comment, &c.*

How (comes it to pass) that scarcely (any body) lives content
arrive-t-il *presque* *personne* *n'est* —
 with his condition? (*How long*) have you lived in France? *How*
de — *combien de temps* *demeurer*

can the members of the same body deceive and hate one another?
pouvoir membre 92 corps se tromper se hair les uns les autres?
 why do you do that? where have you been? how many shillings in
pourquoi faire cela? schelling à
 the pound?
livre f

RULE 91.—Pronouns after the Verb.

1. Who art thou, O man! who presumest on thy own wisdom? —
être présumer de sagesse
 1. Have you seen my father? — 2. Has he given you any money
voir donner 57 de l'argent
 for me? — 2. Will he come to-morrow to see me? Are you in good
*49 venir demain * voir 57*
 health? Are you going soon into the country? Is there (any
santé aller bientôt à campagne f, y a-t-il
 thing) greater than to (make use) of one's talents to procure the
*rien 18 40 de employer * ses — à —rer*
 public happiness?
31 bonheur

RULE 92.—Substantive before the Verb.

Was ever (any body) more faithful to his country than Regulus,
c jamais personne m fidèle pays
 who would rather expose himself to certain death than not fulfil his
aimer c mieux se 57 une 31 mort 40 ne pas remplir
 engagements? Alas! said Telemachus, I am but too certain that
— Hélas dire c Télémaque je ne suis que trop —
 my father is dead; I will go even to hell to seek his ghost:
aller (ir) même enfer pl pour chercher ombre
 did not Theseus descend thither? yet the profane Theseus wanted
Thésée —dre c y 57 cependant — vouloir n
 to insult the infernal deities, and it is piety which is my motive;
** outrager 31 — divinité c'est 4 piété motif*
 did not Hercules descend thither? I am not Hercules, but (an
— c y 57 mais
 attempt to imitate him is noble); did not Orpheus, by the
il est beau d'oser l'imiter avoir a Orphée
 recital of his misfortunes move the heart of Pluto? I am more
récit malheur touché cœur Pluton
 worthy of compassion than Orpheus, for my loss is greater. Has
digne 19 car perte f
 my sister written to her husband? Is that good to eat? Has
écrire mari cela à manger
 (any body) asked for me? Is the French master come? Is your book
*quelqu'un demander * 57 17 venir*
 lost? Is your lesson learnt?
perdre leçon apprendre (ir)

Who is that tall, pale man? What does your sister apply to?
*qui 30 31 * s'appliquer*
 How much does that coat cost to you? What was the master
** habit coûter 47*
 saying to you? At what o'clock will your brother (set off)? What
dire (ir) 8 à 87 heure f partir
 have those children done? When did your friend return?
enfant faire (ir) est revenir

RULE 93.—*est-ce là? n'est-ce pas là?*

Is that your house? Are these your gardens? Is not that my
 book? Are not these your pens? Is this your muff? Are these
manchon
 your gloves? Is not that my hat? Are not these your apples?
gant chapeau pomme*
 Is that your daughter? Are these your brothers? Are not these your
 sisters? Are these your horses? Is not that your dog? Are not
 these your gardens?

RULE 94.—*est-ce que? n'est-ce pas?*

It does not rain, does it? — 2. We have seen the king, have
pleuvoir (ir) voir (ir)
 we not, brother? — 1. It is not cold, is it? — 2. You learn
64 il fait froid apprendre (ir)
 French, do you not? — 1. Your father is not dead, is he? — 2. It is
le Français
 dinner-time, is it not? — 2. It is fine weather, is it not? — 2.
temps de dîner il fait temps
 You have received a letter from your father, have you not?
recevoir (ir) lettre

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS, &c.

When was Rome built? what were the achievements of Ro-
quand c 92 f bâtir 87 exploit
 mulus? how long did he reign? what is the history of Tarquinius
— combien de temps 21 régner c 87 histoire Tarquin
 Superbus? when, and (for what) was he expelled from Rome? what
le Superbe quand pourquoi c chasser 87
 efforts did he make (in order to) be restored? what was the number
efforts m faire c pour rétablir 87 c nombre m
 of the Roman kings, and how long did the regal authority sub-
*de Rome 31 combien de temps * royal 31 autorité 92 sub-*
 sist? what kind of government succeeded at Rome? who were
sister c 87 sorte f gouvernement succéder c

the first consuls? how did Brutus show his zeal for liberty? when
*premier — comment * 92 montrer c zèle m 4 liberté*
 were the decemvirs created? why were they deposed? what kind
déceuvre 92 créer pourquoi c déposer 87
 of government followed? when were the military tribunes cre-
suire (ir) c c —taire 31 tribun 92 créer
 ated with consular authority at Rome? who were the first plebeian
—laire 31 c plébien
 consuls? how was the first triumvirate formed? what provinces
31 c —rat 92 formé 87 — f
 were assigned to the triumvirs? what were the conquests of Julius
c —gner — 87 c conquête Jules-
 Cæsar in Great Britain? what (account have we) of Cæsar after
César dans la Bretagne f 88 rapporte-t-on 14 après
 the civil wars? when and by whom was he slain?
c tuer

How long, Catiline, wilt thou abuse our patience? How long
Jusqu'à quand Catiline abuser de —
 shall thy frantic rage baffle the efforts of justice? (To what
frénétique — f 92 se jouer des — 4 — f jusqu'où
 height) meanest thou to carry thy insolence? Seest thou not that
avoir dessein de porter — voir (ir) que
 the senators are apprised of thy conspiracy? Wast thou not last
sénateur informer —ration B hier
 night in the house of Lucca, with many other associates in guilt
au soir plusieurs complices de ton crime
 and madness? Darest thou deny this? Why art thou silent? Oh,
63 folie oser nier le garder le silence
 immortal gods! what country do we inhabit? what city do we
—tel 31 87 pays habiter 87 ville f
 belong to? what government do we live under? Hast thou not
appartenir 87 vivre (ir) être
 rendered thyself infamous by every vice that can brand a
rendre te 57 infâme tout m pl pouvoir déshonorer
 private life? What guilt has not stained thy hands? What pollu-
privé 31 87 crime m souiller 87 infamie
 tion has not defiled thy whole body? &c. — Cicero against Catiline.
souiller corps

(How many) years from the creation to the deluge? in how many
combien 18 années depuis création jusqu'au — m combien 18
 days did God create the world? who were the first man and
92 créer c monde c premier 30
 woman? who were their sons? what was their occupation? when did
27 c c —
 Enoch flourish? what became of him? who was his son? (how long)
*92 fleurir c que devint-il * qui c combien de temps*
 did he live? what was the usual length of life at that time?
vivre (ir) c B ordinaire 31 légueur 4 époque f
 by whom was the tower of Babel founded? on what design, and
c 92 tour f bâtir à dessein

when? why was the building (laid aside)? when was Abraham
quand c 92 bâtitse f abandonné c 92
 called by God? what is the history of his life?
appeler de 87

(How many) years from the vocation of Abraham to the departure
combien 18 depuis — jusqu'au départ
 of the Israelites from Egypt? whose son was Isaac? when was he
*Israélites Egypte de qui B 92 — **
 born? who was his wife? who were his sons? when did Jacob
naitre(ir) c c femme c 92 —
 live? (how many) sons had he? what is the history of Joseph?
vivre(ir) c combien 18 c 87 —
 when and upon whose invitation did Jacob and his family (go down)
*à l'invitation de qui * 92 famille aller c*
 to Egypt? when was Moses born? how was he educated? by whose
en 92 Moïse c c élevé par le secours
 assistance, and when did he bring the Israelites out of Egypt? what
de qui quand emmener c hors l' 87
 miracles attended the Israelites at their departure from Egypt and
— accompagner c sortie l'
 through the deserts? who was their high-priest? when was the law
dans déserts c grand-prêtre c 92 loi
 given to Moses? who was Moses' successor?
donnée c 17 le —seur.

What is the history of Joshua, and what are his wars? when did
87 Josué guerre
 he and the Israelites come to the possession of Canaan? when came
*45 92 entrer c en * — monter c*
 Saul to the throne? by what means, and when, did David obtain the
92 sur trône m moyen 92 David obtenir c
 kingdom? how long did he reign? who were his sons? how long
royaume combien de temps régner c c
 reigned Solomon? when did he dedicate the temple? what was his
c Sa— 92 dédier c — m 87 c
 character? what (is recorded) of Judith? what was the fate of
caractère que rapporte-t-on — c sort
 Josiah? how long did he reign? when and by whom was Jerusalem
Josias c c 92 f
 burned? what is said of Daniel? what is the history of his life?
brûler 88 dit-on 87
 how long did he live? when was Jesus born? what was his mission?
vivre(ir) c 92 naitre c 87 B —
 by whom and when was he crucified?
qui c —fier

CHAP. X.

DIFFERENT USES OF QUE.

THERE are in French five distinct uses of *que*, called (*que*) relative, (*que*) interrogative, (*que*) admirative, (*que*) conditional, and (*que*) conjunctive. Having spoken at large of the two first, in the seventh and eighth chapters, we will next treat of the remaining three.

RULE 95.—*Que of Admiration, how or how much.*

The *que* of admiration expresses wonder or surprise; it answers to the English words *how, how much, how many*. Examples:

How happy you are! *Que vous êtes heureux !*
 How wonderful are the works of God !
Que les œuvres de Dieu sont admirables !
 How I hate the impious ! *Que je hais les impies !*
 How much money you have ! *Que vous avez d'argent !*
 How many misfortunes he has experienced !
Que de malheurs il a éprouvés !

Observe, 1. That the adjective which follows *how* in English is always put after the verb in French. Example:

How unhappy I am ! *Que je suis malheureux !*

2. That if *how much*, and *how many*, are followed by a substantive, the *que* which answers to them is always followed by *de* in French. Example:

How much trouble you take for me !
Que de peine vous prenez pour moi !

N.B. *How many*, preceded by the preposition *of, to*, or any other, should be expressed by *combien de*, and not by *que*. Example:

To how many dangers have I not been exposed in France !
A combien de dangers n'ai-je pas été exposé en France !

RULE 96.—*Que conditional, whether, or if, in English.*

The conditional *que* is used in the beginning of a sentence, for the word *whether*, and in the middle to avoid

the repetition of *si*: in both cases it governs the subjunctive mood. Examples:

*Whether he does it or not, I do not care ;
Qu'il le fasse ou non, je ne m'en soucie pas.
If somebody comes and I am out, send for me ;
S'il vient quelqu'un et que je sois sorti, envoyez-moi chercher.*

RULE 97.—*Que used for several Conjunctions.*

The *que* conjunctive may be used for many conjunctions and particularly for the ten following:

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. <i>That</i> , afin que. | 6. <i>Since</i> , depuis que. |
| 2. <i>Unless</i> , à moins que. | 7. <i>Till</i> , jusqu'à ce que. |
| 3. <i>Before</i> , avant que. | 8. <i>Because</i> , parce que. |
| 4. <i>Yet</i> , cependant. | 9. <i>When</i> , quand. |
| 5. <i>For fear</i> , de peur que. | 10. <i>Why</i> , pourquoi. |

Examples :

1. Come here, *that* I may speak to you ;
Venez-ici, que je vous parle.
2. I will not go and see him, *unless* he invites me ;
Je n'irai pas le voir qu'il ne m'en prie.
3. You shall not go out *before* it is light ;
Vous ne partirez pas qu'il ne soit jour.
4. Though he should have all the gold in the world, *yet* he would not be satisfied ;
Il aurait tout l'or du monde, qu'il ne serait pas content.
5. Go out quickly, *for fear* the master should come ;
Sortez promptement de crainte que le maître ne vienne.
6. How long is it *since* your brother died ?
Combien y a-t-il que votre frère est mort ?
7. Wait till the rain is over ; *Attendez qu'il ne pleuve plus.*
8. If I did not come yesterday, it was *because* I had business ;
Si je ne vins pas hier, c'est que j'avais des affaires.
9. I was at London the day *when* he died ;
J'étais à Londres le jour qu'il mourut.
10. *Why* do you not answer when I speak to you ?
Que ne répondez-vous quand je vous parle ?

Note. The conjunction *que* is placed between two verbs, and serves to particularise the sense of the first ; this conjunction must be used in French every time the word *that* is or could be expressed in English. Examples :

I think one cannot be happy without practising virtue ;
Je pense qu'on ne peut être heureux sans pratiquer la vertu.

I maintain he is in the right ; it appears you are in the wrong ;
Je maintiens qu'il a raison ; il paraît que vous avez tort.

OBSERVATIONS.

The word *que* is also used, 1. To join the two terms of a comparison : as *je suis plus jeune que vous* ; I am younger *than* you. 2. To restrain a negative sentence, then it stands for *but* or *only* : as, *je n'ai que quinze ans* ; I am *but* fifteen years of age. 3. To express a wish, a command, an imprecation or indignation : as, *qu'il périsse l'impie* ; may the impious perish.

EXERCISE UPON QUE.

RULE 95. — *que, admirative.*

How small is the part of the world which is committed to our eyes !
petite partie monde m confiée yeux
 How late it is to begin to live well when death is (at hand) ! What
que tard de commencer à vivre mort proche
 (a piece of work is man) ! how noble is his reason, how extensive * his
l'homme est un bel ouvrage raison étendu
 faculties, and how admirable his form ! how (much trouble) you
—té — forme de peine
 take for me ! What misfortunes you have undergone !
prendre (ir) 49 de malheurs éprouvés

RULE 96.—*que, conditional.*

If I were rich, and had children, I would give them a good
B riche que G enfant 7 donner 47
 education. Whether he comes or not, I do not care.
é— venir non je ne m'en soucie pas
 If the French master come, and I am not at home, tell him,
17 maître venir A que à la maison, dire (ir) 47
 I have been obliged to (go out) on business. Whether you be
83 —ger de sortir pour affaire
 rich or poor, you should be a man of probity.
riche pauvre devoir A probité

RULE 97.—*que, conjunctive.*

Epaminondas, having been wounded at the battle of Mantinea,
14 avoir blesser bataille —nés
 would not allow the physicians to draw the arrow out of
*vouloir (ir) c permettre aux médecins de tirer flèche f **
 his wound, before he received the news of the victory. A miser
blessure ne recevoir G nouvelle victoire avare

* The verb être must be repeated before every adjective.

would have all the gold (in the) world, yet he would not be satisfied.
or du monde m content

When you have acknowledged your faults, and you have repaired

D reconnaître faute f que D réparées

them, I will forgive you. *Why* did you not tell it?

48 pardonner 57 dire (ir) B

Our companions please us less by the charms we find
compagnons plaire 47 moins charme m 83 trouver
 in their conversation, than by those they find in ours. The moment
 — *que par 76 83 au mom. nt*

we die our fate is determined for ever. How long is it
83 mourir (ir) sort déterminer toujours combien y a-t-il
since your father went into the country? You shall not (go out)

before it is light. Wait till the rain is over. Come here that I

ne F jour attendre pluie F passés venir ici

may speak to you.

parler 57

CHAP. XI.

OF INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

RULE 98. — *Use of the Particle on, one.*

ALL vague and general reports expressed in English by *they say, we say, people say, one says, it is said, it is reported,* and such like, are rendered in French by *on*, with the verb in the third person singular. Examples :

People say, it is thought, they maintain every where that it is so ;

On dit, on croit, on soutient partout que la chose est ainsi.

One is not always master of one's passions.

On n'est pas toujours maître de ses passions.

The passive voice is seldom used in French, therefore, when the passive verb is not followed by a substantive and the preposition *by*, we often turn the passive into active, putting the pronoun *on* instead of the subject used in English : thus, *it is said*, *it is reported*, &c., are expressed by *on dit*, *on rapporte*, &c. Examples :

It is believed that peace will be made this year :

On croit que la paix se fera cette année.

Have letters been received from France to-day?

A-t-on reçu des lettres de France aujourd'hui ?

A courier has been despatched to Spain:

On a envoyé un courrier en Espagne.

On must be repeated before every verb of which it is the subject. Example :

They praise, blame, threaten, punish, &c.
On loue, on blâme, on menace, on punit, &c.

Though this pronoun is generally followed by a masculine, there are circumstances which mark so precisely that we speak of a woman, that *on* is then followed by a feminine : as, *on n'est pas toujours jeune et belle. Quand on est belle on ne l'ignore pas.* It is also used with the plural *des* and a noun : as, *on n'est point des esclaves, pour endurer de si mauvais traitements.*

Observe. The learner must take care not to express *they* by *on*, except when it is employed absolutely without any reference to a substantive plural ; when *they* relates to a substantive plural, it is expressed by *ils* or *elles*.

RULE 99.— *Cases where l'on is used instead of on.*

On takes elegantly an *l'* after the words *et, si, or ou.* Examples :

If we would practise virtue, we should be happy in this world, and procure ourselves an eternal happiness ;

Si l'on pratiquait la vertu, on serait heureux sur la terre, et l'on se procurerait un bonheur éternel.

You have been, or will soon be rewarded ;

On vous a récompensé, ou l'on vous récompensera bientôt.

L'on is also used after *que*, when the next verb begins by *c*, or *q*. Examples :

We learn better what we understand, than what we do not ;

On apprend mieux ce que l'on comprend, que ce que l'on ne comprend pas.

It seems they quarrel with the servants.

Il semble que l'on querelle les domestiques.

N.B. *L'on* sounds better than *on* in the above sentences, and is always used by good authors in such cases, provided it be not followed by *le, la, les*, in which case *on* never takes an *l*. Thus we could not say, *mettez là votre lettre, et l'on la lira* ; but we must say, *et on la lira*.

RULE 100.— *Different Significations of même.*

The words *the same* are expressed in French by *le* or *la même* for the singular, and by *les mêmes* for the plural,

whether they be joined or relative to a substantive. **Examples :**

The same thing does not please every body ;

La même chose ne plaît pas à tout le monde.

Customs are not the same in every country ;

Les usages ne sont pas les mêmes dans tous les pays.

The word *même* is often used in French to give more energy to the speech ; in that case it comes after a substantive or a pronoun, and answers to the English expressions *himself, herself, itself, &c.* **Examples :**

The king himself opposed it ; Le roi même s'y opposa.

Religion itself forbids it ; La religion même le défend.

On such occasions we more generally place *lui, elle, eux, elles*, before *même* : as, *Le roi lui-même s'y opposa ; la religion elle-même le défend.*

The word *même* is sometimes an adverb, and answers then to the English words *also* or *even*. **Example :**

We must love every body, even our enemies ;

Il faut aimer tout le monde, même nos ennemis.

RULE 101.—Plusieurs, *many*, or *several*.

The words *many* and *several* are expressed by *plusieurs*, always plural, of both genders. **Examples :**

Many deceive themselves when they want to deceive others ;

Plusieurs se trompent en voulant tromper les autres.

Do not apply yourself to several things at once ;

Ne vous appliquez pas à plusieurs choses à la fois.

RULE 102.—Un autre, *pronoun and adjective*, another.

The indeterminate pronouns *other, another*, are expressed by *un autre* for the singular, and by *les autres* for the plural. These words are either pronouns or adjectives ; when pronouns, they are always masculine ; and when adjectives, they agree in gender and number with the substantive to which they have reference. **Examples :**

Another would not have forgiven you so easily as I did ;

Un autre ne vous aurait pas pardonné si facilement que moi.

Do not speak ill of others, if you would not have others speak ill of you ;

Ne parlez pas mal des autres, si vous ne voulez pas que les autres parlent mal de vous.

N. B. When the word *others* is preceded by a prepo-

sition, it is most commonly expressed in French by *autrui*.
Examples :

We must not covet *other men's* goods ;
Il ne faut point désirer le bien d'autrui.
Do not do by *others* what you would not be done by ;
Ne faites point à autrui ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fit.
People often excuse in themselves what they condemn in *others* ;
On excuse souvent en soi ce que l'on condamne en autrui.

RULE 103.—Chacun, *always singular and masculine*, every one.

The indeterminate pronouns, *every one*, *every body* are generally expressed by *chacun*, *always masculine and singular*. Examples :

God will reward *every body* according to his works ;
Dieu rendra à chacun selon ses œuvres.
Every one lives after his own way ;
Chacun vit à sa manière.

Nevertheless, if we speak to ladies, we must employ *chacune* in the feminine. Example :

Every one will read in her turn ;
Chacune lira à son tour.

The word *every* before a substantive is expressed by *chaque*, adjective singular. Examples :

Every science has its principles ;
Chaque science a ses principes.
Every country has its customs ;
Chaque pays a ses usages.

The word *each* employed with relation to a substantive plural expressed before, is always singular, and expressed by *chacun*, masc., *chacune*, fem. Examples :

Put these books *each* in its place ;
Remettez ces livres chacun à sa place.
The pictures of great painters have *each* their merit ;
Les tableaux des grands maîtres ont chacun son mérite.
Those two sentences have *each* a different sense ;
Ces deux phrases ont chacune un sens différent.

RULE 104.—Quelqu'un, *sing. and masc.*, somebody.

The indeterminate pronouns *somebody*, *any body*, are expressed by *quelqu'un*, singular and masculine. Examples :

Somebody will come to dine with us ;
Quelqu'un viendra dîner avec nous.
 Has ever *any body* doubted of the existence of God ?
Quelqu'un a-t-il jamais douté de l'existence de Dieu ?

The words *some* and *any* before a substantive are expressed by the partitive article *du, de la, des*, or by *quelque*. Examples :

Give me *some* ink, *some* paper, and *some* pens ;
Donnez-moi de l'encre, du papier, et des plumes.
 There are *some* faults in this work ;
Il y a des défauts (or quelques défauts) dans cet ouvrage.

When *some* or *any* are substantively used, they are expressed by *quelques-uns* or *quelques-unes*, always plural. Examples :

I will make use of *some* of your books ;
Je me servirai de quelques-uns de vos livres.
 Do you know *any* of these ladies ?
Connaissez-vous quelques-unes de ces dames ?

When *some* and *any* have reference to a substantive used in the preceding sentence, they are usually expressed by *en*, as we have seen before, Rule 51. Example :

I have *some* oranges, will you have *any* ?
J'ai des oranges, en voulez-vous ?

Of Tout and its various Constructions.

The word *tout* is of extensive import in the French language, being either a substantive, an adjective, a pronoun, or even an adverb, according to the following explanations.

RULE 105.—Le Tout, *substantive sing. and masc.*, the whole.

When the English words *the whole* are not placed before a noun, they are substantives, and expressed by *le tout*, always singular and masculine. Examples :

The whole is greater than a part ;
Le tout est plus grand que la partie.
 I will take *the whole* ; *Je prendrai le tout.*

The words *all* and *every thing*, followed by a verb, are also substantives, and expressed by *tout*, but without an article. Examples

All is vanity in this world ; *Tout est vanité en ce monde.*
 Fortune, dignities, honour, *every thing* vanishes when we die ;
Biens, dignités, honneurs, tout disparatt à la mort.

RULE 106.—*Tout le, tout la, adj., all or the whole.*

When the words *all* and *the whole* come before a substantive, they are adjectives, and expressed by *tout le*, or *toute la*, for the singular, and by *tous les* or *toutes les* for the plural.

I am with *all* the respect possible, sir, &c. ;
Je suis avec tout le respect possible, Monsieur, &c.
The whole fleet is at sea ; *Toute la flotte est en mer.*

Note. When *tout* stands for the word *every*, placed before a substantive, it takes an article in the plural, but not in the singular. Examples :

Every man is mortal ; *Tout homme est mortel.*
 Come and see us *every day* ; *Venez nous voir tous les jours.*

And not *tout l'homme est mortel* ; nor *venez nous voir tous jours.**

RULE 107.—*Tout ce qui, tout ce que, pronoun, all that, every thing that.*

The English words, *all that, every thing that*, and also *whatever*, signifying *all that*, are pronouns, and expressed in French by *tout ce qui*, or *tout ce que*, always singular and masculine. Examples :

All that you say is true ; *Tout ce que vous dites est vrai.*
All is not gold *that* glitters ; *Tout ce qui brille n'est pas or.*
 You have not seen *every thing that* was curious ;
Vous n'avez pas vu tout ce qu'il y avait de curieux.

RULE 108.—*Tout, variable and invariable, quite.*

When the word *tout* stands for the adverbs *quite, entirely, although*, or the first *as* of a sentence, where that word is twice used, it is always invariable before an adjective or a participle masculine, singular or plural. Example :

As learned *as* philosophers are, they are sometimes mistaken ;
Les philosophes, tout savants qu'ils sont, se trompent quelquefois.

It is also invariable before an adjective or a participle

* Except, however, *tout le monde*, for *every body*, and not *tout monde*.

feminine of both numbers, which begins with a vowel or *h* mute ; but it is variable before an adjective or a participle feminine which begins with a consonant, and agrees with it in gender and number. Examples :

Your mother is *quite* alarmed ; your sisters are *quite* cast down ;
Votre mère est tout alarmée ; vos sœurs sont tout abattues.

Those above are invariable ; the following are variable :

Your mother was *quite* surprised at that news ;

Votre mère fut toute surprise à cette nouvelle.

Your sisters, as rich and handsome as they are, do not marry :

Vos sœurs, toutes riches et toutes belles qu'elles sont, ne se marient point.

Of *Quelque*.

Quelque is used in two ways : *first*, adverbially, to signify *in what manner* and *degree* ; and it is then invariable before the adjective, which it modifies : *secondly*, when used to denote *one, some, or an uncertain number* of things, it agrees in number with the noun that expresses them.

The two following rules will explain the arrangement of those sentences in which this word occurs, where the French construction is different from the English.

RULE 109.—*Quelque*, *invariable*, however, howsoever.

When the English words, *however, howsoever, though ever so much, or so little*, come before an adjective, or a participle, they are expressed in French by *quelque* invariable.

The construction of the sentence is as follows : 1. *quelque* is put first ; 2. the adjective ; 3. *que* ; 4. the verb in the subjunctive mood ; 5. the substantive ; the rest as in English. Examples :

Though his fault be ever so great, I will forgive him ;

Quelque grande que soit sa faute, je lui pardonnerai.

However praiseworthy your conduct may be, it will be condemned ;

Quelque louable que soit votre conduite, elle sera condamnée.

RULE 110.—*Quelque*, *adj. and variable*, whatever.

The English word *whatever*, followed by a substantive, and any other verb than *to be*, is an adjective, and ex-

pressed by *quelque* before a noun singular, and by *quelques*, with an *s* before a noun plural.

The construction is: 1. *quelque*; 2. the substantive; 3. *que*; 4. the verb in the subjunctive mood; the rest as in English. Examples:

Whatever faults he has committed, I will forgive him;
Quelques fautes qu'il ait commises, je lui pardonnerai.
Whatever fortune you have, you are never satisfied;
Quelques biens que vous ayez, vous n'êtes jamais content.

RULE 111.—*Quel que, quelle que, &c. in two words.*

The English word *whatever*, followed by a substantive, and the verb *to be*, is expressed in French by *quel que*, in two words, for the masculine singular, and by *quelle que*, for the feminine: by *quels que* for the masculine plural, and by *quelles que* for the feminine.

The construction is: 1. *quel* or *quelle*; 2. *que*; 3. the verb in the subjunctive mood; 4. the substantive: the rest as in English. Examples:

Whatever his fault may be, I will forgive him;
*Quelle que soit sa faute, je lui pardonnerai.**
Whatever your talents may be, you will not succeed without application;
Quels que soient vos talents, vous ne réussirez pas sans application.

RULE 112.—*Quelque chose que, or quoi que ce soit, whatever.*

The English words *whatever, whatsoever*, meaning *all things soever*, are usually expressed by *quelque chose que*, or *quoi que*, when they are placed at the beginning of the sentence, and by *quoi que ce soit*, when they are placed after a verb. They govern the next verb in the subjunctive mood. Examples:

Whatever you do for me, I will reward you for it.
Quelque chose que (or quoi que) vous fassiez pour moi, je vous en récompenserai.

* I have repeated the same sentence in these three rules, to render more obvious the difference between *quelque* invariable, *quelques* adjective, and *quel que* in two words.

I complain of nothing *whatever* ; I have seen nothing *whatever* ;
Je ne me plains de quoi que ce soit ; je n'ai vu quoi que ce soit.
 I wish he would apply to any thing *whatever*.
Je désire qu'il s'applique à quoi que ce soit.

RULE 113.—Quiconque, qui que ce soit, *whoever*,
whosoever.

The indeterminate pronouns, *whoever*, *whosoever*, are most usually expressed by *quiconque*, when they mean *all those who*. Examples :

Whoever abandons himself to his passions renders himself unhappy ;

Quiconque s'abandonne à ses passions, se rend malheureux.

God will punish *whosoever* transgresses his laws ;

Dieu punira quiconque transgresse ses lois.

I speak to *whoever* will hear me ;

Je parle à quiconque veut m'entendre.

They are usually expressed by *qui que ce soit*, *qui* or *que*, when they mean *whatever may be the person, who*. Examples :

Of *whomsoever* you speak, avoid slander ;

De qui que ce soit que vous parliez, évitez la médisance.

Whosoever shall ask for me, say I am engaged ;

Qui que ce soit qui me demande, dites que je suis occupé.

Whomsoever you meet with, do not say what you have seen ;

Qui que ce soit que vous rencontriez, ne dites pas ce que vous avez vu.

N.B. Instead of *qui que ce soit*, we often more elegantly use *qui que*, except before *il* or *ils* ; so in the preceding examples we could say, *de qui que vous parliez* ; *qui que vous rencontriez* ; but we never say, *qui qui*, for *qui que ce soit qui*.

The pronouns *any body whatever*, when the sentence expresses a doubt, and *nobody whatever*, are almost indifferently expressed by *qui que ce soit* or *personne*. Examples :

I doubt whether that will please *any body whatever* ;

Je doute que cela plaise à personne, or à qui que ce soit.

He trusts *no body whatever* ;

Il ne se fie à personne, or à qui que ce soit.

Nobody whatever has spoken to me against you ;

Personne (or qui que ce soit) ne m'a parlé contre vous

RULE 114.—*L'un l'autre, one another.*

The indeterminate pronouns, *one another, each other*, are expressed in French, by *l'un l'autre*, masculine, *l'une l'autre*, feminine, with reference to a noun singular, and by *les uns les autres*, masculine, *les unes les autres*, feminine, with reference to a noun plural, as they are substantively employed in either case.

The first of these pronouns is always the subject in French: thus, if they are preceded by a preposition in English, that preposition must come between them in French. Example:

My brother and your sister speak always of *one another*, they think of *one another*, they are made for *one another*, they cannot live without *one another*;

Mon frère et votre sœur parlent toujours l'un de l'autre, ils pensent l'un à l'autre, ils sont faits l'un pour l'autre, ils ne sauraient vivre l'un sans l'autre.

RULE 115.—*L'un et l'autre, both.*

L'un et l'autre, &c.

Both one and another.

L'un ou l'autre, &c.

Either.

Ni l'un ni l'autre, &c.

*Neither.**

These pronouns agree in gender and number with the noun to which they have reference: if they are preceded by a preposition in English, that preposition must be repeated in French, before *l'un* and before *l'autre*. Examples:

I will do it for them both;

Je le ferai pour l'un et pour l'autre.

I will do it for either;

Je le ferai pour l'un ou pour l'autre.

I will do it for neither of them;

Je ne le ferai ni pour l'un ni pour l'autre.

N.B. The word *both* followed by a substantive is expressed by *les deux*: as, *je me sers des deux mains*; I use *both hands*. *Both* followed by *and* is a conjunction sometimes expressed by *et*, but oftener left out in French. Example:

He is happy both in peace and war;

Il est heureux et en paix et en guerre, or il est heureux en paix et en guerre.

* *Ni l'un ni l'autre* requires *ne* before the verb.

RULE 116.—*Ne and personne, nobody.*

The indeterminate pronoun, *nobody*, is expressed by *personne*, masculine and singular. *Personne* requires *ne* before the verb. Examples :

Nobody knows whether he is worthy of love or hatred ;
Personne ne sait s'il est digne d'amour ou de haine.
 You please *nobody* ; *Vous ne plaisez à personne.*

Personne is masculine as a pronoun, and feminine as a substantive. Thus we say :

I know *nobody* so learned as you ;
Je ne connais personne si savant que vous — masculine.
 I know a *person* as learned as you are ;
Je connais une personne aussi savante que vous — feminine.

RULE 117.—*Aucun and ne pas un, none, not one.*

None is expressed by *aucun* or *aucune*, and *not one* by *pas un* or *pas une*, adj. : both require *ne* before the verb. Examples :

I had many friends, yet *not one* has relieved me ;
J'avais bien des amis, cependant pas un ne m'a secouru.
None of you were there ; *Aucun de vous n'y était.*
 That gentleman had six daughters ; *none* of them has married ;
Cet homme a eu six filles ; aucune (or pas une) ne s'est mariée.

RULE 118.—*Ne and rien, nothing.*

The word *nothing* is expressed by *rien*, and requires *ne* before the verb which agrees with it. Example :

Nothing is more rare than a true friend ;
Il n'y a rien de plus rare qu'un véritable ami.
 I have seen *nothing* finer ; *Je n'ai rien vu de plus beau.*

N. B. *Rien* is always joined by the preposition *de* to the following adjective, when not separated from it by the verbs *être*, *paraître*, *sembler*.

Aucun, *personne*, and *rien*, do not require *ne* before the verb, in a sentence interrogative or of doubt ; but then *aucun* stands for *any*, *personne* for *any body*, and *rien* for *any thing*. Examples :

Was there ever *any body* more eloquent than Cicero ?
Y eut-il jamais personne plus éloquent que Cicéron ?
 Have you ever seen *any thing* more curious ?
Avez-vous jamais rien vu de plus curieux ?
 I question if there is *any* author without a fault ;
Je doute qu'il y ait aucun auteur sans défaut.

When the words *rien*, *personne*, *aucun*, and some others, serve to answer a question, without repeating the verb used by the enquirer, they imply a negation, without employing *ne*. Examples :

On whom must one rely in misfortune? On nobody.
Sur qui doit-on compter dans le malheur? *Sur personne.*
 Which do you prefer? None of them.
Lequel préférez-vous? *Aucun d'eux.*

EXERCISE UPON THE INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

RULE 98.—*lequel, laquelle.* &c. which.

When *one* has deviated from the paths of virtue, *one* ought
s'est écarté *sentier* 4 *devoir* A
 to endeavour to get (into them) again. It (has been) often lamented
 * *chercher* *rentrer y* 52 * *on* *a* *souvent regretter*
 that the origin of almost every nation is either lost in fables,
origine f *presque* 106 — *r* *ou perdre dans* 7 f
 or buried in obscurity.

ensevelir 4 — *é*
People attribute the invention of gunpowder to Berthold
attribuer — *canon poudre* 23 f
 Schwartz of Friburg. *It is* reported that Pythagoras required a
Fribourg *rapporter* — *gore* *exiger* B
 silence of five years from those he instructed in philosophy.
 — *ans* *ceux* 83 *instruire* B 4 — *phie*

RULE 99.—*l'on, for on.*

Death arrives (in the) moment one thinks the least of it, and *one*
arriver *au* — *qu'on penser le moins y* 57
 passes in an instant from pleasure to the grave.—1. As, when a
passer — *plaisir* *tombeau de même que*
 picture is finished, one runs a risk of spoiling it, if *one* adds new
tableau *finir* *court* * *risque* *gâter* 50 *ajouter* 8
 touches to it; so likewise you will spoil a period, if you
 — f 52 * *phrase f*
 unseasonably add to it synonymous words, which neither con-
mal à propos *ajouter* 52 — *me* 31 7 *ne* *con-*
 tribute to the clearness of expression, nor to the embellishment of
tribuer ni *clarté* — *ni* — *lisement*
 the speech. We learn better what we understand, than what
discours on apprendre (ir) mieux 74 *comprendre* 74
 we do not.—2. *They* say that he is dead.
comprendre

RULE 100.—*Le même,* the same.

The same manners which (are becoming) when natural, are
manière *étaient* *quand elles sont* — *rel*

ridiculous when affected. It is rare to see two persons of
 —le elles sont —ter il — de voir personnes
 the same temper, and of the same opinion. Whatever misfortunes
 caractère m — quelque 110 malheur qui
 happen to a philosopher, he is always the same. The same thing does
 arriver —phé toujours
 not please at all times.
 plaire en temps

RULE 101.—*plusieurs*, many, several.

Many poems of the first merit appear obscure because the reader
 poème m mérite m paraître obscur parce que lecteur
 is not sufficiently acquainted with the ancient fables, historical facts,
 * assez 172 connaître * 31 — f 10 —que 31 fait
 or natural objects, to which the poet alludes. Many had rather
 —rel 31 objet 81 poète fuit allusion aimer a mieux
 suffer the loss of life than of a good name. When we apply
 souffrir perte f 4 celle réputation quand 98 s'appliquer
 ourselves to several sciences, we seldom succeed in any.
 * — 98 rarement réussir dans aucun

RULE 102.—*un autre*, another.

Another would not have forgiven you so easily as I did.
 pardonner 57 si facilement 37 j'ai fuit
 Another's disgrace often deters a tender mind from many vices. Do
 17 — détourner 31 cœur bien 18
 not speak ill of others, if you wish not that others should speak ill
 mal autres vouloir (ir) que r mal
 of you. Charity rejoices (in the) happiness of others, and is
 9 —té se réjouir du bonheur
 contented that others be preferred. Bear the imperfections of others
 content r préférer souffrir n —
 without vexation.
 sans vous troubler

RULE 103.—*chacun*, every one.

Every one lives after his own way. — 1. Every body has his own
 vivre (ir) à * manière *
 faults. — 1. We must give every body his own. — 1. After the ladies
 défaut il faut donner à 69 m * après que dame
 had danced all night, every one of them went home. — 2. Every
 c danser la nuit d'elles s'en aller c chez elle
 country has its customs and laws. — 3. Your brothers have each a
 pays coutume 63 loi
 good place. — 1. Every one must take care of himself. — 3. The
 — devoir a prendre garde à soi
 epic poem of Voltaire and that of Milton have each their merit. —
 31 poème m — 76 — avoir mérite

2. There is, in *every* plant, a certain quality which renders it whole-
plante f — rendre 48 salue-
 some or hurtful.—1. *Every one* has his own manner of thinking and
*taire nuisible * manière penser 139*
 acting.
agir

RULE 104.—*quelqu'un*, somebody.

When we are in town, we have almost every day *somebody*
en ville presque tous les jours
 to dine with us.—Has ever *any body* seriously doubted of the im-
d diner 92 sérieusement douter
 mortality of the soul?—2. Of the magistrates, *some* voted the death
—té âme parmi —trat voter c
 of the admiral, and *some* for his banishment; but the majority was
*amiral * bannissement —té c*
 for setting him at liberty. The vestal virgins were obliged to
pour mettre 57 en vestale 31 vierge n obliger de
 preserve their virginity while they waited on the goddess Vesta;
*conserver —té pendant que servir n * déesse*
 if any sinned against that law, she was buried alive. I have *some*
pécher n contre n enterré vif
 books for you, and *some* also for your brother. Gather *some* of
aussi cueillir (ir) n
 those flowers.
fleur

RULE 105.—*le tout*, the whole.

1. *The whole* is greater than a part.—(How much) do you
la partie combien
 ask for the whole?—1. I will not sell the whole; I
demander vouloir (ir) A vendre if
 must keep a part for myself.—2. The Pyrrhonians were phi-
faut que j'en garde moi —rien n
 losophers who doubted of *every thing*.—*Every thing* is vanity in
—phe 7 douter n —té dans
 this world.—2. *Every thing* displeases you.—2. He takes *every*
monde n déplaît 57 prendre
thing.—1. She has taken *every thing* for herself.—Piety refers *all*
elle piété rapporter
 things to God; self-love, (on the) contrary, applies *every thing*
amour-propre au —traire rapporter
 to itself.
à soi

RULE 106.—*tout le*, all, the whole.

1. *All* the grandeur, wealth, and power of the earth, cannot
— richesse pouvoir pouvoir (ir)
 satisfy an ambitious mind.—2. The passions of youth are
*—faire 31 —tiens esprit — jeunesse **

pliant to every impression. — 2. Come and see us every day. — 2.
cèdent — pl *venir* H * *voir* 57 pl
 We naturally ascribe to God every kind of perfection, as
naturellement attribuer *sorte* f 16
 wisdom, power, and goodness without bounds, existing through
 4 *sagesse* 10 *pouvoir* *bonté* *sans* *fin* *exister* *dans*
 all ages, pervading all space, providing for all mankind
siècles m *remplir* *espace* *pouvoir* (ir) à *genre* *humain*
 in general, and for every creature in particular. — The whole fleet is
 à pl — *lier* *flotte* f
 at sea.
en mer

RULE 107.—*tout ce qui*, all that.

All that does not tend to the glory of God, or to the good of
tendre *gloire* *bien*
 society, is mere vanity. Every thing that is lofty, vast, or profound,
n'est que *élevé* *vaste* *profond*
 expands the imagination, and dilates the heart. Whatever is good in
étendre — *dilater* *cœur*
 itself, is not always approved. Whatever tends to enlighten the
soi *approuver* *tendre à éclairer*
 understanding, or to impress the heart with right feelings,
entendement à *imprimer* *dans* *de* *bon* *sentiment*
 may be pronounced useful.
pouvoir (ir) A *appeler* *utile*

RULE 108.—*tout*, quite.

Philosophers, as learned as they are, are sometimes mistaken.
philosophe *savant* * *quelquesfois* *se tromper*
 Your mother was quite cast down at that news; however, as sorry as
 c *abattre* * *nouvelle* *cependant* *affligé*
 she was, she received me kindly, and desired me to dine with
 B *recevoir* c 57 *avec bonté* *prier* c 57 *de dîner*
 her. This fashion is quite new.
elle *mode* f *nouveau*

Your sister is quite altered by her illness. Hope, as deceitful
sœur *changer* *maladie* *espérance* *trompeuse*
 as it is, serves at least to lead us to the end of life through a
servir au moins à conduire 57 *fin* 4 *par*
 pleasant way. The wife, mother, and daughter of Darius, as
agréable 31 *chemin* *femme* *mère* 10 *filles* 14 —
 afflicted as they were when Alexander took them prisoners,
affligé B *quand* *faire* c 57 *prisonnières*
 could not forbear admiring his generosity.
pouvoir c *s'empêcher d'admirer* *générosité*

RULE 109.—*quelque*, invariable.

Philosophers, however extolled their sentiments may be, are exposed
 — *phé* 9 *élevés* — *exposer*

to some practical frailties as well as other mortals. *Though men*
quelque pratique 31 *faute aussi-bien que mortel*
 be ever so incredulous during their life, they often change their
*incrédule pendant changer **
 disposition when death approaches. All the nations of the earth
de — approcher
 worship a Supreme Being, however different they may be in their
adorer 31 — *Etre in m pl * 63*
 temper, manners, and inclinations. *Though* fashions be ever
caractère mœurs — mode f
 so foolish, people always follow them. *However* skilful and
folles on toujours suivre (ir) 57 habile
 learned we may be, let us not make a vain show of our
savant faire (ir) — étalage
 knowledge.
science

RULE 110.—*quelque*, variable.

He who possesses virtue will be loved by all good men, in what-
 77 *posséder* 9 *aimer de* 106 *gens de bien*
 ever country he lives. *Whatever* mental accomplishments a man
vivre (ir) talent de l'esprit
 may have received from nature, he may improve them by art
reçus 4 pouvoir Δ perfectionner 57 4
 and study. Charity does not rejoice in iniquity, whatever advantage
étude se réjouir de 4 — té avantage
 she may reap from it. *Whatever* services you have done me,
recueillir (ir) en 57 — III rendus 57
 I have been thankful (for them).
reconnaissant en 57

RULE 111.—*quel que*, in two words.

Whatever your birth may be, *whatever* your elevation and
*pl f naissance pl * 63 élévation*
 glory, you ought to despise nobody. *Whatever* may be the
gloire devoir Δ mépriser 116
 power of a king, he cannot hope to increase nor even to preserve
pouvoir espérer de augmenter même de conserver
 it, if he be not (particularly attentive) to gain the affection of
 60 *Δ très-attentif à gagner —*
 his subjects. *Whatever* your motives may be, your conduct
sujet motif conduite f
 will be condemned.
condamné

RULE 112.—*quelque chose que*, whatever.

Whatever happens to a virtuous man, he never murmurs
il arriver vertueux murmurer

against the Divine Providence. — 2. Those who apply to *nothing*
contre — — 77 *s'appliquer*
whatever, are very contemptible. — 1. *Whatever* may happen in our
très-méprisable
family, give (me notice of it. — 2. I complain of *nothing whatever*.
famille *m'en avis* *se plaindre*
 — 1. *Whatever* you undertake, you will never succeed in it, if you
entreprendre (ir) *réussir y 57*
 do not take your measures better.
mesure mieux

RULE 113.—*quiconque*, whoever.

1. *Whoever* is prudent, will avoid talking much of any particular
prudent *éviter de parler* *un* — *liér*
 science in which he is not (remarkably skilled), because he has
 — *dans 81* *très-versé* *parce qu'*
 nothing to get, and much to lose. — 2. Of *whomsoever* you speak,
 118 *à gagner* *à perdre* *parler*
 avoid calumny. — 2. To *whomsoever* you apply, they will tell you
éviter 9 calomnie *s'adresser on* *dire 57*
 the same thing. — 1. *Whoever* (is not ashamed) of his faults (is
chose f *n'a pas honte* *faute*
 deserving) of punishment. — 1. *Whoever* is modest, seldom fails
mériter * *punition* *modeste rarement manquer*
 to gain the good will of those he converses with.
de gagner * *estime 83* — *ser*

RULE 114.—*l'un l'autre*, one another.

The faculty of interchanging our thoughts *with one another*
 — *té de nous communiquer* *pensée à pl*
 has always been considered as one of the greatest privileges of reason,
 — *dérer* — *lége 4 raison*
 and as what more particularly raises mankind above the brute.
 74 *élever l'homme au-dessus de* — *f*
 We are guilty of great injustice towards one another, when we are
coupable — *f envers pl* *nous nous*
 prejudiced by the features of those whom we do not know.
laissons prévenir *trait ceux que* *connaître*
 The happiness of the people makes that of the prince; their true
bonheur *peuple m faire 76*
 interests are connected *with one another*.
intérêt liés à pl

RULE 115.—*l'un et l'autre*, both.

I love my father and mother; I would do every thing to
faire (ir) 105 *pour*
 please them both. The slothful and the diligent are (upon a level)
leur plaire à *paresseux* — *de niveau*

326 EXERCISE UPON THE INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

if *neither* of them knows what to do. Your brother and mine have
** * savoir (ir) quoi * faire* 69
 great abilities; but they *both* make very bad use (of them).
*8 talent mais * faire mauvais usage en* 57
Both suspect him, but *neither* will say why. Either of you
soupçonner vouloir (ir) pourquoi vous pouvez
 can do me a great favour.
l'un ou l'autre plaisir

RULE 116.—*ne* and *personne*, nobody.

1. I know *nobody* so learned as you. — 2. I know a *person* more
connaître si savant 37 *connaître*
 learned than you. — 1. *Nobody* more impatiently suffers injuries,
savant 39 *—tiement souffrir* 9
 than he who is most forward in doing them. He who pleases *nobody*
*77 * le premier à faire en* 57 *77 plaire à*
 is less unhappy than he whom *nobody* pleases. *Nobody* becomes
malheureux 77 *à qui plaire devenir*
 debauched or virtuous on a sudden.
débauché vertueux tout-à-coup.

RULE 117.—*pas un, aucun* and *ne*, none.

Of all the nations of the earth, there is *none* but has an idea
il n'y en a qui n'ait idée
 of God. Of the great number of friends who surround us in
nombre m ami environner 57 *dans*
 prosperity, there often remains *not one* in adversity. Fortune
4 —périté il n'en rester 4 *—té* 9 *—f*
 exempts many (bad men) from punishment but *none* from fear.
sauver bien 18 *méchant* 4 *punition mais* 4 *crainte f*
 I had many friends, yet *not one* has relieved me.
n 101 *cependant secourir (ir) me* 57.

RULE 118.—*ne* and *rien*, nothing.

God requires *nothing* from us, but what is for our advantage.
*demander * 57 que* 74 *avantage*
Nothing is more common than the word friendship, and *nothing*
commun 39 *not amitié*
 more rare than a true friend. *Nothing* is more dangerous
n'est — véritable —reux
 for a young man than bad company. Charity does *nothing*
4 —gnie —té 9 *faire (ir)*
 without consideration and order.
sans — ni sans ordre

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES UPON THE
INDETERMINATE PRONOUNS.

Idleness is the mother of all vices. Charity is the first of all
 paresse 9 — m —té 9
 virtues. Though true love be ever so uncommon, yet it is
 109 véritable amour rare cependant
 less so than true friendship. With you, every road is easy, every
 54 f 106 chemin facile
 river fordable, every country fertile. Whatever may be the
 rivière guéable pays — 111
 happiness of the grandees of the earth, a true Christian should
 bonheur grand Chrétien devoir A
 propose to himself something more solid and lasting.
 *proposer * se 57 quelque chose de solide de plus durable*

One is truly amiable, when one is modest and learned at the
 *98 vraiment aimable modestes savant en **
 same time. Your sisters, handsome and amiable as they are,
 temps 108 belle aimable
 do not marry. Whoever cannot bear suffering, has not a
 *se marier 113 pouvoir (ir) * souffrir*
 great soul. Alexander used to say, I am (as much)
 âme f —dre avoir une coutume de aussi
 indebted to Aristotle, as to my father; for, if I am indebted for
 redevable —te de
 life to the one, I am indebted for virtue to the other. You should
 l'un devoir n
 not distrust one another as you do.
 vous défier de 114 faire (ir)

Whoever attentively considers the misery of human life,
 113 —vement considérer misère f humain 31
 will certainly prepare for a better; since infancy (is attended)
 se préparer meilleure puisque enfance se passe
 with folly, youth with disorder, and (old age) with infirmities.
 dans 4 folie jeunesse désordre m vieillesse —té.

If you would be happy, desire nothing too eagerly,
 valoir (ir) A heureux désirer n 118 avec trop d'empressement
 rejoice not excessively, nor grieve (too much) for disasters;
 se réjouir n —vement ne s'affliger trop de malheur
 and (above all) never forget the concerns of your soul.
 surtout oublier salut âme

Nobody can flatter himself he shall live till to-morrow.
 116 flatter se qu'il vivre (ir) jusqu'à demain
 The people often suffer by the wars which princes make
 peuples pl souffrir de guerre se faire (ir)

with one another. Whoever reveals secrets loses his credit.
à 114 113 révéler 9 perdre crédit
Honours, whatever they are, do not make men truly great, if
honneur 111 rendre vraiment
they have no personal merit. With time and patience we
31 mérite m le temps — 98
tame wild beasts, though ever so savage.
apprivoiser sauvage 31 bête f quelque farouches qu'elles soient
Every moment is dear to him who knows the value of time.
106 pl— cher 77 connaître prix 4 temps
Every man seeks tranquillity, and nobody finds it. Envy and
106 pl chercher —té 116 trouver 48 envie.
hatred are always united and strengthen one another in the
haine f unir se fortifier 114
same individual; they are only distinguishable from one another
sujet on ne peut les distinguer 114
in this: the one keeps close to the person, the other to his
qu'en ceci s'attacher • 116
situation.
état

CHAP. XII.

SEVERAL MODES OF NEGATION.

THIS Chapter is divided into two sections: *the first* explains the mode of expressing in French the English negations; *the second* shows the several circumstances in which a negative expression is required in French, when there is none in English.

SECTION I.

HOW TO EXPRESS IN FRENCH THE ENGLISH NEGATIONS.

The English negations are these eight: 1. *nobody*; 2. *none* or *not one*; 3. *nothing*; 4. *neither*; 5. *never*; 6. *by no means*; 7. *no*; 8. *not*. As we have spoken in the preceding Rules of the first three, it only remains to treat here of the five others.

RULE 119.—*Ni* or *ni ne*, neither *and* nor.

1. The word *neither*, besides its being an indeterminate pronoun (as we said before, Rule 115.), is also a negative conjunction when it is followed by *nor*. When *neither* and *nor* come before two nouns, or two verbs in the infinitive mood, they are both expressed by *ni* and *ne* before the verb which is in the indicative mood. Examples :

Neither prayers *nor* threatenings could move him ;

Ni prières ni menaces ne purent l'attendrir.

He knows *neither* how to read *nor* write ;

Il ne sait ni lire ni écrire.

2. If these conjunctions come before two verbs in the indicative mood, *neither* is expressed by *ne* before the first, and *nor* by *ni ne* before the second. Examples :

I *neither* praise *nor* blame you ;

Je ne vous loue, ni ne vous blâme.

He *neither* loves *nor* hates you ;

Il ne vous aime, ni ne vous hait.

RULE 120. — *Ne and jamais*, never ; *nullement*, by *no means*.

The word *never* is rendered by *jamais* ; *by no means* is expressed by *nullement* ; *jamais* and *nullement* require *ne* before the verb, without *pas* after. Examples :

I have *never* seen the queen of England ;

Je n'ai jamais vu la reine d'Angleterre.

I *by no means* approve of your conduct ;

Je n'approuve nullement votre conduite.

RULE 121. — *Aucun, aucune, point de, or non*, no.

1. The negative expression *no* before a substantive is expressed in French by *point de*, or by the adjective *aucun*, masculine, *aucune*, feminine, before a noun singular, and by *aucuns* masculine, *aucunes* feminine, before a noun plural. Examples :

You have no good qualities ;

Vous n'avez aucunes bonnes qualités, (or point de bonnes qualités).

He takes no care of his business ;

Il n'a aucun soin (or point de soin) de ses affaires.

2. When *no* is used in answer to a question, it is expressed in French by *non*. Examples :

Have you seen the king? No, sir;
Avez-vous vu le roi? Non, monsieur.
 Do you learn French? No, madam;
Apprenez-vous le Français? Non, madame.

RULE 122.—*Ne pas, non pas que, or non que, not.*

1. The negative *not* is usually expressed by *ne* before the verb or its auxiliary, and by *pas* or *point* after. Examples:

Do not speak to him; have you not spoken to him?
Ne lui parlez pas; ne lui avez-vous pas parlé?

2. If the verb, negatively used, is in the present infinitive, *ne* and *pas* are usually both placed before it. Examples:

I go away, not to displease you;
Je m'en vais pour ne pas vous déplaire.
 One must be a fool not to perceive that he is in the wrong;
Il faut être insensé pour ne pas voir qu'il a tort.

3. The word *not* followed by *that*, is expressed by *non que*, or *non pas que* with the following verb in the subjunctive. Examples:

I will do it, not that I am obliged, but to have peace;
Je le ferai, non que (or non pas que) j'y sois obligé, mais pour avoir la paix.

RULE 123.—*Ne without pas, before some verbs, not.*

The negative *not* is expressed by *ne* without *pas* or *point*, with these four verbs—*cesser*, to cease, *oser*, to dare, *pouvoir*, to be able, and *savoir*, used in the conditional, for, to be able. Examples:

He does not cease complaining;	<i>Il ne cesse de se plaindre.</i>
I dare not speak to him;	<i>Je n'ose lui parler.</i>
I cannot walk;	<i>Je ne puis marcher.</i>
You cannot refuse him;	<i>Vous ne sauriez le refuser.</i>

Note. The words *no more*, or *not any more*, are expressed by *ne* before the verb, and *pas plus* after, when *more* is followed by *than*; but they are expressed by *plus* without *pas*, when *more* is not followed by *than*. Examples:

I am no more than twenty years of age;
Je n'ai pas plus de vingt ans.

It is no more than a week since I saw your brother; you will see him no more;

Il n'y a pas plus de huit jours que j'ai vu votre frère; vous ne le verrez plus — not vous ne le verrez pas plus.

RULE 124.—*Distinction between pas and point.*

1. *Point* is more exclusive than *pas*. The first denies absolutely, and signifies *not at all*. The second denies sometimes but in part. Examples :

All the accused persons are not guilty ;
Tous ceux qu'on accuse ne sont point coupables ;
Tous ceux qu'on accuse ne sont pas coupables.

The first sentence signifies that none of the accused are guilty ; the second signifies only that the accused are not all guilty.

2. We make use of *point* in an interrogative sentence, when we doubt of the thing in question, and of *pas* when we are persuaded of it. Example :

Have you not seen my brother to-day ?
N'avez-vous point vu mon frère aujourd'hui ?
N'avez-vous pas vu mon frère aujourd'hui ?

In the first sentence, I doubt whether you have seen my brother or not ; in the second, I am persuaded you have seen him.

3. We make use of *point* to denote a thing that happens never, or very seldom, and of *pas* to denote that it does not happen in the time we are speaking, though it may happen very often. Example :

You do not study ;
Vous n'étudiez point ; vous n' étudiez pas.

The first sentence signifies, that habitually you do not study ; and the second, that you do not study at present, though you may be very studious.

N.B. This distinction is very exact, and conformable to the practice of the best French authors : there are many circumstances, however, in which *pas* and *point* can be almost indifferently used.

SECTION II.

NEGATIVE EXPRESSIONS IN FRENCH, AND NOT IN ENGLISH.

RULE 125.—*Negation used in French, and not in English.*

The particle *ne* is used in French after a comparative, and after *autre, autrement*, otherwise: in all these cases there is no negative expression in English. Examples*:

Your brother is younger than I thought;

Votre frère est plus jeune que je ne pensais.

The affair is quite different from what it had been related to me;

L'affaire est tout autre qu'on ne me l'avait racontée.

RULE 126.—*Negation used in French, and not in English.*

The particle *ne* is used after these four verbs — *apprehender*, to apprehend; *avoir peur*, to be afraid; *craindre*, to fear; *empêcher*, to hinder; and *prendre garde*, to take care, when they are affirmatively used. Examples:

I will hinder him from doing you wrong;

J'empêcherai qu'il ne vous fasse tort.

I fear he will come; *Je crains qu'il ne vienne.*

Douter, to doubt, on the contrary, requires *ne* before the next verb, when negatively used. Example:

We do not doubt that he is come

Nous ne doutons pas qu'il ne soit arrivé.

RULE 127.—*Negation used in French, and not in English.*

The five following conjunctions, *à moins que*, unless; *de crainte que*, for fear; *de peur de*, lest; *que*, used for unless, and *que*, for before or until; require the particle *ne* before the next verb. Examples:

I will not go there unless you come with me;

Je n'irai pas, à moins que vous ne veniez avec moi.

I will not give you a watch until you speak French;

Je ne vous donnerai pas de montre, que vous ne parliez Français.

* *Ne* should be left out if the verb be in the infinitive mood, or if there be a conjunction between *que* and the verb, as we said before, in the second note of Rule 40.

Observe, That all the verbs and conjunctions mentioned in these two rules govern the verb in the subjunctive mood (*si* excepted).

RULE 128.—*Ne* before the Verb, and *que* after, but or only.

When the words *but* and *only*, after a verb, mean *no more, nothing else*, or *nobody else than*, they are expressed by *ne* before the verb, and *que* after, not by *mais*. Examples :

I have *but* twenty guineas ; *Je n'ai que vingt guinées.*

I have *but* one true friend ; *Je n'ai qu'un véritable ami.*

The word *only*, after a verb, is expressed by *seulement* in other circumstances. Example :

If you had *only* two friends, you would succeed ;

Si vous aviez seulement deux amis, vous réussiriez.

When *but* begins the second part of a sentence, it is usually expressed by *mais*. Example :

I could wish to travel, *but* I have no money ;

Je voudrais bien voyager, mais je n'ai pas d'argent.

EXERCISE UPON NEGATIONS.

RULE 119.—*ni, ni ne*, neither.

1. Henry the fourth was a great king : *neither* his palace ^{11 B palais} nor his heart was shut against (any body) ; but they were particularly ^{cœur B fermer à personne B —lièrement} open to men of merit. — 2. Adversity *neither* troubles ^{ouvert mérite —té 4 troubler abattre (ir)} nor casts down the just ; prosperity *neither* spoils him, *nor* makes him prouder. * ^{juste prospérité aveugler 57 rendre 57 fier} — 2. Virtue is *neither* lost by shipwreck, *nor* changed by the alterations of time. — 2. I *neither* love ^{vicissitude temps aimer 60 haïr 57} nor hate you ; you *neither* please ^{plaire déplaire 60} nor displease me. — 1. You can *neither* read ^{savoir (ir) A lire écrire} nor write. — 1. We despise those who are useful *neither* to themselves, *nor* to others. ^{on mépriser 76 utile eux-mêmes}

102

RULE 120.—*ne jamais*, never.

Never make public what has been trusted to you in secret.

rendre B

74

*confier * 57 en*

Shining characters are not always the most agreeable; the mild
brillant 31 *caractère* m *agréable* *doux*
 radiation of an emerald is by no means less pleasant than the glare of
radiation *Émeraude* f *agréable* 39 *éclat*
 a ruby. Time past never returns; and a word, once uttered,
rubis *passé* *revenir* *mot une fois prononcé*
 never can be recalled. Scipio Africanus used to say, that
rappeler *Scipion l'Africain* *avoir* *à coutume de dire*
 he was never less at leisure, than when at leisure; nor less
à *de loisir* *quand il était oisif*
 alone, than when alone.
seul *quand il était*

RULE 121. — *ne aucun, non, no.*

1. No bounds can restrain the glory of the Almighty, no dimen-
limite *restreindre* *gloire* *Tout-puissant* —
 sion of time can limit his reign. There is no grief which length
temps *limiter* *règne* m *il n'y a* *chagrin* *
 of time does not lessen or mollify.

* *le temps* *diminuer* *à n'adoucir* r

A clear conscience needs no excuse, and fears no accusa-
pure 31 — *avoir besoin de* — *craindre* —
 tion. — 1. No inheritance can supply the want of a good education.

héritage *suppléer au défaut* —

1. No revenge is more heroical than that which torments envy by
vengeance *héroïque* 76 *tourmenter envie en*
 doing good. — 2. Have you seen the queen of England? No, I
le bien *voir (ir)* *reine Angleterre* 5 *ne*

have not. — 2. Do you know the king? No, madam. — 1. No
j'ai pas vue *connaître* *madame*
 reverse of fortune ought to alter friendship.

revers *devoir* *à* * *altérer* 9 *amitié*

RULE 122. — *ne pas, or non, not.*

1. As the earth does not only produce roses and lilies,
comme *seulement* *produire* 7 — *lis*
 but likewise briars and thistles; so the world does not always
mais aussi ronces 7 *chardons* 7 *ainsi monde* m *
 afford us contentment and pleasure, but sometimes afflictions and
donner 57 — *tement* 7 *plaisir* 7 *quelquefois* — 7
 troubles.
peine 7

2. You must be blind not to see, that this man wants
il faut que vous 157 *aveugle* *pour* *vouloir (ir)*
 to deceive you. — To forgive our enemy before he is sensible of
 * *tromper* 57 * *à* *avant qu'* *persuadé*
 his faults, is to encourage him in his faults; not to forgive him
faute c'est * *encourager* 57 * *lui* 57
 at all, is to sin one's self
du tout c'est * *pécher soi-même*

RULE 123. — *ne* without *pas*, not.

As antiquity cannot authorise an error, so novelty cannot
comme ancienneté autoriser erreur ainsi nouveauté
 prejudice truth. When we dare not blame a prince after
porter préjudice à on oser blâmer — après
 his death, it is a sign that his successor is like him. Some people
mort c'est signe in — sur in ressembler lui 57 104 personne
 do not cease to complain of fortune, though they are loaded
 116 *cesser de se plaindre — f quoy qu' chargé*
 with its favours. When Darius offered to Alexander to divide Asia
favours offrir c de partager Asie 5
 equally with him, he answered: The earth cannot bear two suns,
également 48 répondre c pouvoir souffrir soleil
 nor Asia two kings.
ni

RULE 125. — *que ne*, than.

Courage is oftener allied to vice, than cowardice is to virtue.
— plus souvent allier in lâcheté 54
 We despise those who speak otherwise than they think. Ireland is
 98 *mépriser 76 autrement penser Irlande 5 f*
 more powerful at present, than were the three kingdoms at the death
puissant à 54 B royaume mort
 of queen Elizabeth. A traveller often relates things otherwise than
reine — voyageur rapporter
 they are.

RULE 126. — *ne* after *craindre*, &c.

I have not heard of my son for these six months; I fear lest
*entendu parler depuis * mois que*
 some misfortune have befallen him. I fear my father will come; I
*malheur être r arriver lui 57 * venir r*
 do not fear he will come. I will hinder him from punishing you;
** empêcher qu'il * punir r 57*
 I will not hinder him from punishing you, because you deserve it.
*qu'il * 57 parce que mériter le 57*

RULE 127. — *ne* after *à moins que*.

No man was ever (cast down) by the injuries of fortune unless
personne c abattre (ir) revers — f à moins
 he had before suffered himself to be deceived by her favours. I
*qu'il se fût auparavant laissé * * tromper faveur*
 will not go into the country unless you go with me. Go
aller (ir) à campagne f à moins que venir r 49 aller r
 home for fear my father come and find you here. A
à la maison de crainte que ne trouver 57 ici

judge ought to examine his own heart, lest passion prevent
juger devoir A * *examiner* cœur de peur que — 9 empêcher
 justice. I will not forgive you, unless you beg pardon. I will
 — f pardonner 57 que demander B —
 not (set off) before my cousin have come.
partir que — être & venir

RULE 128. — *ne que*, but, only.

Knowledge without humility produces nothing but pride, vanity,
science 9 4 —té produire * orgueil —té
 and presumption. We confess small failings, only to persuade
présomption avouer 8 défaut pour —der aux
 others that we have no great ones. I am but twenty years old.
autres 18 grand en 57 avoir ans *
 God requires nothing of us but what is for our advantage. Friend-
demande * * 57 74 avantage amitié 9
 ship (is to be purchased) only by friendship.
peut s'acheter par

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES UPON THE NEGATIONS.

There is no reproof more mild, no exhortation more effectual,
il y a 121 reproche m doux 121 — efficace
 than good example. Afflict nobody, never blame without reason,
exemple m affliger n 116 120 blâmer
 never reprove with passion, and be always ready to pardon injuries.
 120 réprimander prêt à pardonner injure 9
 Two things cannot be more contradictory than truth and falsehood;
chose pouvoir (ir) —toire vérité fausseté
 yet perhaps, none are so mixed and united. Charity never looks
peut-être 117 mêler ni si unir —té 120 regarder
 on others with contempt.
 * mépris

No strength of genius, no vivacity of wit, can excuse immorality
 121 force f génie 121 —té esprit excuser —té
 in authors. There would be neither navigation nor agriculture,
auteur il n'y aurait 119 —
 without the industry of men. What is done in anger, can
sans —trie 74 se fait dans colère ne pouvoir (ir)
 neither be done well, nor be approved by any body. The waves of
 119 fait approuver de personne vague f
 the Channel are not more agitated by the winds of the east or the
Manche f 122 agité vent * est *
 west, than my heart was when I heard of that sorrowful
ouest 125 cœur 54 c apprendre (ir) c * fâcheux
 accident.

Unless magistrates be on their guard, they will (be made)
à moins que 127' —*trai* r *garde* pl *devenir*
 instruments of the revenge of wicked men. There is no object
 — *vengeance* *méchaut* * *il y a* 121 *objet*
 more pleasing than the sight of a man whom you have obliged.
agréable *vue* f 79 *obliger*

CHAP. XIII.

OF THE GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.*

RULE 129.—*Verbs which govern de in French.*

1. Most of the reflected verbs not mentioned in the next rule govern *de* in French, whatever preposition they govern in English. Examples:

To perceive a trick,	<i>S'apercevoir d'un tour.</i>
To seize upon something,	<i>S'emparer de quelque chose.</i>
To inquire about news,	<i>S'enquérir de nouvelles.</i>
To remember a history,	<i>Se ressouvenir d'une histoire.</i>

And so on for others.

2. The following—*abuser*, to abuse; *avoir besoin*, to want; *avoir pitié*, to pity; *être altéré*, to thirst after; *hériter*, to inherit; *jouir*, to enjoy; *manquer*, to want; *médire*, to traduce; *rendre raison*, to account for; *rougir*, to blush; *user*, to use; govern *de* in French. Thus we say:

To want money,	<i>Avoir besoin d'argent.</i>
To pity the unfortunate,	<i>Avoir pitié des malheureux.</i>
To inherit a large fortune,	<i>Hériter d'un grand bien.</i>
To enjoy good health,	<i>Jouir d'une bonne santé.</i>
To traduce one's neighbour,	<i>Médire de son prochain.</i>

And so on with the rest.

* The alphabetical series of verbs having been carefully revised and corrected in this edition, the learner must have recourse to it; and he will there find the government of some verbs not mentioned in the following rules.

3. The verbs passive followed in English by the prepositions, *from* or *with*, govern *de* in French. Examples :

He is loaded *with* spoil ; *Il est chargé de butin.*
 This book is translated *from* the English ;
Ce livre est traduit de l'Anglais.

4. The word *by*, which comes sometimes after a verb passive, is usually expressed by *de*, when the verb does not express any action of the body, and by *par* when it does. Thus we say :

Your brother has been killed *by* two thieves ;
Votre frère a été tué par deux voleurs.
 Your sister is esteemed *by* every body ;
Votre sœur est estimée de tout le monde.

However, we make use of *par* to avoid the repetition of *de* in the same phrase, though the verb does not express any action of the body. Example :

Your work will be severely censured by the critics ;
Votre ouvrage sera censuré d'une manière sévère par les critiques — not des critiques.

RULE 130.— *Verbs which govern à in French.*

1. The twenty-two following reflected verbs govern *à* :

S'abandonner,	to abandon one's self.
s'accoutumer,	to accustom one's self.
s'adonner,	to addict one's self.
s'amuser,	to amuse one's self.
s'appliquer,	to apply one's self.
s'apprêter,	to dispose one's self.
s'arrêter,	to stop.
s'attacher,	to stick to.
s'adresser,	to apply one's self.
se déterminer,	to resolve upon.
se disposer,	to prepare one's self.
s'endurcir,	to inure one's self.
s'engager,	to engage.
s'exposer,	to expose one's self.
se fier,	to trust.
s'habituer,	to accustom one's self.
s'obstiner,	to be determined.
s'occuper,	to employ one's self.
s'opiniâtrer,	to be determined.
s'opposer,	to oppose one's self.
se plaire,	to take delight in.
se préparer,	to prepare one's self.

Examples :

Accustom yourself to study ·	<i>Accoutumez-vous à l'étude.</i>
I apply myself to mathematics ;	<i>Je m'applique aux mathématiques.</i>
Do not stop in London ;	<i>Ne vous arrêtez pas à Londres.</i>

2. The following verbs govern *à* in French, whatever case they govern in English :

Consentir, <i>to consent.</i>	penser, <i>to think of.</i>
contrevenir, <i>to infringe.</i>	plaire, <i>to please.</i>
contribuer, <i>to contribute.</i>	remédier, <i>to remedy.</i>
déplaire, <i>to displease.</i>	ressembler, <i>to resemble.</i>
désobéir, <i>to disobey.</i>	résister, <i>to resist.</i>
nuire, <i>to hurt.</i>	songer, <i>to think of.</i>
obéir, <i>to obey.</i>	subvenir, <i>to relieve.</i>
obvier, <i>to obviate.</i>	succéder, <i>to succeed.</i>
pardonner, <i>to forgive.</i>	survivre, <i>to outlive.</i>
parvenir, <i>to attain.</i>	

Examples :

To displease one's master,	<i>Déplaire à son maître.</i>
Do not disobey your parents,	<i>Ne désobéissez pas à vos parents.</i>
I forgive my enemies,	<i>Je pardonne à mes ennemis.</i>
He pleases every body,	<i>Il plaît à tout le monde.</i>
I think of your business,	<i>Je pense à votre affaire.</i>

3. The following—*applaudir*, to applaud ; *insulter*, to insult ; *persuader*, to persuade ; *renoncer*, to renounce ; *rêver*, to dream ; *travailler*, to work, sometimes govern no preposition, but most frequently the preposition *à*. Thus we say :

Examples :

You insult every body ;	You insult my misfortune ;
<i>Vous insultez tout le monde.</i>	<i>Vous insultez à ma misère.</i>

RULE 131.—*Verbs which govern no Preposition in French.*

All verbs which may be used in the passive voice govern no preposition in French. For instance, *aimer*, *estimer*, *punir*, *récompenser*, &c. govern no preposition, because we can say, *il est aimé*, *il est estimé*, *il est puni*, &c.

By the same rule, the following verbs—

Abattre, <i>to pull down.</i>	attendre, <i>to wait for.</i>
accepter, <i>to accept of.</i>	chercher, <i>to look for.</i>
admirer, <i>to wonder at.</i>	critiquer, <i>to caril at.</i>
approuver, <i>to approve of.</i>	déchirer, <i>to tear off.</i>

demander,	to ask for.	injurier,	to rail at.
dénoncer,	to inform against.	juger,	to judge of.
déraciner,	to root out.	lorgner,	to leer on.
époudrer,	to wipe off.	paraphraser,	to comment upon.
examiner,	to examine into.	regarder,	to look at.
huer,	to hoot at.		

And some others, which are attended by a preposition in English, govern no preposition in French, because they may be used in the passive. We can say, for instance :

Your offer has been accepted ; *Votre offre a été acceptée.*
 This tree has been pulled down ; *Cet arbre a été abattu.*
 Your conduct has been approved ; *Votre conduite a été approuvée.*

And so on with the rest.

RULE 132.—*Verbs which govern the Preposition de with their regimen indirect.*

When the following verbs govern two nouns or pronouns, not joined by a conjunction, the first does not require a preposition, and the second is preceded by *de* in French :

Absoudre,	to absolve.	détourner,	to divert.
accabler,	to overwhelm.	dissuader,	to dissuade.
accepter,	to accept.	emplir,	to fill.
accuser,	to accuse.	exclure,	to exclude.
avertir,	to warn.	expulser,	to turn out.
bannir,	to banish.	informer,	to inform.
blâmer,	to blame.	louer,	to praise.
chasser,	to expel.	menacer,	to threaten.
comblér,	to fill up.	obtenir,	to obtain.
corriger,	to correct.	recevoir,	to receive.
débusquer,	to drive out.	priver,	to deprive.
dégoûter,	to disgust.	soupçonner,	to suspect.
délivrer,	to free.		

Examples :

To load an enemy with injuries ;	<i>Accabler un ennemi d'injures.</i>
To accept the offers of a friend ;	<i>Accepter les offres d'un ami.</i>
To fill a bottle with wine ;	<i>Emplir une bouteille de vin.</i>
To blame one's conduct ;	<i>Blâmer la conduite de quelqu'un.</i>
To exclude a liar from society ;	<i>Exclure un menteur de la société.</i>

RULE 133.—*Verbs which govern the Preposition à with their regimen indirect.*

When the following verbs govern two nouns or pronouns, that which has reference to persons is to be pre-

ceded by the preposition *à* in French, and the other requires none. If they have both reference to persons, that before which the preposition *to* is or could be prefixed is preceded by the preposition *à*, and the other by no preposition. No verb governs two regimens direct in French :

Accorder,	<i>to grant.</i>	expliquer,	<i>to explain.</i>
adresser,	<i>to direct.</i>	ôter,	<i>to take away.</i>
annoncer,	<i>to announce.</i>	pardonner,	<i>to forgive.</i>
apporter,	<i>to bring.</i>	prédire,	<i>to foretel.</i>
attribuer,	<i>to attribute.</i>	préférer,	<i>to prefer.</i>
avouer,	<i>to own.</i>	prendre,	<i>to take.</i>
communiquer,	<i>to communicate.</i>	présenter,	<i>to present.</i>
confesser,	<i>to confess.</i>	prêter,	<i>to lend.</i>
confier,	<i>to trust.</i>	procurer,	<i>to procure.</i>
conseiller,	<i>to advise.</i>	promettre,	<i>to promise.</i>
déclarer,	<i>to declare.</i>	raconter,	<i>to relate.</i>
dédier,	<i>to dedicate.</i>	rapporter,	<i>to bring back.</i>
demander,	<i>to ask.</i>	refuser,	<i>to refuse.</i>
devoir,	<i>to owe.</i>	rendre,	<i>to return.</i>
dire,	<i>to tell.</i>	renvoyer,	<i>to send back.</i>
donner,	<i>to give.</i>	répéter,	<i>to repeat.</i>
écrire,	<i>to write.</i>	reprocher,	<i>to reproach.</i>
enseigner,	<i>to teach.</i>	répondre,	<i>to answer.</i>
envoyer,	<i>to send.</i>	révéler,	<i>to reveal.</i>
épargner,	<i>to spare.</i>	vendre,	<i>to sell.</i>

Examples :

Grant him that favour ;	<i>Accordez-lui cette grâce.</i>
Tell me the truth ;	<i>Dites-moi la vérité.</i>
To beg the master's leave ;	<i>Demander permission au maître.</i>
To reproach one with a fault ;	<i>Reprocher une faute à quelqu'un.</i>

OBSERVATIONS.

Jouer governs *de*, when it signifies *to play* on some musical instrument ; and *à* when it signifies *to play* at some game. Examples :

You play well on the violin, but you do not play well at cards ;
Vous jouez bien du violon, mais vous ne jouez pas bien aux cartes.

Some verbs are followed in French by a preposition different from that used in English : such are,

To spit at one ;	<i>Cracher sur quelqu'un.</i>
To fire at the enemy ;	<i>Faire feu sur l'ennemi.</i>
To intermeddle with other people's business ;	<i>S'ingérer dans les affaires des autres.</i>
To struggle with death ;	<i>Lutter contre la mort.</i>
To shoot at a hare ;	<i>Tirer sur un lièvre : and some others.</i>

A verb in French cannot govern two objects, as in many English phrases. For instance :

I have heard *your father* repeat the same truth : in French, *your father* must be rendered by *à M. votre père*.

CHAP. XIV.

OF THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

As there are three forms in the infinitive mood, called *present*, *participle present*, and *participle past*, this chapter is naturally divided into three sections : *the first* describes the circumstances in which a verb is used in the infinitive mood, without being preceded by any preposition ; it explains also the cases in which it is preceded by *de*, by *à*, or by *pour* : *the second* teaches that a participle present is always invariable in French, and furnishes an easy method to distinguish it from a verbal adjective, which is always variable : *the third* establishes two general rules, which explain when a participle past is variable or invariable.

SECTION I.

OF THE INFINITIVE PRESENT.

The infinitive present is sometimes used in French without any preposition before it ; it is sometimes preceded by *de*, sometimes by *à*, and sometimes by *pour*, according to the following rules :

RULE 134.—*Infinitive without Preposition.*

A verb in the infinitive present has no preposition before it.

1. When it is substantively used, and is the subject of another verb. Examples :

To speak too much is dangerous ;

Trop parler est dangereux.

To relieve the poor is a praiseworthy action ;

Secourir les pauvres est une action digne de louange.

2. When it is governed in the infinitive by any of the following verbs :

Aller,	<i>to go.</i>	nier,	<i>to deny.</i>
croire,	<i>to believe.</i>	oser,	<i>to dare.</i>
daigner,	<i>to disdain.</i>	paraître,	<i>to appear.</i>
déclarer,	<i>to declare.</i>	prétendre,	<i>to pretend.</i>
devoir,	<i>to owe.</i>	pouvoir,	<i>to be able.</i>
entendre,	<i>to hear.</i>	savoir,	<i>to know.</i>
envoyer,	<i>to send.</i>	sembler,	<i>to appear.</i>
espérer,	<i>to hope.</i>	souhaiter,	<i>to wish.</i>
faillir,	<i>to miss.</i>	soutenir,	<i>to maintain.</i>
faire,	<i>to do.</i>	venir,	<i>to come.</i>
falloir,	<i>to be requisite.</i>	voir,	<i>to see.</i>
laisser,	<i>to let.</i>	vouloir,	<i>to be willing.</i>

Examples :

Go and see your friend ; *Allez voir votre ami.*
 Do you believe you are in the right ?
Croyez-vous avoir raison ?
 Deign to answer me ; *Daignez me répondre.*
 I will cause your orders to be executed ;
Je ferai exécuter vos ordres.

And so on with the rest.

Note.—The verb *faire* is used for *to do*, *to make*, *to cause*, and *to oblige* ; in all cases it is immediately followed, in French, by the next verb in the infinitive, which it governs without a preposition. Examples : *je ferai bâtir une maison, je vous ferai faire votre thème.*

RULE 135.—*Infinitive with de.*

We place the preposition *de* before a verb in the *infinitive* mood.

1. After a substantive which governs a verb so as to be a necessary part of the affirmation. Examples :

It is time to set out ; *Il est temps de partir.*
 You have no cause to be angry with me ;
Vous n'avez pas sujet d'être fâché contre moi.

2. The English preposition *for*, with a participle present after a substantive, is generally expressed by *de* with the infinitive. Example :

I am obliged to you *for* having succeeded ;
Je vous sais bon gré d'avoir réussi.

3. After an adjective, whenever, by inverting the sentence, the clause containing the infinitive might be made the leading term of an assertion expressed by *is to be*; and likewise after *capable*, *able*, *incapable*, *unable*, *digne*, *worthy*, *indigne*, *unworthy*, and perhaps a few others. Examples :

You are very clever to have succeeded so well ;
Vous êtes très-adroit d'avoir si bien réussi.

We may say : to have succeeded so well *is to be* very clever ; *avoir si bien réussi*, c'est être *très-adroit*.

He is worthy of being preferred to that employment ;
Il est digne d'être préféré pour cet emploi.

4. After any adjective preceded by the impersonal verbs *il est*, it is, *il semble*, it seems, *il paraît*, it appears, and after several impersonal verbs which could be expressed by *il est*, with the adjectives derived from them, as, *il convient*, *il importe*, *il suffit*, for *il est convenable*, *il est important*, *il est suffisant*. Examples :

It will be enough to speak to him ;
Il suffira de lui parler.
 It is dangerous to trust every body ;
Il est dangereux de se fier à tout le monde.

5. Most commonly when it is governed by any other reflected verbs than those mentioned in rule 130. Examples :

I am sorry I spoke of it, since that displeases you ;
Je me repens d'en avoir parlé, puisque cela vous déplaît.
 He has a mind to go and see you to-morrow evening ;
Il se propose d'aller vous voir demain au soir.

6. When it (*viz.* the infinitive) is immediately preceded by any of the following verbs :

Accuser,	<i>to accuse.</i>	dispenser,	<i>to excuse.</i>
affecter,	<i>to affect.</i>	dissuader,	<i>to dissuade.</i>
avertir,	<i>to advise.</i>	écrire,	<i>to write.</i>
blâmer,	<i>to blame.</i>	empêcher,	<i>to hinder.</i>
cesser,	<i>to cease.</i>	enjoindre,	<i>to enjoin.</i>
commander,	<i>to command.</i>	entreprendre,	<i>to undertake.</i>
conjurér,	<i>to intreat.</i>	essayer,	<i>to try.</i>
conseiller,	<i>to advise.</i>	feindre,	<i>to feign.</i>
craindre,	<i>to fear.</i>	finir,	<i>to finish.</i>
défendre,	<i>to forbid.</i>	menacer,	<i>to threaten.</i>
détourner,	<i>to deter.</i>	mériter,	<i>to deserve.</i>
différer,	<i>to differ.</i>	négliger,	<i>to neglect.</i>
dire,	<i>to tell.</i>	offrir,	<i>to offer.</i>

omettre,	<i>to omit.</i>	prier,	<i>to pray.</i>
ordonner,	<i>to order.</i>	promettre,	<i>to promise.</i>
oublier,	<i>to forget.</i>	proposer,	<i>to propose.</i>
parler,	<i>to speak.</i>	refuser,	<i>to refuse.</i>
permettre,	<i>to permit.</i>	remercier,	<i>to thank.</i>
persuader,	<i>to persuade.</i>	résoudre,	<i>to resolve.</i>
plaindre,	<i>to pity.</i>	sommer,	<i>to summon.</i>
prescrire,	<i>to prescribe.</i>	soupçonner,	<i>to suspect.</i>
presser,	<i>to urge.</i>	supplier,	<i>to beg.</i>

Examples :

He does not cease complaining ; *Il ne cesse de se plaindre.*
 I advise you to stay here ; *Je vous conseille de rester ici.*
 I beg of you to forgive him ; *Je vous prie de lui pardonner.*

RULE 136.—*Infinitive with à.*

We place the preposition *à* before a verb in the infinitive mood.

1. After a substantive, when to express something to be done. Examples :

I have no time to lose ; *Je n'ai point de temps à perdre.*
 I know a house to be sold ; *Je connais une maison à vendre.*

2. After a substantive, when the following verb is or may be expressed by *in* with the participle present. Example :

I have great pleasure *in seeing you* ;
J'ai beaucoup de plaisir à vous voir — *en vous voyant.*

3. After any adjectives which take a verb in the infinitive to complete the sense ; though *to* is rendered by *de* when the infinitive is alleged as a reason for using the adjective. Examples :

I am ready to go out ; *Ce fruit est bon à manger.*
Je suis prêt à partir.

But we ought to say : I am glad to see you ; *je suis aise de vous voir*, as the sentence means : I am glad *because* I see you.

4. The following verbs also govern the infinitive with *à* :

Accoutumer,	<i>to accustom.</i>	employer,	<i>to employ.</i>
admettre,	<i>to admit.</i>	encourager,	<i>to encourage.</i>
aider,	<i>to help.</i>	engager,	<i>to engage.</i>
aimer,	<i>to like.</i>	exhorter,	<i>to exhort.</i>
apprendre,	<i>to learn.</i>	inviter,	<i>to invite.</i>
autoriser,	<i>to authorise.</i>	penser,	<i>to think of.</i>
condamner,	<i>to condemn.</i>	persister,	<i>to persist in.</i>
chercher,	<i>to endeavour.</i>	porter,	<i>to induce to.</i>
consister,	<i>to consist.</i>	pousser,	<i>to excite to.</i>
disposer,	<i>to dispose to.</i>	rester,	<i>to stay.</i>
donner,	<i>to give.</i>	travailler,	<i>to work.</i>

And some others.

Example :

I learn to dance ; I like to sing, &c.
J'apprends à danser ; *J'aime à chanter, &c.*

5. The reflected verbs, *s'abandonner*, *s'accoutumer*, *s'adonner*, and others mentioned before (Rule 130.), govern the infinitive with the preposition *à*. Example :

Prepare yourself to answer me ;
Disposez-vous à me répondre.

RULE 137.—*Infinitive with de or à.*

The verb *manquer* usually governs the infinitive with *de* when it is negatively used, and with *à* when affirmatively. Example :

I will not fail to punish you, if you neglect to do your exercise ;
Je ne manquerai pas de vous punir, si vous manquez à faire votre thème.

Tâcher governs the infinitive with *de*, when it means to endeavour, and with *à* when it means to aim at. Examples :

I will endeavour to satisfy you ;
Je tâcherai de vous satisfaire.
 He aims at doing me a prejudice ;
Il tâche à me porter préjudice.

Tarder governs the infinitive with *de*, when it is impersonal, and with *à* when it signifies to delay. Example :

I long to see your brother, he delays a long time to come ;
Il me tarde de voir votre frère, il tarde bien à venir.

Venir governs the infinitive without a preposition when it signifies to come ; it governs the infinitive with *de* when

it is to express a *thing just happened*; and with *à* when it signifies *to happen*. Examples:

Come and see me to-morrow; *Venez me voir demain.*
 My father is just gone out; *Mon père vient de sortir.*
 If it happens to rain, you will be wet;
S'il vient à pleuvoir, vous serez mouillé.

The following: *commencer, continuer, contraindre, forcer, s'efforcer*, and *obliger*, govern the infinitive with *de* rather than *à*, when the expression is not vague as to the application or action of the infinitive.

RULE 138.—*Infinitive with pour.*

We use in French the preposition *pour* before an infinitive, to express the *end*, the *design*, or the *cause* for which a thing is done; and, in general, every time the preposition *to* could be changed into *in order to*, without altering the sense of it. Examples:

I am come to see you; *Je suis venu pour vous voir.*
 I will do every thing to oblige you;
Je ferai tout pour vous obliger.
 Men are born to live in society;
Les hommes sont nés pour vivre en société.

The preposition *pour* is also used after the words *assez*, enough; *trop*, too much; *suffire*, and *être suffisant*, to be sufficient. Example:

You are tall enough to be a soldier, but you are too great a coward to enlist;
Vous êtes assez grand pour être soldat, mais vous êtes trop lâche pour vous engager.

Note.—When, after a verb, the preposition *for* comes before a participle present, it is expressed in French by *pour*, with the infinitive present, if the verb has reference to a present or future time, and with the compound of the present, if it refers to a past time. Examples:

How much do you ask for making me a coat?
Combien me demandez-vous pour me faire un habit?
 He was hanged for robbing; *Il fut pendu pour avoir volé.*

RULE 139.—*Infinitive instead of the Participle present.*

We never put a participle present in French after any other preposition than *en*. But we put the present of the

infinitive after the preposition *de, à, par, après, pour, sans,* and every other. Examples :

One cannot speak against the truth *without being* guilty ;

On ne peut trahir la vérité sans se rendre coupable.

I must begin *by saying* my lessons ;

Il faut que je commence par réciter mes leçons.

SECTION II.

OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

Participle present is a name for the verbal adjective ending in *ant*.

This name expresses different functions or uses of the words ending in *ant*, derived from verbs : the following rule teaches how to distinguish them invariably.

RULE 140.—*The Participle present is always invariable in French.*

A word ending in English in *ing*, and in *ant* in French, is an adjective when it precedes the substantive in English, and a participle present when it comes after : in the first case it agrees in French with the substantive to which it is joined ; it is always invariable in the second. Examples :

variable.	{	An obliging lady ;	<i>Une dame obligeante.</i>
	{	A convincing proof ;	<i>Une preuve convainquante.</i>
	{	Bleating sheep ;	<i>Des brebis bêlantes.</i>
	{	Surprising effects ;	<i>Des effets surprenants.</i>
invariable.	{	A lady obliging her friends ;	
	{	<i>Une dame obligeant ses amis</i> — not <i>obligeante.</i>	
	{	A proof convincing every body ;	
	{	<i>Une preuve convainquant tout le monde</i> — for <i>qui convainc.</i>	

It will be observed, from the preceding examples, that a word ending in *ant*, in French, is an adjective when it qualifies the substantive to which it is joined, and a participle present when it rules or governs a substantive after it.

RULE 141.—*When the English Participle is rendered by the Indicative.*

When an English participle has reference to a substantive which is not the subject, it is rendered in French by a verb in the indicative mood. Example :

Alexander asked the physicians *standing* by him, if he should die of his illness?

Alexandre demanda aux médecins qui se tenaient autour de lui, s'il mourrait de sa maladie — not *aux médecins se tenant*.

The poets contain exceptions to this rule, as this verse of Delille :

Vois ces groupes d'enfants *se Jouant* sous l'ombrage.

RULE 142.—by *expressed* by *en*.

An English participle, preceded by the preposition *by*, is most commonly rendered in French by the participle present with *en*. Examples :

We have obtained peace *by making* great sacrifices ;

Nous avons obtenu la paix en faisant de grands sacrifices.

More glory is acquired *by defending* than *by accusing* one's fellow-citizens ;

On acquiert plus de gloire en défendant ses concitoyens qu'en les accusant.

Note. 1.—An English participle preceded by the prepositions *of, from, without, after, for, &c.*, is rendered in French by the infinitive, with *de, à, pour, or sans* (as we have seen before, rule 139.), and not by the participle present.

Note 2.—An English participle, preceded by the verb *to be*, is expressed in French by the indicative of the principal verb only. Examples :

I am speaking ; *Je parle.*

I was dancing ; *Je dansais.*

What are you doing here ? *Que faites-vous ici ?*

Note 3.—An English participle, preceded by the definite article *the*, is rendered by a substantive in French. Example :

The learning of languages is difficult ;
L'étude des langues est difficile.

The word in *ant* is invariable so long as it represents a transient action or state ; otherwise employed, it becomes an adjective, and assumes the marks of number and gender peculiar to its noun. Examples :

The wound still bleeding, she fainted ;
La plaie saignant encore, elle s'évanouit.
 He showed his wound, still bleeding ;
Il montra sa plaie encore saignante.

SECTION III.

OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST.



RULE 143.—*When the Participle past is variable in French.*

A participle past is always variable in French, and must agree, in gender and number, with the word to which it relates as an adjective.

1. When it is employed as an adjective. Examples :

A book well written ;	A letter well written ;
<i>Un livre bien écrit.</i>	<i>Une lettre bien écrite.</i>

2. After the verbs *être*, to be (when not preceded by a conjunctive pronoun), *paraître*, to appear, *sembler*, to seem, *avoir l'air*, to look. Examples :

My brother is tired ; *Mon frère est fatigué.*
 My sister is tired ; *Ma sœur est fatiguée.*
 Your father appears afflicted ; *Votre père paraît affligé.*
 Your mother appears afflicted ; *Votre mère paraît affligée.*
 That tragedy seems well written ;
Cette tragédie me semble bien écrite.
 Your daughter appears greatly afflicted ;
Votre fille a l'air très-affligée.

3. In the compound tenses of reflected verbs, when *être* takes the place of *avoir*, the participle agrees in gender and number with the conjunctive pronoun that precedes the auxiliary, if it is the regimen direct, and not otherwise. So we must say,

She has wounded herself ; *elle s'est blessée ;*

Because *se* is the regimen direct : but we should say,

She has wounded her foot ; *elle s'est blessé le pied ;*

Because *se* is the regimen indirect, and stands for *à elle-même*.

4. In compound tenses with *avoir* and *être*, when the

regimen direct, governed by *that tense*, goes before the auxiliary, the participle agrees with it in gender and number. Examples :

The land which I have *sold* is good and fruitful ;
La terre que j'ai vendue est bonne et fertile.
 The books I have *bought* are new ;
Les livres que j'ai achetés sont neufs.
 The rules which I have *explained* are difficult ;
Les règles que j'ai expliquées sont difficiles.
 What affair have you *undertaken* ?
Quelle affaire avez-vous entreprise ?

When the regimen direct, governed by the compound tense, is a conjunctive pronoun, or *que*, the gender and number of the participle are determined by those of the *noun* that will answer to the question, *what ?* put immediately after the participle. So in the foregoing Examples :

Sold — what ?	<i>La terre</i> — fem. singular.
Bought — what ?	<i>Les livres</i> — masc. plur.
Undertaken — what ?	<i>Affaire</i> — fem. sing.

RULE 144.—*When the Participle past is invariable.*

The participle past after the auxiliary is invariable when the regimen follows the compound tense ; when the verb is impersonal, or in its nature has no regimen. Examples :

He has *studied* ; She has *sung* ; They have *spoken* to her.
Il a étudié. Elle a chanté. Elles lui ont parlé.
 We met some ladies.
Nous avons rencontré des dames.
 There arose a dispute ;
Il s'est élevé une dispute.
 The four years that the war has *lasted* ;
Les quatre années que la guerre a duré.

A regimen may precede the compound tense and not be governed by it, but by another verb in the infinitive. Examples :

The house which I have advised you to buy is a new one.
La maison que je vous ai conseillé d'acheter est neuve.
 The rules which I have *begun* to explain are easy ;
Les règles que j'ai commencé à expliquer sont faciles.

If we say, as before directed, in order to ascertain the agreement of the participles,

Advised — what ? begun — what ?

The answer, to buy, to explain, will show that the participle is invariable. Again :

These melons are better than I should have thought :

If we say, thought — what? *That they were*, is the answer ; and shows that we must leave *cru* unchanged

Ces melons sont meilleurs que je ne l'aurais cru.

N.B. The verbs *faire* and *laisser*, followed by an infinitive, form with it a sort of compound verb, and the participle is invariable. Examples :

That woman whom you have put to death ;

Cette femme que vous avez fait mourir.

The opportunity which you have suffered to escape ;

L'occasion que vous avez laissé échapper.

CONCORD OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

RULE 145.—*The Verb agrees with its Subject.*

ALL the personal verbs agree in number and person with their subject. Examples :

I give ; *Je donne.*

My father is dead ;

Mon père est mort.

We give ; *Nous donnons, &c.*

My brothers are dead ;

Mes frères sont morts.

A verb is put in the third person plural, in both languages, when it is preceded or followed by more than one noun singular as subjects, and agrees with the pronoun *they* understood. Examples :

Homer and Virgil are the princes of poets ;

Homère et Virgile sont les princes des poètes.

The paper and ink are good for nothing ;

Le papier et l'encre ne valent rien.

The distress in which a family, six children, and a multitude of affairs involved him.

L'accablement où le mettaient une famille, six enfants, une multitude d'affaires.

RULE 146.—*The Verb with Subjects of different Persons.*

When a verb has several subjects of different persons, it is put in the plural, and agrees with the first in

preference to the other two, and with the second in preference to the third, and then it is preceded by *nous*, if it be in the first person, and by *vous*, if in the second. Examples :

My brother and I will go to-night to the play ;
Mon frère et moi, nous allons ce soir à la comédie.
 You and your sister will stay at home ;
Vous et votre sœur, vous resterez à la maison.

RULE 147.—The Verb when preceded by *qui*, &c.

The pronoun *qui* requires the verb following in the same number and person as the substantive or pronoun antecedent. Examples :

It is I who have seen him ;	<i>C'est moi qui l'ai vu.</i>
It is he who has done it ;	<i>C'est lui qui l'a fait.</i>
It is you who have spoken of it ;	<i>C'est vous qui en avez parlé.</i>
It is they who have taken it ;	<i>Ce sont eux qui l'ont pris.</i>

SOME USEFUL OBSERVATIONS.

1. When the English address God, they put the pronoun and verb in the singular; the French, on the contrary, have them in the second person plural, in prose. Example :

Our Father who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name, &c.
*Notre Père qui êtes aux cieux, que votre nom soit sanctifié, &c.**

2. The pronouns and verbs are usually put in the second person plural in both languages, when we speak to one person; but if an adjective follows, it remains in the singular. Example :

Sir, you are very obliging ;
Monsieur, vous êtes très-obligeant.

3. The third person is elegantly used instead of the second, when we speak to persons for whom we have some consideration. Example :

Madam, will you come to the park ?
Madame, veut-elle venir au parc ? — for voulez-vous, &c.

4. The second person singular is often used in French between intimate friends, and also between brothers and

* Not *Notre Père qui es aux cieux, ton nom soit sanctifié*, as we find in some prayer-books printed in England.

sisters, husband and wife, &c. : as, *viens-ici, mon frère*, come here, brother—for *venez-ici*.

5. Poets and orators use the second person singular when they address God, heroes, or sovereigns, as in the following sonnet of *Desbarreaux*.

Grand Dieu ! *tes jugements sont remplis d'équité :*
Toujours *tu prends* plaisir à nous être propice ;
Mais j'ai tant fait de mal, que jamais *ta bonté*
Ne me pardonnera. qu'en blessant *ta justice*.

Oui, Seigneur, la grandeur de mon impiété
Ne laisse à *ton* pouvoir que le choix du supplice ;
Ton intérêt s'oppose à ma félicité,
Et *ta* clémence même attend que je périsse.

Contente ton désir, puisqu'il t'est glorieux ;
Offense-toi des pleurs qui coulent de mes yeux :
Tonne, frappe, il est temps, *rends-moi* guerre pour guerre.

J'adore en périssant la raison qui t'aigrit :
Mais dessus quel endroit tombera *ton tonnerre*,
Qui ne soit tout couvert du sang de Jésus-Christ ?

CHAP. XV.

OF THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

RULE 148.—*When the Present of the Indicative is used.*

THE present of the indicative—as, *je parle*, I speak ; *je fais*, I do ; *je reçois*, I receive, &c. is used in French,

1. To express a thing which is present at the time we are speaking. Examples :

It rains ; *Il pleut.* I am sick ; *Je suis malade.*

2. To express a thing which we do habitually, though not at the moment in which we are speaking. Examples :

I learn French ; *J'apprends le Français.*
You go often to the play ; *Vous allez souvent à la comédie.*

3. To express an eternal truth. Examples :

God is merciful ; *Dieu est miséricordieux.*
Men are mortal ; *Les hommes sont mortels.*

4. To express in a more lively and emphatical manner a thing that happened in a time quite past. Example :

I have seen your son dragged by his horses ; he called to them to stop ; his cries frightened them ; they ran on, till his body was but one wound ;

J'ai vu votre fils entraîné par ses chevaux, il veut les rappeler ; sa voix les effraie, ils courent, tout son corps n'est qu'une plaie.

5. To express a future time at no great distance, when some other word in the sentence denotes futurity. Examples :

I shall set out to-night for London ;
Je pars ce soir pour Londres — for je partirai.
 I shall be ready in a moment ;
Je suis prêt dans un moment.

RULE 149.—*When the Imperfect of the Indicative is used.*

The imperfect of the indicative—as, *je parlais, je recevais, &c.* is used in French,

1. To express a present with respect to something past, and then it exactly answers to the English expression, *I was going.* Examples :

I was writing you a letter when I received yours ;
Je vous écrivais une lettre, quand je reçus la vôtre.
 We were dining when we learnt that sad news ;
Nous dinions, quand nous apprîmes cette fâcheuse nouvelle.

2. To express something past, but habitual, during a time not specified, and then it answers to the English expression, *I used to do.* Examples :

The Romans cultivated the arts, encouraged sciences, and rewarded merit ;

Les Romains cultivaient les arts, encourageaient les sciences, et récompensaient le mérite.

Our ancestors went a hunting every day, and lived upon game ;

Nos ancêtres allaient tous les jours à la chasse, et ne vivaient que de gibier.

Cæsar was a great general ;

César était un grand général.

Cicero was a great orator ;

Cicéron était un grand orateur.

Lewis the sixteenth was a good king ;

Louis seize était un bon roi.

RULE 150.—*When the Preterite of the Indicative is used.*

The preterite of the indicative—as, *je parlai, I spoke ; je fis, I did ; je reçus, I received, &c.,* is used in French,

to express a particular fact or event which has happened but once, or very seldom, and in a time quite past, and at the distance of at least a day. Examples :

The Romans expelled Tarquin from Rome;
Les Romains chassèrent Tarquin de Rome.
 Cæsar was killed in the senate;
César fut tué dans le sénat.
 Cicero had his head cut off;
Cicéron eut la tête tranchée.
 I went yesterday to see your father;
J'allai hier voir votre père.

USEFUL OBSERVATIONS.

From the three preceding rules it appears, that a verb which is in the preterite in English, may sometimes be put in three different tenses in French.

1. In the *imperfect*, when it expresses a thing habitual, or which was present when another thing happened. Examples:

When I was in the country, I walked often;
Quand j'étais à la campagne, je me promenais souvent.
 I was sick when you came;
J'étais malade quand vous êtes venu.

2. In the *preterite* when it denotes a particular fact, which happened at a time quite past. A period of time is past when the pronouns *this* or *our* could not be prefixed to it. Examples:

I walked yesterday; *Je me promenai hier.*
 I was sick last week; *Je fus malade la semaine dernière.*

3. In the *compound of the present*, when the period specified is not quite past. Examples:

I walked this morning for two hours;
Je me suis promené ce matin pendant deux heures.
 I was very sick this week;
J'ai été bien malade cette semaine.

Observe. I have repeated the same examples, to render more obvious the distinction between the imperfect, the preterite, and the compound of the present.

RULE 151.—*When the Future and the Conditional are used.*

The future—as, *je parlerai, je ferai, je recevrai, &c.,*

is used in French as in English, to express a future time.
Example :

Our bodies will rise again in the day of judgment ;
Nos corps ressusciteront au jour du jugement.

The English often use the present tense, or the compound of the present, after the conjunctions, *when, as soon as, or after*, when they want to express a thing to come : the future, however, must always be used in French instead of the present, and the compound of the future instead of the compound of the present. Examples :

When I am in the country, will you come to see me ?
Quand je serai à la campagne, voulez-vous venir me voir ?
You will play, when you have finished your exercise ;
Vous jouerez, quand vous aurez fini votre thème.

The conditional tense—as *je parlerais*, I would speak ; *je ferais*, I would do ; *je recevrais*, I would receive, &c., which some grammarians improperly call the imperfect of the subjunctive, is used in French as in English, to express a conditional sentence. Examples :

We should be happy, if we knew how to fix our desires ;
Nous serions heureux, si nous savions fixer nos désirs.
Though you should be rich, yet you would not be inore happy ;
Quand vous seriez riche vous ne seriez pas plus heureux.

RULE 152. — *No Future nor Conditional after si.*

When the conjunction *si* signifies *whether*, the future and conditional are used after it in French as in English. Examples :

I do not know *if* (or *whether*) it will be good weather to-morrow ;
Je ne sais s'il fera beau temps demain.
I do not know *if* (or *whether*) my brother would come, should I desire him ;
Je ne sais si mon frère viendrait, si je l'en priaïs.

But when the conjunction *si* signifies *suppose that*, the English future must be rendered in French by the present, and the conditional by the imperfect. Examples :

You will become a learned man, if you *will* study well ;
Vous deviendrez savant, si vous étudiez bien — not *si vous étudierez.*
I should become rich, if I *would* continue my trade ;
Je deviendrais riche, si je continuais mon commerce — not *si je continuerais.*

RULE 153. — *When the Compound of the Present is used.*

The compound of the present—as, *j'ai parlé*, I have spoken ; *j'ai fait*, I have done ; *j'ai reçu*, I have received, &c. is used in French to express a thing past, in a period not yet elapsed, or at a time which is not specified. A period is not elapsed when the pronoun *this* or *our* is, or could be, prefixed to the words *age*, *year*, *month*, *week*, or *day*, mentioned in the sentence. Examples :

Our age has produced great men ;

Notre siècle a produit de grands hommes — not *produisit*, nor *produisait*.

We had much company this winter ;

Nous avons eu beaucoup de compagnie cet hiver — not *nous eûmes*.

RULE 154.—*When the other Compound Tenses are used.*

The compound of the imperfect—as, *j'avais parlé*, *j'avais fait*, *j'avais reçu*, &c., is used in French to express a thing done before another, which is also past : but it is employed when the previous action was habitual, or when nothing points out the approximation of the two actions. Example :

The king *had* named an admiral, when he heard of you ;

Le Roi avait nommé un amiral, quand on lui parla de vous.

The compound of the preterite—as, *j'eus parlé*, *j'eus fait*, *j'eus reçu*, &c., is also used to express a thing done before another : but, like the preterite, it can be employed only for a time entirely elapsed ; and besides, it points out the approximation of the two actions, and for this reason it is most commonly used after the conjunctions, *quand*, *dès que*, *aussitôt que*, *après que*. Example :

As soon as the parliament *was* assembled, the riot ceased ;

Dès que le parlement se fut assemblé, l'émeute cessa.

The compound of the future and conditional are generally used in French as in English, and as they offer no difficulty, they require no explanation.

CHAP. XVI.

OF THE USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

THIS chapter is divided into three sections: the *first* enumerates the adjectives, pronouns, verbs, and conjunctions, which always govern the subjunctive mood: the *second* treats of the verbs and conjunctions which govern the following verb, sometimes in the indicative, and sometimes in the subjunctive, and points out in what circumstances each mood must be used: the *third* explains when the verbs, governed in the subjunctive, must be used in the present, when in the preterite, and when in the compound tenses.

SECTION I.

WORDS WHICH ALWAYS GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

RULE 155.—*The Subjunctive is used after a Superlative.*

A verb preceded by *qui* or *que* is put in the subjunctive —

1. After a superlative, as we have said before, Rule 43.

Examples :

The best guard a king can have, is the heart of his subjects ;
La meilleure garde qu'un roi puisse avoir, c'est le cœur de ses sujets.
 You are the most learned man I know in this town ;
Vous êtes le plus savant que je connaisse dans cette ville.

2. After these five indeterminate pronouns, *quelque*, whatever ; *qui que ce soit*, whoever ; *personne*, nobody ; *pas un*, not one ; *aucun*, none ; *rien*, nothing, as we have said before, speaking of indeterminate pronouns, Rule 109., and following. Examples :

Of whomsoever you speak, avoid slander ;
De qui que ce soit que vous parliez, évitez la médisance
 I know nobody who is so happy as you are ;
Je ne connais personne qui soit aussi heureux que vous.
 I have seen nothing reprehensible in your conduct ;
Je n'ai rien vu qu'on puisse blâmer dans votre conduite.

3. After the ordinal numbers—as, *le premier*, the first; *le second*, the second; *le troisième*, the third; *le dernier*, the last, &c. when preceded by a verb. Examples :

You are the first friend I have met with in London;
Vous êtes le premier ami que j'aie rencontré à Londres.

4. After these two words, *le seul*, and *l'unique*, the only one. Example :

My son is the only one upon whom I can rely;
Mon fils est le seul sur qui je puisse compter.

N.B. In the preceding rules *qui* and *que* do not govern the subjunctive when they are preceded by *de*, and an antecedent to which they relate. Examples :

This is the best reason you have just given me;
Voilà la meilleure des raisons que vous venez de me donner.
I do not know any of the ladies who live in your house;
Je ne connais aucune des dames qui demeurent chez vous.
Do not say any thing of what I trust to you;
Ne dites rien de ce que je vous confie.
I have read the first volume of the work you had lent to me;
J'ai lu le premier volume de l'ouvrage que vous m'aviez prêté

RULE 156.— *The Subjunctive is used after Verbs of fear or doubt.*

A verb preceded by the conjunction *que* is always used in the subjunctive, after verbs which express any doubt, wish, command, order, fear, ignorance, or any affection of the mind, and particularly after the following :

Aimer,	<i>to like.</i>	nier,	<i>to deny.</i>
commander,	<i>to command.</i>	ordonner,	<i>to order.</i>
craindre,	<i>to fear.</i>	prier,	<i>to pray.</i>
défendre,	<i>to forbid.</i>	se réjouir,	<i>to rejoice.</i>
désirer,	<i>to wish.</i>	souhaiter,	<i>to wish.</i>
douter,	<i>to doubt.</i>	supposer,	<i>to suppose.</i>
s'étonner,	<i>to wonder.</i>	vouloir,	<i>to be willing.</i>

And likewise after *charmé*, *enchanté*, or *bien aise*, very glad, *étonné*, astonished, *content*, satisfied, *fâché*, sorry, *affligé*, afflicted, *surpris*, surprised, preceded by *être*, *paraître*, *sembler*, *avoir l'air*. Examples :

I fear my father is dead; *Je crains que mon père ne soit mort.*
I wish you may succeed; *Je désire que vous réussissiez.*
I doubt that he is come; *Je doute qu'il soit arrivé.*
I wish they would make peace; *Je souhaite qu'on fasse la paix.*

I will have him obey me ; *Je veux qu'il m'obéisse.*
 I am sorry they have deceived you ;
Je suis fâché qu'on vous ait trompé.

And so on with the rest above mentioned.

RULE 157.—*The Subjunctive is used after some Impersonal Verbs.*

A verb preceded by *que* is always put in the subjunctive, after the impersonals, *il faut*, it must ; *il est fâcheux*, it is sad ; *il est juste*, it is just ; *il est injuste*, it is unjust ; *il convient*, it becomes ; *il importe*, or *il est important*, it matters ; and generally after all those not mentioned in the next section, Rule 160. Examples :

It is necessary that there be some motive for acting ;
Il est nécessaire qu'il y ait quelque motif pour agir.
 I must go to town ; *Il faut que j'aille en ville.*
 It is just that he should see her ; *Il est juste qu'il la voie.*

And so on with the rest.

RULE 158.—*The Subjunctive is used after some Conjunctions.*

A verb is always put in the subjunctive mood after the following twenty conjunctions :

Afin que,	<i>that.</i>	malgré que,	<i>for all that.</i>
à moins que,	<i>unless.</i>	nonobstant que,	<i>for all that.</i>
avant que,	<i>before.</i>	non que, non pas que,	<i>not that.</i>
bien que,	<i>though.</i>	posé que,	<i>suppose that.</i>
de crainte que,	<i>for fear.</i>	pour que,	<i>that.</i>
de peur que,	<i>lest.</i>	pourvu que,	<i>provided.</i>
en cas que,	<i>if.</i>	quoique,	<i>though.</i>
encore que,	<i>though.</i>	sans que,	<i>without.</i>
jusqu'à ce que,	<i>till.</i>	soit que,	<i>whether.</i>
loin que,	<i>far from.</i>	supposé que,	<i>suppose that.</i>

Examples :

Unless you come with me, I will not go out ;
A moins que vous ne m'accompagniez, je ne sortirai pas.
 Though he is lazy, yet he improves much ;
Bien qu'il soit paresseux, il fait beaucoup de progrès.
 Send me your book, that I may read it ;
Envoyez-moi votre livre, afin que je le lise.
 I will be ready before they are come ;
Je serai prêt avant qu'ils soient venus.

N. B. The subjunctive is always used in the beginning

of a sentence, to express surprise, an imprecation, or an ardent desire. Examples:

May you be happy ! *Puissiez-vous être heureux !*
 May I rather die, than not succeed !
Que je meure, si je ne réussis !

SECTION II.

VERBS AND CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN SOMETIMES THE INDICATIVE AND SOMETIMES THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

RULE 159.— *Verbs which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The following verbs :

Affirmer,	<i>to affirm.</i>	maintenir,	<i>to maintain.</i>
assurer,	<i>to assure.</i>	oublier,	<i>to forget.</i>
apercevoir,	<i>to perceive.</i>	penser,	<i>to think.</i>
avouer,	<i>to confess.</i>	prédire,	<i>to foretel.</i>
conclure,	<i>to conclude.</i>	prévoir,	<i>to foresee.</i>
convenir,	<i>to agree.</i>	promettre,	<i>to promise.</i>
croire,	<i>to believe.</i>	publier,	<i>to publish.</i>
déclarer,	<i>to declare.</i>	savoir,	<i>to know.</i>
dire,	<i>to say.</i>	songer,	<i>to think.</i>
espérer,	<i>to hope.</i>	soutenir,	<i>to maintain.</i>
juger,	<i>to judge.</i>	supposer,	<i>to suppose.</i>
jurer,	<i>to swear.</i>	voir,	<i>to see.</i>

And in general, all those which express the intellectual faculties of the mind, govern the indicative, when they are affirmatively used, and most commonly the subjunctive when they are used negatively, interrogatively, or are preceded by the conjunction *si*. Examples :

I believe he *is* in the right ; do you believe he *is* in the right ? I do not believe he *is* in the right ;

Je crois qu'il a raison — indicative ; *croyez-vous qu'il ait raison ? je ne crois pas qu'il ait raison* — subjunctive.

I hope he *will come* ; Do you hope he *will come* ?

J'espère qu'il viendra — indicative ; *Espérez-vous qu'il vienne ?* — subjunctive.

Let us go, if you think it *will be* fine weather ;

Partons, si vous pensez qu'il fasse beau temps — subj.

If we ask a question less to be informed of a thing than to inform others of it, the second verb is put in the indicative, and not in the subjunctive. Examples :

Have I told you that my father is dead?
Vous ai-je dit que mon père est mort ? — indicative.
 Did you perceive they wanted to deceive me?
Vous aperçûtes-vous qu'on voulait me tromper ? — indic.

RULE 160.— *Verbs Impersonal which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The impersonal verbs, with an adjective, denoting *evidence, certitude, or probability* of a thing—such as, *il est clair*, it is clear ; *il est certain*, it is certain ; *il est vrai*, it is true ; *il est probable*, it is probable, &c., govern the next verb in the indicative, when they are affirmatively used and most frequently in the subjunctive, when they are used interrogatively, negatively, or conditionally. Examples :

It is certain that you are in the wrong, but it is not certain I am in the right ;

Il est certain que vous avez tort — indicative ; *mais il n'est pas certain que j'aie raison* — subjunctive.

It is probable they will make peace this year. Is it probable they will make peace this year ?

Il est probable qu'on fera la paix cette année — indicative ; *Est-il probable qu'on fasse la paix cette année ?* — subj.

It is true that I may be deceived. If it were true that I might be deceived ;

Il est vrai que je puis me tromper — indicative. *S'il était vrai que je pusse me tromper* — subjunctive.

RULE 161.— *Conjunctions which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

The following conjunctions, *de manière que, de sorte que, tellement que*, so that, *sinon que*, except that, govern the indicative, when the sentence affirms positively that the thing in question is or will be, and the subjunctive when the thing is not certain, but rather wished for. Examples :

- | | | |
|------|---|---|
| ind. | { | Your son behaves in such a manner, that he is, and will always be, loved by his masters ; |
| | | <i>Votre fils se comporte, de manière qu'il est et sera toujours aimé de ses maîtres.</i> |
| sub. | { | Behave in such a manner, that you may be loved and esteemed by your masters ; |
| | | <i>Comportez-vous de manière que vous soyez aimé et estimé de vos maîtres.</i> |

Note. The word *que*, used in the second part of a sentence, to avoid the repetition of a conjunction occurring in the first, governs the same mood as the conjunction it stands for. Examples :

- ind. { As soon as my brother writes to me, and I have the opportunity, I will let you know ;
Aussitôt que mon frère m'écrira, et que j'aurai des occasions, je vous donnerai de ses nouvelles.
- sub. { Unless you come or write to me, I will not do it ;
A moins que vous ne veniez ou que vous ne m'écriviez, je ne le ferai pas.

The word *que*, used to avoid the repetition of *si*, governs the subjunctive. Example :

If somebody comes, and I am not at home, send for me ;
S'il vient quelqu'un et que je ne sois pas à la maison, envoyez-moi chercher.

SECTION III.

WHICH TENSE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MUST BE USED.

RULE 162.—*Which Tense of the Subjunctive Mood must be used.*

A verb required to be in the subjunctive mood by any of the preceding rules is usually put in the present, when the time of its action is present or future ; and in the preterite, when that time is past, or only conjectural. Examples :

- I fear lest he should come ;
Je crains qu'il ne vienne — future.
 I feared lest you would come ;
Je craignais que vous ne vinssiez — past.
 I shall be obliged to do it ; *Il faudra que je le fasse.*
 I should be obliged to do it ; *Il faudrait que je le fisse.*

RULE 163.—*Compound Tenses of the Subjunctive.*

The compound tenses of the subjunctive are used to express a past action, but prior to that expressed by the preceding verb : the compound of the present is used after the present or future of the indicative ; and their compounds and the compound of the preterite after any other tense. Examples :

I fear you have complained of me ;

Je crains que vous n'ayez fait des plaintes de moi.

I feared you would have complained of me ;

Je craignais que vous n'eussiez fait des plaintes de moi.

I do not believe he has learnt geography ; I did not believe he had learnt geography ;

Je ne crois pas qu'il ait appris la géographie — pres. Je ne croyais pas qu'il eût appris la géographie — past.

RULE 164.—*Imperfect of the Subjunctive.*

Though the first verb be in the present or future, the second is put in the imperfect of the subjunctive or in its compound, when the sentence implies a condition, and particularly if the conjunction *si* is followed by a verb in the imperfect of the indicative. Examples :

Do you think they would refuse me, if I requested it of them ?

Croyez-vous qu'ils me refusassent, si je les en priais ?

I do not think your brothers would have come, had it not been for me ;

Je ne crois pas que sans moi vos frères fussent venus.

Sans moi is a conditional expression which signifies, if I had not persuaded them to come.

CHAP. XVII.

OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS, *WOULD, COULD, SHOULD, AND MIGHT.*

THE words *would, could, should, and might*, which we have hitherto considered only as the distinctive marks of tenses, and with which we have conjugated all our verbs, regular and irregular, are also sometimes distinct verbs of themselves, and expressed in French by *vouloir, pouvoir, or devoir*, according to the following rules :

RULE 165.—1. *How to express will and would.*

When the words *will* and *would* are not joined to any verb, they are verbs of themselves, and must be expressed by *vouloir*, to be willing. Thus we say,

Why do you not do your exercise ? because I *will* not, or I am not willing ;

Pourquoi ne faites-vous pas votre thème ? parce que je ne veux pas.

If I am not married, it is because I *would* not, or have not been willing ;

Si je ne suis pas marié, c'est que je n'ai pas voulu.

The words *will* and *would*, though followed by another verb, are also expressed by the verb *vouloir*, when they are said emphatically. Examples :

I *will* be obeyed ; *Je veux qu'on m'obéisse.*

He *would* have you beg his pardon ;

Il voulait que vous lui demandassiez pardon.

2. *Should*.

The word *should* is a verb, and must be expressed in French by some tense of the verb *devoir*, when it is used for *ought to*, denoting *necessity* or *duty*. Examples :

You *should* not do that, since religion forbids it ;

Vous ne devez pas le faire, puisque la religion le défend.

If he wants money, he *should* ask me for some ;

S'il a besoin d'argent, il devrait m'en demander.

3. *Could* and *might*.

The words *could* and *might* are verbs when they denote *possibility*: they are both expressed in French by the verb *pouvoir*, to be able. Examples :

If I *could* do you that service, I would not refuse you :

Si je pouvais vous rendre ce service, je ne vous refuserais pas.

You *could* have done your exercise, if you had been *willing* ;

Vous auriez pu faire votre thème, si vous aviez voulu.

The words *may* and *can* are usually verbs, and expressed in French by the present tense of the verb *pouvoir*. Example :

You *can* write your letter before dinner ;

Vous pouvez écrire votre lettre avant de dîner.

N. B. The words *would*, *could*, and *might* may sometimes be rendered by a separate verb, or by the conditional of the following one : thus we say, *je pourrais vous payer, si je voulais*, or *je vous paierais, si je voulais* ; I *could* pay you if I *would* : but this being seldom the case, the foregoing explanation must be particularly attended to.

RULE 166. — *In which tense would and could are to be put in French.*

When the auxiliaries, *would*, *could*, *should*, *might*, are not followed by any verb, or by one only, they may be ex

pressed by the *imperfect*, the *conditional*, the *preterite* of the indicative, or of the subjunctive, according as the senses require it: thus, *I would*, may be rendered by *je voulais, je voulais, je voudrais*, or *je voulusse*; *I should*, by *je devais, je dus, je devrais*, or *je dusse*; and *I could*, by *je pouvais, je pus, je pourrais*, or *je pusse*. Examples :

I <i>could</i> do that yesterday ;	<i>Je pouvais faire cela hier.</i>
I <i>could</i> do it formerly ;	<i>Je pus le faire autrefois.</i>
I <i>could</i> do it if I would ;	<i>Je le pourrais si je voulais.</i>
I do not think I <i>could</i> do it ;	<i>Je ne crois pas que je le pusse.</i>

RULE 167. — *would and could, followed by two verbs.*

When the auxiliaries, *would, could, should, might*, are followed by two verbs, of which the last is in the participle past, they may be rendered in French, —

1. By the imperfect, or the conditional of *avoir*, and the participle *voulu, pu, or dû*, if you speak of a past time. Example :

You *should have* written to me, since you knew my address ;
Vous auriez dû m'écrire, puisque vous saviez mon adresse.

2. By the conditional of *vouloir, pouvoir, or devoir*, and the verb *avoir* in the infinitive mood, if you speak of something not yet done. Examples :

I would I had done my exercise ;
Je voudrais avoir fait mon thème.

These sentences, *I will have him pay me, He would have me betray my duty*, and others of the same sort, are rendered in French by *Je veux qu'il me paye, Il voudrait que je trahisse mon devoir* — as if it were, *I will that he pay me, He would that I betray my duty.*

Note. If you are at a loss in which tense to put the auxiliaries *would, could, should, or might*, consider *would* as a tense of the verb *to be willing*; *should* as a tense of *to be obliged*; *could* as a tense of *to be able*; and then put the verbs *pouvoir, vouloir, and devoir*, into the same tense in French as the verb *to be* is in English, and you will never be mistaken.

CHAP. XVIII.

OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

WE have already treated of the impersonal verbs, in Rule 160. They are used in the third person only, and are generally construed in French as in English, except the following — *il faut*, *il y a*, *il est*, and *c'est*, which require particular attention.

RULE 168. — *Use of the Impersonal Verb il faut, it must*

The verb *must* is always expressed by the impersonal *il faut*. The noun or pronoun, which in English is the subject of *must*, becomes in French the subject of the next verb, which is put in the subjunctive. Examples :

I must see him ; *Il faut que je le voie.*

You must come to-morrow ;

Il faut que vous veniez demain.

Your brother must write to him ;

Il faudra que votre frère lui écrive.

The verb *have*, which often comes after *must*, is sometimes put in the subjunctive : as, *il faut que j'aie des livres*, I must *have* books ; *Il faut que votre frère ait un chapeau*, your brother must *have* a hat : but it is more elegantly suppressed, and then the subject of *must* is accompanied by the preposition *à* : thus, *il me faut des livres ; il faut un chapeau à votre frère.*

The verb *should*, coming at the end of a sentence, is also usually expressed by *il faut*. Example :

Your exercise is not done as it *should be* ;

Votre thème n'est pas fait comme il faut.

RULE 169. — *Use of the Impersonal il y a, there is.*

The verb *to be*, preceded by the adverb *there*, becomes impersonal, and is expressed by the third person of the verb *avoir*, for every tense, thus : *il y a*, there is, or there are ; *il y avait*, there was, or there were ; *il y eut*, there were ; *il y aura*, there shall be ; *il y aurait*, there should be ; *il y ait*, there may be ; and *il y eût*, there might be. Examples :

*There are many difficulties in your affair ;
 Il y a beaucoup de difficultés dans votre affaire.
 There is no talent more shining than that of speaking ;
 Il n'y a point de talent plus brillant que celui de la parole.*

The verb *to be*, preceded by the word *some* or *many*, is also often expressed by the impersonal *il y a, il y avait*, with the partitive article, &c. as if it were, *there are some*.
 Examples :

*Some Christians are unworthy of that name ;
 Il y a des Chrétiens qui sont indignes de ce nom.
 Many friends are false ; Il y a bien de faux amis.*

The impersonal, *il y a, il y avait*, &c. is also used in French in three circumstances, where *there is* is not used in English.

1. To ask the distance from one place to another ; then it answers to the English words *how far* ? Examples :

*How far is it from Winchester to London ?
 Combien y a-t-il de Winchester à Londres ?*

2. To ask the number of a thing, in which case it answers to the words *how many* ? Examples :

*How many inhabitants are there in France ?
 Combien y a-t-il d'habitants en France ?
 How many kings are there in Europe ?
 Combien y a-t-il de rois en Europe ?*

3. To ask *how long* it is since a thing happened. Example :

*How long has your father been dead ?
 Combien y a-t-il que M. votre père est mort ?*

When the question is made by *il y a, il y avait*, &c. we generally answer by the same verb. Examples :

*Combien y a-t-il de Douvres à Calais ? Il y a dix lieues.
 Combien y a-t-il d'âmes en Angleterre ?
 Il y en a quinze millions.
 Combien y a-t-il que la guerre dure ? Il y a quatre ans.*

RULE 170. — *Distinction between il est and c'est, it is.*

The impersonal, *it is, it was, it will be*, &c. is expressed in French by *il est, il était, il sera*, &c. when it is followed by an adjective without reference to any thing expressed before, or by a substantive of time. Examples :

*It is six o'clock ; it is time to set out ;
 Il est six heures ; il est temps de partir.*

*It is difficult to please every body ;
Il est difficile de plaire à tout le monde.*

C'est is sometimes used before an adjective, in sentences like these : *c'est bon, c'est mauvais, &c.* but then they have reference to something mentioned before.

It is expressed by *c'est, c'était, ce fut, &c.* when it is followed by a substantive which has not reference to time, by a pronoun, or by a verb in the infinitive mood. Examples :

It is not fortune which renders us happy, it is virtue ;
Ce n'est pas l'argent qui nous rend heureux, c'est la vertu.
It is your turn to play ; C'est à vous à jouer.
Not to punish the wicked is to sanction vice ;
C'est autoriser le vice que de ne pas punir les méchants.

RULE 171. — it is, *expressed by c'est and ce sont.*

The impersonal, *it is*, *it was*, &c. followed by a substantive, or the pronouns *eux* or *elles*, in the plural, is expressed by *ce sont*, and not by *c'est*. Examples :

It is they who have seen him ; *Ce sont eux qui l'ont vu.*
It is your brothers who are in the right ;
Ce sont vos frères qui ont raison.
Not *c'est vos frères qui ont raison* — nor *c'est eux qui l'ont vu.*
Are those your sisters ? Yes, they are.
Sont-ce là vos sœurs ? Oui, ce sont elles.

The impersonal, *it is, it was, &c.* is always expressed by *c'est* or *c'était*, in the singular, before the pronouns *moi, toi, nous, vous*, and also before the pronouns *eux, elles*, and a substantive plural, when they are preceded by a preposition. Examples :

It is you who are in the wrong ; *C'est vous qui avez tort.*
It is their turn to answer ; *C'est à eux à répondre.*
It is of your brothers I complain ;
C'est de vos frères que je me plains.
Is it you who gave us this book ?
Est-ce vous qui nous avez donné ce livre ?

EXERCISE UPON THE GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.

RULE 129.—*Verbs which govern de.*

2. The impious mock at virtue, and ridicule religion.
—pie pl se moquer tourner en ridicule —

- 2. Do not *laugh* at others' misfortunes, instead of *pitying*
se moquer 102 *malheur au lieu de avoir pitié* 139
 them. — 1. You *abuse* the favours of fortune, and you do not *use*
en 57 *abuser* *favor* — *user*
 your victory with moderation. — 1. Death *pities* nobody, neither
victoire *modération* *mort avoir pitié* 116 119
 rich nor poor. — 1. Never *traduce* (any body).
du riche *pauvre* 120 *médire* *personne*
 3. Covetous men are *tormented* with the desire of increasing
avare * *tourmenter* *désir* *augmenter* 139
 what they have, and the fear of losing it. — 1. Nature *wants* few
 74 21 *crainte* *perdre* 57 — *avoir besoin* 18
 things. — 3. She is *contented* with little. — 1. It is *grievous* to *want*
se contenter *peu* *fâcheux de manquer*
 money in a foreign country.
argent *étranger* 31 *pays*

RULE 130.— *Verbs which govern à.*

- Flattery can *hurt* nobody but him whom it *pleases*. If we do not
—rie *nuire* * 128 77 *plaire*
forgive others, we must not expect that God will *forgive* us.
pardonner 102 *il ne faut pas espérer* *Dieu* * 159 57
 Remember, O my son! the counsel I *give* thee, it will *profit*
se souvenir *conseil* 83 *donner* 57 *profiter*
 thee much: *obey* the law of God. *Obeys* the king and all the
 57 *beaucoup obéir* *loi* *—*
 subordinate magistrates, *resist* your passions, *forgive* your enemies,
—donné 31 *—trat résister* *—* *ennemi*
hurt nobody, and never yield to the allurements of pleasure. He
nuire *—* 116 120 *céder* *—* *attirait* 4 77
 that *resists* his evil inclinations, deserves greater praises than he who
résister *mauvais* — *mériter* 8 *éloge* *—* 77
 conquers kingdoms, and cannot command his passions.
conquérir (*ir*) 7 *—der à* —

RULE 131.— *Verbs which govern no Preposition.*

- God *accepts* of our endeavours after holiness provided they
accepter *effort pour arriver à* 4 *sainteté pourvu qu'*
 be sincere. He that *was* never *acquainted* with adversity, says
 158 77 * 120 *connaître* *c* * 9 — *—té*
 Seneca, *knows* the world but on one side. If you *seek* for hap-
Sénèque connaître *monde* 128 *d'* *côté* *chercher* * *bon-*
 piness (any where) but in God, you are sure to be disappointed.
heur ailleurs que en — *de tromper*
 Henry the Fourth *looked* upon the good education of youth as
 11 *regarder* * *—* *jeunesse comme*
 a thing (upon which) depends the felicity of kingdoms and
chose *f* *d'où* *dépendre* *bonheur* 4
 people.
peuple *pl*

RULE 132.—Verbs which govern de with their regimen indirect.

It is the part of a fool to *accuse* another of a fault of which he is
c'est fait fou d'accuser un autre faute f 80
 himself guilty. Our infirmities often remind us of mortality,
61 coupable —té faire ressouvenir 57 —té
 sickness warns us of death, adversity ought to *admonish* us of our
*maladie avertir 57 —té devoir A * avertir 57*
 duties, and make us think of religion. To load an enemy with
*devoir faire penser 130 — * charger ennemi d'*
 injuries; to *exclude* a liar from society; to *free* one's country from
*injure * exclure menteur délivrer son pays*
 tyranny.
—nie

RULE 133.—Verbs which govern à with their regimen indirect.

We must *give* children an honest liberty, and *forgive* them the
il faut enfant honnête —té pardonner 52
 faults which they commit through ignorance or levity. Ask
faute commettre (ir) par — légèreté demander
 nothing of your friend, but what is right. Prefer virtue to riches.
** ami 128 74 juste préférer richesses*
 If we were allowed to *take* away from others, whatever we should
*s'il nous était permis de prendre * 102 107*
 think proper, the society of men would be soon overturned. When I
juger à propos bientôt renverser
 see birds build their nests with (so much) art and skill, I ask what
oiseau bâtir nid tant 18 — adresse demander
 master has *taught* them mathematics and architecture? Justice
maître enseigner c 52 mathématique — f
gives (every body) his own. Intemperate youth *transmits* a
donner chacun le sien une —pérée 31 jeunesse transmettre
 wasted body to (old age.)
épuisé 31 corps vieillesse

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.

It is the duty of a Christian to please God, to hurt nobody,
c'est devoir Chrétien de plaire 130 nuire 116
 and to do good even unto his enemies. An honest man ought to
*bien 7 même ennemi , honnête devoir A **
 endeavour to satisfy his creditors. We ought to use diligence,
*tâcher de satisfaire 131 créanciers devoir A * user 129 —*
 and not to abuse time, because the life we enjoy is short.
*122 * —ser 129 temps parce que 80 jouir 129 court*

Fortune often snatches away wealth from the rich ; but she cannot

— f ôter 133 * richesses riche mais

take away probity from the virtuous.

ôter 133 * probité vertueux

Solomon asked wisdom of God ; God said unto him : Because

Sa— demander c 133 Dieu dire c lui 57 parce que

thou hast asked this thing of me, and hast not asked long life

demandér me 57 que une longue

nor riches, nor the life of thy enemies, I have given thee a wise

richesses 7 ennemi donner 57 31

and understanding heart, also riches and honour. We cannot easily

intelligent cœur et richesses 7 honneur aisément

withstand the allurements of pleasure.

résister 130 attrait plaisir 4

The country is encompassed on all sides with craggy rocks, so

pays environner de côté de escarpé 31 rocher si bien

that it needs few troops to defend it ; such is the fruitfulness

qu'on a besoin 129 peu 18 pour le 57 telle fertilité

of the soil, that it is filled with its own riches ; and such is the plenty

terrain se nourrir 129 propre richesse telle quantité

of fountains and woods, that it is watered with abundance of

fontaine bois arroser 129 un grand nombre

rivulets, and affords the diversions of hunting. I will abuse your

ruisseau procurer plaisir chasse abuser 129

patience no longer. Did you think of my business ? Has he

— davantage penser v 130 affaire

perceived your trick ? Resist the wicked. He will not obey

s'apercevoir 129 tour résister H 130 méchants obéir

his master.

130

EXERCISE UPON THE INFINITIVE MOOD.

OF THE PRESENT.

RULE 134.—*Infinitive without Preposition.*

1. Should you be as rich as Cræsus, if you do not know how to

quand x 37 Crésus 123 savoir * *

put bounds to your desires, you will always be poor. — 2. To

mettre borne 7 désir

keep up acquaintance with vicious people is to authorise vice. —

vivre familièrement vicieux * c'est * autoriser m

1. A wise man desires nothing, but what he can get justly,

le sage * désirer * 128 74 gagner avec justice

use with sobriety, and distribute cheerfully. — 2. To mourn

consommer avec sobriété — buer avec joie pleurer

without measure, is folly, not to mourn at all is insensibility. — 1.

sans mesure c'est folie 122 du tout c'est — té

Men ought to *shun* vice and stick to virtue. Those who pretend
on devoir A *éviter* *pratiquer* * 77 *prétendre*
 to be learned, are often very ignorant. I will go and see him to-
 — * le 57

morrow, if I have time.
demain *le temps*

RULE 135.—*Infinitive with de.*

You have plenty of time to consider that question. Reading is a
tout le *examiner* — *lecture* 9
 method of conferring with men, who, in every age, have been the
manière *conférer avec* 4 106 *siècle* *pl se sont*
 most distinguished for their learning, of (becoming acquainted with)
 — *gués* *par* *science* *connaître*
 the result of their mature reflections, and of contemplating at leisure
résultat *mûre* *réflexions* — *pler* *à loisir*
 the finished productions of good authors. It is folly to think of
meilleur — *auteur* 170 *folie* *penser à*
 escaping censure, and a weakness to (be affected) (by it). He
échapper à 4 — * *faiblesse* *s'affecter* *en* 58
 had not the courage to resist. I discover no reason to postpone my
c — *résister* *découvrir* 121 *raison* *différer*
 journey.
voyage

I feel a great obligation to you for having spoken in my
avoir — 47 *en*
 behalf. Receive my thanks for having (exerted yourself so much)
faveur *remercement* *prendre tant de peine*
 for the success of my affair.
succès *affaire* f

Indeed, we are too good to listen to such nonsense. That
en vérité *trop* *écouter* * 8 *pareil* *sottise* f pl
 man is very curious, to ask (so many) questions. You are very
bien *faire* *tant* 18 —
 amiable in having come to pay us a visit. She is too complaisant,
aimable *être* *venir* * *rendre* 57 * *—te* —
 in obliging a man who deserves it so little. He is not able to go
—ger *mériter* 50 *si peu* *capable*
 so far.
si loin

It is impossible to please every body. It (is important) to be
 — *à tout le monde* — *—ter*
 careful when one is in a public situation. It ought to (be
soigneux 98 — 31 — *devoir* A *
 enough) for you not to have been punished; and it is unjust to
suffire * 57 *injuste*
 ask a reward for an action which deserved punishment.
demander récompense — *mériter* B *punition*
 would be advantageous for a nation to be governed by men
avantageux *gouverner* 7

entirely free from passions; but it appears impossible to find
entièrement exempt — *trouver* 7
 such perfect beings on the earth.
si parfait 31 *êtres sur*

6. The law of nature forbids us to do injustice to one another.
défendre * *se faire tort* pl 114
 —6. God commands us to love our enemies, and to do them good.
commander 57 *aimer ennemi faire leur* 57 *bien* 7
 —6. They deserve to be encouraged, who undertake to serve the
 78 *mériter* *entreprendre servir*
 public.—6. Never promise to do a thing, when it is not in your
 120 *promettre chose quand*
 power to do it.—5. I propose to go and see your mother to-night.
pouvoir se proposer * *voir ce soir*

RULE 136.—Infinitive with à.

I have found a fine garden to let. Is your house to sell or
trouver louer 92 *vendre*
 to let? I have (so much) work to do that I have not a moment
tant 18 *ouvrage faire* —
 to lose. You know my disposition to oblige my friends. I think
perdre connaître — *ger ami croire*
 I perceive in him a kind of repugnancy to learn
 * *apercevoir en* 49 *sorte f répugnance apprendre (ir)*
 mathematics.
mathématiques pl

You know his courage in facing dangers. Your son spends all
connaître — *affronter* — *passer*
 his time in laughing and playing. A true Christian places
rire jouer vrai Chrétien mettre (ir)
 all his happiness in relieving the unfortunate. The true hero
soulager malheureux pl héros
 experiences an infinite satisfaction in sacrificing himself for his
éprouver — *ni* 31 — *fier se* 57
 country. There is more glory in dying like Nelson than in living
pays 169 18 *mourir comme vivre*
 in unmerited honours.
au sein des honneurs qu'on n'a pas mérités

Is French easy to learn? Is that question difficult to resolve?
le 92 *facile apprendre* — 92 *difficile résoudre*
 Let a prince be slow to punish, and quick to reward. Charity is
lent punir prompt récompenser — *té*
 ready to sacrifice her own interests to those of others. One thing
prêt — *fier propre intérêt* 76 102
 useful to acquire is to know how to live contented with the
utile acquérir c'est de savoir * * *content de*
 situation (in which) we have been placed by Divine Providence.
 — *où* 99 — —

True wisdom consists in knowing one's duty exactly, true
vrai sagesse — *ter connaître son devoir exactement*

eloquence in speaking of it clearly, and true piety in doing what
é— en 57 clairement piété faire 74
 we know to be good. Love to help the unfortunate, and to comfort
on savoir (ir) bien H soulager malheureux pl consoler
 the afflicted. A good education teaches us to behave² well¹ to
*affligé pl apprendre * se conduire envers*
 every body. The latter part of a wise man's life is (taken up)
tout le monde dernier partie 31 17 employer
 in curing the false opinions and prejudices which he had contracted
se défaire des faux — 10 préjugé B —ter
 in the former.
premier

RULE 137.—*Infinitive with de or à.*

1. I will not fail to punish you, if you neglect to do your
manquer punir 57 manquer
 exercise.— 2. You ought to endeavour to learn your lessons
thème devoir x 134 apprendre leçon
 better. That man aims at nothing but ruining those who trust
*mieux * 128 ruiner 76 se fier*
 to him.— 3. I long to see your mother; she delays long in
49 il me tarde voir tarder longtemps à
 coming.— 4. Come and see us to-morrow. Is your father at home?
*venir venir * 57 92 père chez lui*
 — 4. No, he is just (gone out). As religion obliges us to love princes,
venir sortir f obliger 57 à aimer
 so princes are obliged to protect us.
ainsi de protéger

RULE 138.—*Infinitive with pour.*

He who tells a lie, (is not sensible) how great a task
*77 faire (ir) mensonge m ne savoir (ir) pas quelle * * tâche f*
 he undertakes; for he may be forced to invent twenty
entreprendre (ir) pouvoir (ir) forcer d'en inventer
 more to maintain that one. It is necessary to know the human
autres soutenir le premier 135 connaître 31
 heart, to judge well of others. God has not given us a heart to
juger des autres 57
 hate one another. He who has a good estate, and makes use
nous haïr 114 pl 77 une belle fortune f qui usage
 of it to promote the glory of God, and to help those who are
en 57 procurer soulager 77
 in need, is beloved by every body. Palamedes invented the
dans le besoin aimer de tout le monde —14 inventer c
 game of chess, to serve for diversion to his soldiers, and to teach
jeu échecs servir d'amusement soldats apprendre
 them the stratagems of war.
52 stratagème 4 guerre

RULE 139.—*Infinitive instead of the Participle present.*

After *having* terminated some affairs at home, I shall begin
 —ner 104 chez moi commencer
 by paying some visits; and after *having* dined with a friend of mine,
 rendre 104 —te 70
 I will spend the evening with you. Nobody can be happy, without
 passer soirée 116
 practising virtue. We should never undertake (any thing) before
 pratiquer devoir x 120 entreprendre rien avant de
 having consulted the will of God, and implored his divine assistance.
 —ter volonté —rer 31 —
 If Titus passed one day without doing good to (any body) he
 passer x bien 7 quelqu'un
 used to say, I have lost that day.
 avoir x coutume 135 perdre journée

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE INFINITIVE with de, à, pour, sans, &c.

Youth cannot forbear gaming. All men are liable to
 les jeunes gens 134 s'empêcher 135 jouer sujet 132 se
 mistake. Men are born to labour as birds to fly. There
 tromper naître (ir) 138 travailler oiseau 138 voler Il y
 are persons whom we hate, others whom we love, without knowing
 a personne 7 que haïr d'autres aimer 139 savoir
 why; the one is injustice, the other a weakness. The desire of
 une —f faiblesse désir 135
 deserving the praises which are given us strengthens our virtue.
 mériter louange 98 donner 57 fortifier
 Giddy minds begin many things without ever finishing any.
 légers 31 esprits plusieurs 139 en finir aucune

There are two sorts of curiosity; the one of interest which incites
 il y a sorte f 16 —tés intérêt porter
 us to desire to learn what can be useful to us; the other of
 136 désirer d'apprendre 74 utile 57
 pride, which proceeds from the desire of knowing what others are
 orgueil venir désir 139 savoir 74
 ignorant of. The greatest wisdom of a man consists in knowing
 ignorant * sagesse —ter 136 connaître
 his own follies, and in taking measures to (make amends) for
 folie prendre 7 mesure 138 réparer *
 them.
 les 57

Life is given us to glorify God, and to save our souls by good
 138 —fier 138 sauver âme 8
 actions. In general, young men are more fond of hearing
 — les jeunes gens * plutôt aimer 136 entendre

strange things, than ready to believe them. Death is an
étrange 31 7 *qu'ils ne sont prompts* 136 *croire* 57
 eternal decree, to which all men ought to submit. Men often
éternel 31 *décret* 81 *devoir* A 134 *se soumettre* 172
 think of death when it is too late; and begin to study how
penser 130 *trop tard* *commencer* 136 *apprendre* *
 to live, when they should learn how to die.
136 vivre quand *devoir* x *apprendre* * 136 *mourir*

People are often afraid of seeing themselves such as they are,
on * *craindre* 137 *voir* *se* 57 *tel qu'on*
 because they are not what they should be. Nobody (is able) to
parce qu'on 74 *on devoir* x 116 *pouvoir* 134
 write well, who has not learnt to think well, to arrange his
écrire 172 *s'il* *apprendre* 136 *penser* 136 —*ger*
 thoughts methodically, and to express them with propriety.
idée *avec méthode* 136 *exprimer* 57 —*été*
 To be a Christian, is to follow the precepts delivered by Jesus
 134 * *Chrétien c'est* * *suivre* *précepte donné* *Jésus*
 Christ, to love what he loved, and to condemn what he condemned.
 — * *aimer* 74 B * *condamner* 74 B

EXERCISE UPON THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

RULE 140.—*Participle present variable and invariable.*

1. The loadstone has *surprising* effects. — 1. Your sister is a
aimant *surprenant effet* 7
charming girl. — 2. The soldiers of Alexander, *forgetting* their wives
charmant *oublier*
 and children, looked upon the Persian gold as their plunder.
regarder B * *de la Perse* 31 or *butin*
 — 1. *Lowing* oxen, and *bleating* sheep, came in flocks; they could
mugissant bœufs *bélant brebis* pl f B *foule* on B
 not find stables enough to shelter them.
trouver étable 18 138 *mettre à couvert* 57

2. The Asiatics, *remembering* the dignity of Berenice, and *pitying*
 —*tigue* *se ressouvenir* 129 *avoir pitié*
 her hard fortune, sent her aid. — 1. As on the margin of
 129 *mauvais* — *envoyer* c 52 *secours* 7 *comme* *bord*
 a brook a zephyr, with a *cooling* breeze, revives the *languishing*
ruisseau *rafratchissant haleine* f *ranimer* *languissant*
 flocks, which the *burning* heat of the summer consumes, so this
troupeau *brûlant chaleur* *été* —*mer ainsi*
 speech allayed the goddess's despair.
discours appaiser B *déesse* 17 *désespoir*

RULE 141.—*Indicative used instead of the Participle present.*

Clouds and fogs (are formed) from the vapours arising from
nuage *brouillard* *se former* *vapeur* *s'élever* A

the earth. Variety of colours depends on the position and order of
 —*été* 4 *couleur dépendre de* — *ordre*
 the objects *diversifying* the light in the reflection of their rays. Alex-
objet diversifier A *lumière réflexion rayon*
 ander, at the point of death, asked his friends *standing* about him
sur — *mourir* 133 *se tenir* B *auprès de*
 if they thought they could find a king like him. Men act most
croire (ir) B 83 a *comme* 49 *agir*
 frequently from motives *arising* from present circumstances.
souvent par motif 7 *venir* A 31 *circonstance*

RULE 142.—by expressed by en.

By (taking revenge), a man is but equal with his enemy; by
se venger 128 *égal à* *ennemi*
 passing it over, he is his superior. You may easily get praise
pardonner lui * *lui* * *supérieur* *obtenir louanges*
 by complying (with the) wishes of the people you converse
 7 *vous conformer aux désir* *personne* 83 — *ser*
 with, and by preferring others to yourself. If you have rashly
préférer *imprudemment*
 engaged to do a thing which ought not to be done, do not
s'engager à *devoir* A *se fuir* *
 make bad worse by persisting to do it. The grace
rendre H *le mal plus grand* — *ter* 136 *la* 57
 of God works upon us, by suggesting good thoughts and keeping
opérer en *suggérer* 8 *pensée éloigner*
 off bad ones.
 * *les mauvaises* *

EXERCISE UPON THE PARTICIPLE PAST.

RULE 143.—Cases in which the Participle past is variable.

2. He has arrived from France. She has arrived from Spain.—
être arriver / *Espagne*
 1. A noble, but confused thought, is a diamond covered with dust.—
 31 *confus pensée diamant couvrir de poussière*
 1. Alms given without ostentation acquire new merit.—2.
aumône f — *acquérir (ir) un mérite m*
 Letters and writing have been invented to speak to the eye.—2. The
 f *écriture inventer* 138 pl
 wicked are always tormented by their own conscience.—2. Virtuous
méchants tourmenter * — *vertueux*
 people are esteemed, and the impious despised.—3. My sisters (have
personne f estimer *impie m sont mépriser*
 been much amused) in your company.—3. The accounts (have
s'amuser dans — *gnie* *compte m*
 not been found) right.—3. Both armies have fought with the
se trouver juste *les deux armée se battre (ir)*

greatest intrepidity. — 4. The letter which I have *received* is long.
intrépidité *lettre f* *recevoir* —
 — 4. The faults he has *committed* are pardonable. — 4. The house
faute f 83 *commettre (ir)* *pardonnable*
 which I have *bought* is new. — 4. The horses which you have *sold*
achetée neuf *vendre*
 me are very good. — 4. The women whom I have *seen* are young
 57
 and handsome.

RULE 144.—Cases in which the Participle past is invariable.

These two rules, if well understood, will remove one of the greatest difficulties of the French language.

1. Happy the princes, who have always *used* their power for
heureux *employer* *pouvoir*
 the good of the people. Demetrius being informed that the Athe-
bien *peuple pl* ** informer*
 nians had *overthrown* his statues; they have not, replied he, *over-*
B détruire *statue* *répliqua-t-il*
thrown the valour which has *caused* them (to be erected) (to me).
valeur *fait 57* *ériger* *me 57*
 Your sisters have *made* great progress in French. We have *dined*
faire 8 *progrès dans le* *dîner*
 to-day sooner than usual. I have *written* a letter to my father. We
plus tôt à l'ordinaire *écrire*
 have *played* much to-day.
jouer

2. I must finish the letter which I have *begun* to write. The
il faut que 157 *lettre f* *commencer*
 rules which I had *advised* you to learn are useful. — (How many)
conseiller *195 apprendre* *utile* *que*
 men commit the same faults which they had *resolved* to
d'hommes commettre (ir) *faute f* *B résoudre (ir)*
 avoid.
d'éviter

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE PARTICIPLES.

Philip sent deputies to the Scythians desiring a part
Philippe envoyer c député 7 *Scythes pour demander partie*
 of the expenses of the siege; the Scythians, alleging the barrenness
frais — *m* *alléguer 140* *stérilité*
 of their land, replied, that having no riches sufficient to satisfy
terre répondre c *richesse* — *sant 138* — *faire*
 so great a king, they thought it more unfit to pay but a
roi *croire (ir) B* ** moins convenable de payer 128*

part, than to refuse the whole. Grovelling geniuses never attain
partie 40 —ser 105 rampant 140 génie 120 s'élever à
the sublime. This actor performs with charming taste and
— *acteur représenter un 27 charmant 140 goût*
dignity. As a flower blowing in the morning (sweetly
— *té de même qu' fleur 141 s'épanouir matin répand un doux*
perfumes) the fields around the whole day, but fading towards
parfum dans champ d'alentour jour 140 se flétrir vers
the evening, loses its lively colours, languishes and droops its beautiful
soir perdre vif 30 couleur languir pancher beau
head; so was the son of Ulysses brought to the gates of death.
tête f ainsi B — arriver porte

All will respect the magistrates who, forgetting their
tout le monde respecter A magistrat 140 oublier
own interest, observing the law, favouring virtue, and restraining
— *ver loi favoriser réprimer*
vice, seek the welfare of their country. The fleet destined to the
m chercher bien pays flotte —ner 143
siege of Troy was composed of 1300 ships. The Cardinal Riche-
— *Troye B —ser 143 vaisseau de*
lieu represented to the king the great pains he had taken and
représenter c roi peine f 83 B 143 prendre (ir)
the services he had done to the state. The books which I have bought
— *m B 143 rendre état livre m 143 acheter*
are well bound. The watch which I have sold is a new one. We
*relier montre f 143 vendre * neuf * on*
acquire a greater honour by defending others than by accusing
acquérir (ir) honneur 142 défendre accuser
them.

EXERCISE UPON THE CONCORD OF VERBS.

RULE 145.— *The Verb agrees with its Subject.*

I read the Bible. Thou speakest too fast. He writes well.
lire (ir) Bible f trop vite écrire (ir)
We are all mortal. You are young. They are happy. My brother
mortel jeune heureux
and sister will dance. Virtue and vice have different consequences.
63 danser m 31 effet 7

RULE 146.— *The Verb with Subjects of different Persons.*

You and I will play. You and they were of the same opinion.
vous jouer eux B —
You or your father could lend me the two hundred pounds I
père 165 B prêter cent livre dont j'ai
want. You or your brother have taken my book. Louis the
besoin prendre (ir) livre m Louis

fourteenth having said to the earl of Grammont, I know your
 11 comte savoir (ir)
 age, the bishop of Senlis, who is eighty-four years of age, told me
 évêque avoir * * 153
 that you have studied in the same class; that bishop, Sire, replied
 étudier répliquer
 the earl, does not speak right, for neither he nor I have ever studied,
 150 accuser juste ni 119 45

RULE 147.—*The Verb after the relative Pronoun qui.*

It was I who destroyed the fortifications of that city. It was you
 ce c détruire — ville ce c
 who refused my request. It is you or your brother who have taken
 —ser c requête f ce 146 prendre (ir)
 my book. It was you who came last night. It is they who have
 livre ce c venir c hier au soir 171
 done it. It is I who have seen him. It is my brothers who have
 faire le 57 ce voir (ir) le 171
 discovered the plot. It will be you who shall go there.
 découvrir complot aller *

EXERCISE UPON THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

RULE 148.—*Use of the Present Tense.*

History is the picture of times and men, and consequently the
 histoire tableau temps 21 conséquemment
 image of inconstancy and caprice. The rainbow (is formed) by
 —ce — m arc-en-ciel se former de
 the beams of the sun reflected by drops of rain. I (set out) for
 rayon soleil réfléchir 143 goutte de pluie partir
 France to-morrow, if it be fine weather. I learn French,
 5 demain faire (ir) temps apprendre (ir)
 and my sister Italian. I go to-night to the opera. God is immutable.
 Italien ce soir immuable
 I (set out) to-morrow for Paris.

RULE 149.—*Imperfect of the Indicative.*

1. Orpheus, according to the fable, mingled so agreeably his
 Orphée selon * — f mêler agréablement
 voice with his lute, that he stopped the course of rivers, calmed tem-
 voix à luth arrêter cours rivière calmer tem-
 pests, attracted the most savage beasts, and (gave motion) to the trees
 pête attirer 44 sauvage bête f émouvoir (ir) * arbre
 and rocks. — 2. I was writing you a letter when I was informed of
 rocher 21 écrire 57 c —mer
 your arrival. — 2. What were you doing this morning in my room
 arrivée que faire ce matin chambre f
 when I found you. — 2. I was doing my exercise.
 ai trouvé 57 thème m

1. Alfred *was* a great king; he *possessed* all the virtues of a wise
 man, which *were* so well regulated, that each *prevented* the other from
 exceeding its proper bounds; he *knew* how to unite the most en-
 terprising spirit with the coolest moderation, and the most severe
 justice with the greatest lenity. The walls of Babylon *were* two
 hundred feet high and fifty broad.

RULE 150.—*Preterite of the Indicative.*

Cæsar *ascended* to the empire by very sanguinary means. Alex-
 ander, with forty thousand men, *attached* Darius who had six hun-
 dred thousand; he *gave* him battle twice, *defeated* him, and
 made his mother, wife, and daughters prisoners. Cato *killed* himself
 lest he should fall into the hands of Cæsar.

Hardly *was* Cæsar entered into the senate, when the conspirators
 threw themselves upon him, and *pierced* him with daggers. Marius
was (ill treated) by fortune; however, he did not lose his courage.

RULE 151.—*Future and Conditional.*

3. As soon as my education is finished, I shall go to Italy, to
 visit the Roman antiquities. — 3. When you *are* ready, we *will* go
 (and take a walk). — 3. The Lord said unto Cain, who had killed
 his brother Abel: When thou *tillest* the ground, it *shall* not *yield*
 unto thee; a fugitive and vagabond thou *shalt be* on the earth.*

1. There *will* always be wars among men, as long as they are am-
 bitious. — 2. I *would have* lent him fifty pounds if I had known

* That is, thou shalt be fugitive, &c.

he wanted it. — 1. I hope you *will* not refuse me the favour I
qu'il en avait besoin *espérer* —ser *faveur* 83
 beg of you.
demander *

RULE 152.—*Neither Future nor Conditional after si.*

1. If your person *were* as gigantic as your desires, the whole
personne 37 *—tesque* *désir* 31 *entier*
 world could not contain you; your right hand would touch the
monde *contenir* 31 *droit f*
 east, and your left the west (at the) same time; and, if you *should*
orient *gauche* *occident* *en* *même temps*
 have conquered all mankind, you would attempt to subdue
conquérir (ir) *la terre* *entreprendre (ir)* 135 *soumettre*
 nature; said (the Scythian ambassador to Alexander).
 — *l'ambassadeur des Scythes* *Alexandre*

2. I do not know if my father *would* come, (if you were
savoir (ir) *venir en cas que vous*
 to invite him). — 1. If I *would* sell my horse, I could have
l'invitassiez *vendre* *cheval* *pouvoir (ir)* x
 forty pounds (for him). — 1. If you *would* study well, your master
livre *en* 57 *étudier*
 would love you, and you would make great progress. — 1. I should
aimer *faire (ir)* *progrès* 8
 become rich, if I *would* continue my trade. — 2. I do not know
devenir riche *—nuer* *commerce m*
 if my brother *will* consent to it.
 —tir y

RULE 153.—*Compound of the Present.*

I *breakfasted* this morning at eight o'clock, and I *dined* at three
déjeuner *matin* *huit heures* *dîner*
 in the afternoon. When *did* you *learn* your lesson? I *learnt*
heures après-midi *avoir* *apprendre (ir)* *leçon* 143
 it after dinner. Why did you not *learn* it before? because I *was*
 143 *la auparavant* *parce que*
sick all the morning. Have you *done* your exercise? No, I *have*
malade *matinée* *thème*
 not *done* it yet; but I will do it to-night. Where *did* you
encore *ce soir* *où* *se*
walk out to-day? I *have* not *walked* out because it was not
promener * *aujourd'hui* ? * *parce que* *faire* x
 fine weather.
beau temps

RULE 154.—*Other Compound Tenses.*

1. Yesterday I *had finished* my work before six o'clock. — 2. As
ouvrage *heure*

soon as I *had* dined, I (went out). He *had* no sooner acted in that
dès que *sortir* 150 *agir de la*
 manner than he repented. When she *had* perceived her error, she
sorte *s'en repentir* 150 *s'apercevoir de*
 was quite ashamed. — 1. Darius in his defeat being obliged to drink
 150 108 *honteux* *défaite f* *—ger de boire*
 water full of mud, assured his soldiers that he *had* never drank
 7 *plein* *boue assurer* 150 à *soldat*
 with more pleasure. The king *had* named an admiral when he
plus 18 *plaisir* *nommer* *amiral* *on lui*
 heard of you. — 2. As soon as the parliament *had* voted against the
parler c *aussi-tôt que* *parlement* *voter contre*
 continuation of the war, the peace was made.
 — *guerre* *paix* *se faire c*

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

William the Conqueror was one of the greatest generals of his
Guillaume *Conquérant* 149
 age; in him (were united) activity, vigilance, and intrepidity; he
siècle m en *s'unir* 149 *—té* 9 *—* *—té*
 was strict in his discipline, and kept his soldiers in perfect
 149 *strict* *la* *—f* *tenir* 149 *dans un parfait*
 obedience, yet he preserved their affection: he (was perfect master of)
obéissance *conserver* 150 *—* *149 posséder à fond*
 the military art; his aspect was noble, his constitution robust, and
militaire 31 *—* *149* *—* *—te*
 nobody but himself could bend his bow.
personne que *lui ne pouvoir (ir)* *bander* *arc*

Idomeneus, one of the bravest kings of the Greeks, on the point
Idoménée 31 *roi* *Grec sur* *—*
 of being shipwrecked, made a vow to sacrifice to Neptune the first
 135 *faire naufrage* 150 * *vœu* 135 *sacrifier* *—*
 object he should meet on his arrival in his country, should he
objet *rencontrer à* *arrivée* *pays si* 152
 escape the present danger; he was unhappy enough to meet
échapper au 31 *—* *assez malheureux* 138 *rencontrer*
 with his own son; he killed him, and was for that action obliged to
 * 150 *le* *pour* *—* *de*
 quit his country.
quitter *pays*

Cæsar and Cato had the same degree of glory, but they acquired
Caton 149 *degré* *gloire* *acquérir*
 it by different ways; Cæsar was celebrated for his generosity,
 154 31 7 *voie f* 149 *célèbre* *par* *générosité*
 Cato for his great integrity; in the former, the miserable found a
intégrité *premier* *trouver* 149

sanctuary, in the latter the guilty met with certain destruc-
*refuge m dernier coupable trouver 149 * un 31 —*
 tion: Cæsar aimed at the sovereign command, and desired new
aspirer 149 30 commandement 149 nouveau
 wars to display his military talents; as for Cato, his only study
guerre 138 déployer 31 — quant à seul étude f
 was moderation, a regular conduct, and a rigorous severity; he
149 — régulier 31 conduite f rigoureux 31
 contended in bravery with the brave, in modesty with the
rivaliser 149 en bravoure — modestie homme
 modest, and in integrity with the upright.
— —té juste

After Alexander had conquered Porus, he not only spared
après que 154 vaincre (ir) non-seulement épargner
 his life, but allowed him to retain his title of king, and
150 vie permettre (ir) lui 57 135 garder titre m roi
 enlarged his dominions. As soon as the Israelites had passed
agrandir 150 état aussi-tôt que 154 passer
 the Red Sea they forgot the miracle that had saved them.
Rouge 31 Mer oublier 150 — m sauver 143 les 57.

EXERCISE UPON THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

RULE 155.—*Superlatives and Indeterminate Pronouns govern the Subjunctive.*

1. Homer, who invented the fables of gods and demi-gods, is the
—ter 150 — 14 dieu — dieu
 most agreeable liar that ever was. The most just comparison
menteur jamais 163 31 —raison
 that can be made of love is that of a fever; we have no
*162 on pouvoir (ir) * faire amour 76 fièvre f 98*
 more power over the one, than over the other, on account of its
18 pouvoir m à raison 63
 violence and duration.
— durée

2. There is no man but would be very sorry, if he knew
il n'y a personne qui ne 164 fâché savoir (ir)
 all that is thought of him, whatever merit he might have. How-
*149 ce qu'on * penser 46 quelque mérite 164 109*
 ever ingenious the Greeks and Romans were, yet they neither found
ingénieux Grec Romain trouver
 out the art of printing books, nor of engraving prints.
** 150 — 135 imprimer 7 ni celui graver estampe 7*

3. You are the first person I have seen to-day. 3. Lu-
personne f 83 voir (ir) aujourd'hui La-
 cretius and Pliny are the only (natural philosophers) whom the
crèche Pline seul naturalists
 Romans had.
Romain aient eu 143

RULE 156.—*Verbs which always govern the Subjunctive Mood, after the Conjunction que.*

Who doubts that true riches (are placed) in virtue? The
douter 30 *richesse ne consister* 162 *dans*
 Egyptians did not doubt that certain plants and animals were
Egyptien 149 27 *plante f* *ne* 162
 divinities. In the mean time Eucharis said to Telemachus, in a
divinité 7 *en* * *temps* — 150 *Télémaque d'*
 jeering tone: Are you not afraid that Mentor will chide you
moqueur 31 *ton* *craindre* — *ne gronder* 57
 for coming a hunting without him? Almost all the East ordered
de venir à la chasse sans presque Orient 150
 divine honours to be rendered, and temples to be built to Jason;
que 31 7 *honneur* 162 *rendre que* 7 — *bâtir à* —
 but many years after, Parmenio ordered them (to be pulled down),
mais Parménion faire 150 *les abattre* 134
 lest the name of (any one) should be greater than that of
de peur que 158 *nom quelqu'un ne* 76
 Alexander.
Alexandre

RULE 157.—*Impersonal Verbs which govern the Subjunctive.*

It is an unjust thing, that those who deserve well of their country
 * *injuste* * *mériter* *pays*
 are not rewarded. It concerns the public that the wicked be
 162 *récompenser* 143 *importe au méchants*
 punished. There is no state which cannot be utterly overthrown
punir 169 *état ne pouvoir (ir) totalement détruire*
 by civil wars. It (is enough) that we do not neglect any thing that
guerre suffire 98 *négliger rien de ce qui*
 can contribute to the success of an undertaking; disappoint-
pouvoir (ir) — buer succès entreprise f les contre-
 ments ought not to lessen the merit of it. If you (are desirous)
temps devoir à 134 *diminuer mérite en* 57 *vouloir (ir)*
 of being esteemed, you must be obliging, polite, and affable
 134 *estimer il faut que vous — geant poli* —
 to every body.
 34 *tout le monde*

RULE 158.—*Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive.*

(Keep a strict watch) over all your senses, lest * intemperance
veillez avec soin sur sens de peur que —
 (get the master of) you, and lest your senses be the instruments
maîtriser vous 57 *que servir d'* —

* A moins que, de crainte que, and de peur que, require the particle *ne* before the next verb, as we have said before, Rule 127.

of polluting your soul. Although Antiochus *approved* of Hannibal's advice, yet he would not act according to it, lest the victory *should be* attributed to Hannibal, not to him.

pour souiller âme *quoique* — *approuver* * An-
nibal 17 *avis* *vouloir* (ir) c *agir en conséquence de peur que*
victoire *et non pas à lui*

We despise the world when we know it thoroughly, but we give ourselves to it before we *know* it, and the heart is lost, before reason has enlightened it. You will learn very well, provided you take pains. I will study (so much), that I hope I shall speak French before it is long, though I am convinced that it is a difficult language.

mépriser monde m *connaître* parfaitement
livrer nous y 58 *avant que* le cœur *perdre* avant
raison has enlightened it. You will learn very well, provided
que raison 162 *éclairer* le 5? *apprendre* *poursuivre*
you take pains. I will study (so much), that I hope I
que prendre de la peine *étudier* tant *espérer*
shall speak French before it is long, though I am convinced
Français *longtemps quoique* *convaincre* (ir)
that it is a difficult language.
ce difficile 31 *langue* f

VERBS AND CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN SOMETIMES THE INDICATIVE AND SOMETIMES THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

RULE 159.—*Verbs which govern the Subjunctive in one sense, and the Indicative in another.*

I think my father *will come*. I do not think he *will come*. Do you think he *will come*? I perceive that you *have deceived* me. I find you frequent bad company, you will lose my friendship. I hope they *will make* peace this year. Do you hope they *will make* peace? Let us go, if you think it *will be* fine weather. I thought this morning it *would be* fine weather, but now I do not think it *is*, because it begins to rain.

croire (ir) *venir*
s'apercevoir *tromper*
s'apercevoir 83 *fréquenter* 8 — *gnie* *perdre* *ami-*
tié *espérer* on *faire* *paix* *année* on
partir
croire 153 *matin* *à présent*
cela être 136

RULE 160.—*Impersonal Verbs which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.*

It is certain that unforeseen evils are more grievous than others. It is not certain that a man can be happy in a desert. It is evident that a nation cannot be happy under a tyrannical government. It is

certain *imprévu* 31 *mal* *fâcheux* *autre*
désert
sous — *que gouvernement*

not certain that a republic is the best government for a great nation. It is probable he *will* do it. It is probable she *will* do it.

It is not probable they *will* do it.

RULE 161.—Conjunctions which govern the Indicative and Subjunctive.

Employ all the days of your youth, so that you may fulfil
employer h jeunesse de manière que remplir
 honourably all the duties of your station. Your son conducts himself
honorablement devoir état se conduire
 in such a manner that he gains general esteem. I ask nothing
*de * * manière gagner si estime f demander 118*
 from you except that you do your task, and obey your
** vous 57 sinon que tâche f que vous obéir à*
 master. I have nothing to tell you, except that I have done,
rien à 57 sinon que
 and shall always do, what religion commands all Christians.
que je 74 — —der à Chrétien

RULE 162.—Which Tense must be used.

A man ought to conduct himself so honourably, that no motives
devoir a se conduire si 121 motif
 should be able to induce him to an action unworthy of his rank.
pouvoir (ir) — indigne rang
 The apostles received the gift of tongues that they might
apôtre recevoir c don langue afin que pouvoir (ir)
 preach the gospel to all the nations of the earth. If you are
prêcher évangile — terre
 assiduous and take pains, you will succeed. Before I
—du et que vous 96 de la peine réussir avant que
 form any plan, I shall wait till things have a more tranquil
former — attendre que 31
 appearance. David (gave orders) that his subjects should be num-
apparence — ordonner c qu'on sujet faire le dénom-
 bered*, which excited the displeasure of God. Do you think
brement de ce qui —ter c déplaisir penser
 they will do it? Did you think they would do it? I did not
B
 think they would come to-day.
B

RULE 163.—Compound Tenses of the Subjunctive.

I doubt whether any philosophers have ever known the origin of
douter que s —phe s jamais —ne

* That is, that they should make the census of his subjects.

the winds. I wonder you *have* refused the employment that has
vent être surpris —*ser* *place*
 been offered you. I never could have thought that the Emperor
 143 *offrir* 57 *pouvoir* 167 *penser* *Empereur*
 would have submitted to such hard conditions. Garrick was
se soumettre (ir) *si* *dur* 31 —7 *c*
 perhaps the best tragic actor which the world has ever produced.
peut-être *tragique acteur* 155 *monde* *m* *produire*

RULE 164.—Cases in which the Imperfect of the Subjunctive is used.

It is not probable you *could have* obtained the consent of your
 — *obtenir* *consentement*
 father, if I had not spoken in your favour. I do not think that
B *faveur* *croire (ir)*
 the French revolution would ever have happened, had Lewis the
 31 *ré—* *être arriver* *si* *Louis*
 Sixteenth vigorously opposed the first innovations? Do you
Seize *se fût opposé à* —
 think your brothers would learn French, should I teach
penser *apprendre (ir)* *si* *le enseigner* *B*
 them?
leur 57

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE USE OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

There is no grief which length of time does not lessen.
 169 *point chagrin* 18 *diminuer*
 Erostratus set on fire the temple of Diana, that his name
 —*te mettre c le feu à* —*m* *Diane afin que* 158 *nom*
 might be spread through the whole earth. Philosophers
se répandre *par* —*phe*
 are composed of flesh and bones as well as other men; and,
 143 —*ser* *chair* *os aussi-bien que*
 however sublimated their theories may be, they are liable to frailties
 109 *élevé* *théorie* *sujet faiblesse* 7
 as well as other mortals. The bark of trees was used to write
de l'écorce *arbré* 98 *se servir B pour*
 upon before paper was invented.
 * 158 *papier* —*ter.*

The Emperor Caligula wished that all the citizens of Rome had
empereur — *désirer B* 156 *citoyen*
 but one neck, that he might behead them all at once.
 128 *cou m* *afin que* 158 *pouvoir décapiter* *à la fois*
 Whatever riches we may have, and however unsuccessful may be our
 155 *richesse* *malheureux*
 literary productions, we are never contented with our fortune, nor
littéraire 31 — 120 *content* 32 —

dissatisfied with our understanding. A man who has no friends
mécontent 32 *esprit* *point* 18
 has nobody he can rely upon, nor from whom he may expect
 155 *compter sur qui* 174 *de qui* *pouvoir attendre*
 any favour.

The love of our enemies must have no bounds in the heart ;
amour *ennemi ne doit point* 18 *borne* *cœur*
 though in the outward behaviour it may have some limitation.
quoique 158 *extérieur* 31 *conduite f il pouvoir* 7 *limites*
 Lightning appears before the thunder is heard. Unless
éclair *paraître* 158 *tonnerre m* 98 *entendre à moins que* 158
 a book be instructive or entertaining, I do not care to read it.
ne —tif *amusant* *se soucier* 135
 Though ambition is a vice, it is nevertheless the foundation of many
 158 — — *néanmoins* *base f* *bien* 18
 virtues.

Though an honourable title may be conveyed to posterity,
quoique 158 *honorable* 31 *titre m pouvoir* *se transmettre*
 yet the ennobling qualities, such as greatness of the soul, can-
qui anoblissent 141 *—té* *telles que grandeur* *âme*
 not be transferred. Christopher Columbus, by an effort of genius
se transmettre *—phe* *Colomb* — *génie*
 and intrepidity, the most successful that is recorded in the annals
 20 *intrépidité* *heureux* 155 98 *trouver* *annales*
 of mankind, opened to his contemporaries the way to a new
du genre humain ouvrir 150 *—rains* *chemin de*
 world.
monde m

EXERCISE UPON THE IRREGULARS *would, could, should, &c.*

RULE 165.—*would, could, should, expressed by vouloir pouvoir, devoir.*

Why do you not speak French? Because I cannot; if I could,
pourquoi *Français parce que pouvoir (ir)* *le* 152
 I would.* We are born for society; we should therefore contribute
le faire (ir) *nés* *▲* *donc* *—buer*
 to the advantage of the community. If you could lend me your
bien *—nauté* 152 *prêter*
 horse, you would oblige me (very much). I am sorry I cannot
—ger *beaucoup* *fâché de ** *le*
 to-day; if I could, I certainly would not refuse you; if you
aujourd'hui *le* 152 *certainement* *refuser* *z*

* Would, could, should, and might, are not expressed in other cases, and are only the mark of a tense, as je parlerais, I would speak.

had asked for it yesterday, you *could* have had it then, or if you
 152 * *le hier* 167 *alors*
 could wait till to-morrow, it would be at your disposal.
attendre jusqu'à demain *à service*

Marshal Turenne *would* not take (any thing) from merchants
Le maréchal de — à prendre rien marchand
 upon trust, lest they might lose a part of it, should he be killed
à crédit de peur que 158 *perdre partie en* 57 *s'il à tuer*
 in battle.
bataille

RULE 166.—*would, could, &c., not followed by a Compound Tense.*

I *could* do it yesterday. I *could* do it formerly. I *could* if I *would*. I do not think I *could*.

RULE 167.—*would, could, &c., followed by a Compound Tense.*

I *could* have done my exercise as soon as you if I *would*; but
faire thème aussi vite que 152 *mais*
 then it would not have been done so well as it is. If you *would*
faire si bien qu'il l'est si 152
 have studied French, you *might* have learnt it in a short time when
*étudier apprendre * peu de temps*
 you were in France. Cities *could* not have been built without an
à ville bâtir
 assembly of men. I think that if our general *would* have pursued
assemblées croire (ir) général 152 *poursuivre (ir)*
 the enemy, he *might* have taken their ammunition. I *could* have
ennemi pl prendre (ir) munition pl
 lent you two hundred pounds yesterday, but I do not think I
prêter livre hier croire 83 *je*
 can at present, because I have bought a horse this morning.
le puisse parce que acheter matin

EXERCISE UPON THE IMPERSONAL VERBS
il faut, il y a, &c.

RULE 168.—*il faut, it must.*

Children *must* obey their parents. Men *must* practise virtue. I
obéir 130 — *pratiquer*
must have a new hat. A woman *must* have (a great deal) of
neuf 81 *chapeau beaucoup*
 circumspection when speaking of herself. I have sold my house;
retenue en vendre

I must buy another. You must have a new book. They must
en acheter *neuf*
 have new stockings. They must answer. You must go there.
bas 7 *répondre* *y*

RULE 169.—*il y a*, there is.

1. There is no less eloquence in the tone of the voice, in the
pas moins 18 *dans* *ton* *voix*
 eyes and the gesture, than in the choice of words. There is in true
geste m que *choix* *mot*
 virtue a candour which nothing can counterfeit. — 2. How
—deur 118 *pouvoir (ir)* *contrefaire* *com-*
 long have you been in England? — These five years. — 2. How long
bien *Angleterre* * *ans*
 has your father been dead? — 2. How long have you learnt geography?
mort *apprendre géographie*
 — 2. How far is Rouen from Paris? — 2. How far is London from
combien — *—dres*
 Vienna? — 2. How many inhabitants are there in France? — 2. How
—ne 18 *habitant* *en*
 many towns are there in England? — 1. There is nothing made by
 18 *ville* *Angleterre* *rien de*
 the hands of men, which time does not destroy.
main *temps* *détruire* 165

RULE 170.—*Distinction between c'est and il est.*

2. It is a certain mark of fortitude to preserve the soul from
 31 *marque f* *courage* 135 *son âme*
 pride in prosperity, and to shun (depressing anxieties) in adversity.
orgueil prospérité *d'éviter* *le découragement*
 — 1. It is more glorious to conquer oneself than to conquer an
glorieux 135 *se vaincre soi-même*
 enemy. — 2. It was envy which caused the death of Abel. — 2. It is
ennemi 150 *envie* *causer* *mort*
 you who have spoken of it. — 2. It is the character of a great
parler en 57 *caractère m*
 genius to intimate many things in few words. — 1. It is
génie 135 *exprimer beaucoup* 18 *peu* 18 *mot*
 certain that men could not live long in society with-
pouvoir (ir) * *longtemps*
 out civil laws. It is late; it is time to go to bed. What o'clock
 31 *loi* 7 *tard* 135 *aller se coucher* *heure*
 is it? It is past ten; it is almost eleven.
plus de *presque*

RULE 171.—*c'est, ce sont*, it is.

1. It is the Phœnicians who invented the art of writing. — 1. It
Phénicien *—ter* 153
 8 5

is not those who speak much, who are the most esteemed. — 2.
ceux beaucoup estimer
 It is for you to obey. — 2. It was to your brothers I lent that
à d'obéir 150 frère 83 prêter
 money. — 2. It is to them I speak. — 1. It is your ancestors, who
argent eux 83 ancêtre
 by their virtue have transmitted you the titles you enjoy;
transmettre (ir) titre dont jouir
 it is they who have rendered your name great; imitate them if you
eux rendre imiter H
 wish to be worthy of their name.
vouloir (ir) digne nom

CHAP. XIX.

SYNTAX OF ADVERBS.

RULE 172.—*Where the Adverbs are to be placed.*

ADVERBS are usually placed after the simple tenses of a verb, and between the auxiliary and the participle of the compound ones: they are never put, as in English, between the subject and the verb. Examples:

I often think of you; *Je pense souvent à vous.*
 I never speak ill of any body;
Je ne parle jamais mal de personne.
 I never have spoken ill of any body;
Je n'ai jamais mal parlé de personne.

And not *je souvent pense à vous.*

RULE 173.—*Adverbs after the Participle.*

The few adverbs in *ment* which govern a noun are always placed in French after the participle in a compound tense, and even after the words it may govern. Examples:

I despatched the goods agreeably to your orders;
J'ai expédié les marchandises conformément à vos ordres.
 You have acted independently of my orders;
Vous avez agi indépendamment de mes ordres.

The following adverbs of time, *aujourd'hui*, to-day, *demain*, to-morrow, *hier*, yesterday, and those composed of two or three words, are usually placed after the participle in a compound tense. Examples:

It has rained to-day ; *Il a plu* aujourd'hui.

I met with him by chance ; *Je l'ai rencontré* par hasard.

And not, *Il a* aujourd'hui *plu* ; *Je l'ai* par hasard *ren-*
contré.

Note 1. Many adverbs usually begin a sentence in French, or a member of it. Such are, *cependant*, meanwhile ; *c'est pourquoi*, therefore ; *comment*, how ; *combien*, how much ; *quand*, when ; *où*, where, &c. Example:

When will you go to France ? *Quand irez-vous en France ?*

Note 2. The adverb *presque*, almost, is always placed before *toujours*, *jamais*, and *souvent*, when they meet ; and these three go before all others when several meet together. Examples :

The king is scarcely ever well ;

Le roi est presque toujours malade.

Your brother and mine are always together ;

Votre frère et le mien sont toujours ensemble.

EXERCISE UPON THE ADVERBS.

RULE 172.—*Adverbs after the Verbs.*

We *seldom* repent of talking little, but very often of talk-
ing (too much). *on rarement se repentir* 135 *parler peu* *souvent*
trop Homer *sometimes* slumbers (in the midst) of gods
Homère quelquefois sommeiller au milieu dieu
and heroes. Your exercise is not well done, you have done it
14 *héros* *thème* 57
hastily. Never reproach any one with the services you
à la hâte 173 *reprocher à personne* * — m 83
do him. Courtiers often pass their life in the hope of
rendre lui 57 *courtisan* *passer* *espérance* 135
acquiring what they never obtain. The love of earthly things is
acquérir 74 *obtenir* *terrestre* 31 *bien*
always accompanied with an indifference towards heavenly.
accompagner 32 — *pour les bien célestes*
What is made with pleasure, is generally well made.
ce qui se fait avec plaisir ordinairement

RULE 173.—*Place of Adverbs.*

If you had acted *conformably* to reason and justice, nobody would
152 *agir conformément raison f*
have condemned your conduct. He has often spoken well of you.
condamner conduite 172 *parler en bien*
As I wanted to (go out) this morning, I have done my exercise
comme avoir besoin de sortir matin *faire thème*

hastily. You have given me (*too much*) bread. I shall have done
à la hâte 18 *pain* *finir*
to-morrow.

CHAP. XX.

SYNTAX OF PREPOSITIONS.

RULE 174.—*Prepositions are placed before the Word which they govern.*

PREPOSITIONS are placed in French before the words they govern : in English they are sometimes placed after. Examples :

The person whom you are interested for :

La personne pour qui vous vous intéressez.

Whom do you speak to ? *À qui parlez-vous ?*

What do you complain of ? *De quoi vous plaignez-vous ?*

RULE 175.—*How to express from followed by to.*

The prepositions *from* and *to*, used in the same sentence before substantives of place, are expressed in French in two different manners.

1. To express the distance, or the going from one place specified to another, *from* is rendered by *de*, and *to* by *à*. Examples :

I go in one day *from* Paris *to* Rouen ;

Je vais en un jour de Paris à Rouen.

There is no great distance *from* his house *to* the church ;

Il n'y a pas loin de chez lui à l'église.

2. When the same word is repeated after *from*, and after *to*, and also when they are placed before names of kingdoms, provinces, and vast countries, *from* is rendered by *de*, and *to* by *en*. Examples :

I go *from* street *to* street, *from* town *to* town, *from* province *to* province ;

Je vais de rue en rue, de ville en ville, de province en province.

My brother will go *to* Germany, and *from* Germany *to* France, *from* France *to* Italy, *from* Italy *to* Spain, and there he will embark for America ;

Mon frère ira en Allemagne, et d'Allemagne en France, de France en Italie, d'Italie en Espagne, et là il s'embarquera pour l'Amérique.

RULE 176.—from, to, *in respect of time.*

From is rendered by *depuis*, and *to* by *jusqu'à*, when speaking of time. Example :

I will stay in the country *from* Midsummer *to* Christmas ;
Je resterai à la campagne depuis la St. Jean jusqu'à Noël.

When the preposition *to* signifies *as far as*, it is generally expressed by *jusqu'à*. Examples :

I have drunk the cup *to* the dregs ;
J'ai bu le calice jusqu'à la lie.
 I will prosecute him *to* the end ;
Je le poursuivrai jusqu'à la fin.

Note.—An English preposition has often several significations, and consequently must be variously expressed in French. Let us take, for instance, the preposition *about*. Examples :

I am come *to* speak *to* you *about* our affair ;
Je suis venu pour vous parler touchant notre affaire.
 I will go and see you *about* the end of the next month ;
J'irai vous voir vers la fin du mois prochain.
 Dinner was *about* over when he came ;
Il arriva sur la fin du dîner.

RULE 177.—*When the Prepositions are to be repeated.*

The prepositions *de*, *en*, *à*, are usually repeated before every noun, pronoun, or verb ; others, such as *avec*, *contre*, *sans*, &c., are repeated before nouns or verbs of different significations, whether they are or are not repeated in English. Example :

The Son of God came on earth *to* redeem men, and *to* destroy the empire of the devil ;

Le Fils de Dieu est venu sur la terre pour racheter les hommes, et pour détruire l'empire du démon.

They are not usually repeated before words which have pretty near the same signification. Examples :

The Son of God came on earth *to* redeem men, and *to* free them from sin ;

Le Fils de Dieu est venu sur la terre pour racheter les hommes, et les délivrer du péché — not *et pour les délivrer*, because *racheter* and *délivrer* signify the same thing.

Our law judges nobody without having heard and examined him ;
Notre loi ne juge personne sans l'avoir entendu et examiné.

But the preposition must be repeated before two verbs

even of the same signification, when they govern different nouns or pronouns. Example :

Our law judges nobody *without* having heard him and examined his conduct ;

Notre loi ne juge personne sans l'avoir entendu et sans avoir examiné sa conduite.

OF CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS.

WE have spoken at large of conjunctions, pages 206. and following : their use and construction have been fully explained in the Syntax, in Rules 97. 158. and 161. ; and nothing further remains to be said of them.

The different species of interjections have been treated of in page 208. : their construction is the same in French as in English, therefore they require no further explanation.

EXERCISE UPON PREPOSITIONS.

RULE 174.—*Place of Prepositions.*

Whom do you speak *to* ? What does he complain *of* ? Whom
qui *quoi* *se plaindre*
 shall I apply myself *to* ? As magistrates are above the peo-
adresser me 57 de même que —trai au-dessus du peu-
 ple, so the laws are *above* magistrates. We fancy that the antipodes
ple ainsi loi s'imaginer —
 are *under* us, they think that we are *under* them ; but all are *upon*
sous croire (ir) eux sur
 the earth, for no part of a surface can be *upon* another part of
121 partie pouvoir (ir) une autre
 the same surface.

RULE 175.—How to express *from* followed by *to*.

1. I can go in one day *from* Calais *to* Paris, and in two hours
pouvoir (ir) en jour — — heure
from Paris *to* Versailles. — 2. I like to travel ; I went *from* Ger-
— aimer 136 voyager aller Alla-
 many *to* Russia, and *from* Russia *to* Sweden. — 1. (How far) is it
magne Russie Suède combien 169

from London to Winchester and from Winchester to Salisbury? —
Londres

2. You spend all the day in going from house to house, from street to street, and from place to place. 1. How many miles from Chelsea to the Tower? It is not far from his house to the river.
passer à aller rue
Tour f 169 loin rivières

RULE 176.—*depuis, jusqu'à, from, to.*

A poor ploughman who works from morning to night, when he is well paid for his labour, lives as content as a king. I have drank the cup to the dregs. I walk every day from ten to twelve, and I study from six in the afternoon to eight, sometimes to nine,
laboureur travailler matin soir
payer de travail vivre (ir) que
boire (ir) calice m lie sing se promener dix heures
midi étudier six heures après-midi huit quelquefois
neuf

RULE 177.—*Prepositions repeated.*

Foreigners take pleasure in admiring at Amsterdam the singular mixture formed by the ridges of houses, the tops of trees, and the flags of ships, which present, in the same place, an idea of the sea, the city, and the country. Heroes formerly sacrificed themselves for their country, or their mistresses; at present, nothing is done but for fortune or pleasure.
étranger prendre (ir) plaisir à admirer à —
singulier Si mélange former toit cime f
pavillon vaisseau 74 — idée
mer ville campagne héros autrefois 172 sacrifier
se 57 pays maîtresse
se faire que

Jesus Christ came into the world to redeem men, and to destroy the empire of the devil. Charity does nothing without consideration and order. Our laws do not condemn any person without having heard and examined him.
venir 153 monde 138 racheter détruire
démon charité rien sans
ni ordre condamner 139
entendre examiner le

CHAP. XXI.

OF GALLICISMS.

IDIOTISMS are modes of speaking peculiar to a language, which cannot be literally translated into another.

The chapter of idioms is divided into three sections : the *first* explains the idiomatical expressions of the auxiliary verbs *to have* and *to be* : the *second* shows the idiomatical significations in which the verbs *aller, avoir, venir, donner, faire, jouer*, and *mourir* may be taken : the *third* contains a series of the most remarkable French idioms.

SECTION I.

IDIOMATICAL EXPRESSIONS OF THE VERBS "TO HAVE"
AND "TO BE."

RULE 178—*Cases in which the Verb to be is expressed by the Verb avoir.*

The verb *to be* is expressed in French by the same tense of the verb *avoir*, in the seven following cases :

1. When speaking of the dimension or age, it is followed by a word of number, such as *one, two, three, four, &c.* Examples :

Our house *is* twenty feet broad ;
Notre maison a vingt pieds de large—not *est*.
I *am* twenty-five years of age ; *J'ai vingt-cinq ans.*

2. When it is used to ask the age of a person or an animal. Examples :

How old *are* you ? *Quel âge avez-vous ?*—not *êtes-vous*.
How old *is* your dog ? *Quel âge a votre chien ?*

3. When it is followed by the words *hungry, dry, or thirsty*. Examples :

Are you hungry, daughter ? Yes, mother, I am very hungry ;
Avez-vous faim, ma fille ? Oui, ma mère, j'ai grande faim.
Are you dry ? No, I am not dry at present ;
Avez-vous soif ? Non, je n'ai pas soif à présent.

4. When it is followed by the words *hot, warm, or cold*. The part of the body referred to is preceded in French by *au* for the masculine, by *à la* for the feminine, and by *aux* for the plural, instead of the possessive pronouns *my, thy, his, her, our, your, or their*, used in English. Examples :

My feet are cold ; J'ai froid aux pieds.

Are your hands warm ? Avez-vous chaud aux mains ?

Warm yourself, if you are cold ;

Chauffez-vous, si vous avez froid.

5. When it is or might be followed by the adverb *there*, without altering the sense of the sentence, as we said, Rule 169. Example :

There are many poor people in England and France ;

Il y a beaucoup de pauvres en Angleterre et en France.

6. When it is followed by the words *in the wrong, in the right, or afraid*. Examples :

You were in the right, and I was in the wrong ;

Vous aviez raison, et moi j'avais tort.

Why are you afraid ? Pourquoi avez-vous peur ?

7. When *to be* is followed by *in vain*, it is commonly expressed by *avoir beau*. Examples :

It is in vain to wait for him, he will not come ;

Vous avez beau l'attendre, il ne viendra pas.

It was in vain for me to advise him, he would not believe me ;

J'avais beau l'avertir, il ne voulait pas me croire.

RULE 179.—to be, expressed by *faire*.

The verb *to be* is expressed by *faire*, when applied to the state of the weather ; and with the words *jour, nuit, soleil, vent, &c.* Examples :

It is fine weather to-day ;

Il fait beau temps aujourd'hui.

It was bad weather yesterday ;

Il faisait mauvais temps hier.

It will be cold soon ;

Il fera froid dans peu.

Is it hot in France ?

Fait-il chaud en France ?

If the word *weather* is the subject of the verb *to be*, then it should be expressed by *être*, and not by *faire*. Examples :

The weather is fine ;

Le temps est beau.

The air is cold ;

L'air est froid—not le temps fait beau, l'air fait froid.

RULE 180.—*The Verb to be expressed by the Verb se porter.*

The verbs *to be*, and *to do*, used in English in inquiring or speaking of a person's health, are both expressed in French by the reflected verb *se porter*. Examples :

How do you <i>do</i> ?	<i>Comment vous portez-vous ?</i>
I am very well ;	<i>Je me porte fort bien.</i>
Is your father well ?	<i>M. votre père se porte-t-il bien ?</i>
He was well yesterday ;	<i>Il se portait bien hier.</i>

RULE 181.—*Il en est de, it is with.*

The impersonal—*it is, it was, it will be, &c.*, followed by the preposition *with*, is expressed by *il en est de*, for the present ; *il en était de*, for the imperfect ; *il en fut de*, for the preterite ; *il en sera de*, for the future ; *il en serait de*, for the conditional ; *il en soit de*, for the pres. subj., *il en fût de*, for the imperfect. Examples :

It is with you as with other men ;
Il en est de vous comme des autres hommes.
 I do not believe *it will be* with my son as with yours ;
Je ne crois pas qu'il en soit de mon fils comme du vôtre.

N.B. The verb *to be* before an infinitive is sometimes expressed by the verb *devoir* ; sometimes it is not expressed at all, and then the next verb is put in the future. Example :

I am to dine out to-day ;
Je dois dîner (or je dînerai) en ville aujourd'hui.

RULE 182.—*The Verb to have, expressed by the Verb être.*

The verb *to have* is expressed by *être*, 1. in the compound tenses of all the reflected verbs. Examples :

I rose this morning at six o'clock ;
Je me suis levé ce matin à six heures.
 Have you perceived the trick ?
Vous êtes-vous aperçu du tour ?

2. In the compound tenses of the verbs *aller, arriver, déchoir, décider, entrer, mourir, naître, partir, tomber*, also of *venir*, and its compounds, *devenir, disconvenir, intervenir, parvenir, revenir*, and *survenir*, and of such intransitive verbs as admit of their participles following a substantive in an adjective sense. Examples :

You have gone to London without my leave ;
Vous êtes allé à Londres sans ma permission.
 My brother died this morning at seven ;
Mon frère est mort ce matin à sept heures.

RULE 183.—Avoir mal à, *speaking of illness.*

We make use of *avoir mal à*, to ask or to express what part of the body is affected with some illness or pain.
Examples :

Have you the head-ach ?	<i>Avez-vous mal à la tête ?</i>
My eyes are sore ;	<i>J'ai mal aux yeux.</i>
Have you the tooth-ach ?	<i>Avez-vous mal aux dents ?</i>
I feel a pain in my side ?	<i>J'ai mal au côté.</i>
His feet are sore ;	<i>Il a mal aux pieds.</i>

SECTION II.

Idiomatical Significations of aller.

The verb *aller*, besides its general signification of *to go*, has many others, as may be seen in the following examples :

<i>Le commerce ne va plus,</i>	Trade is dead.
<i>Est-ce ainsi que vous y allez ?</i>	Is this your way of proceeding ?
<i>Comment va la santé ?</i>	How do you do ?
<i>Tout va bien, tout va mal,</i>	All is well, all is bad.
<i>Cet habit vous va bien,</i>	That coat suits you well.
<i>Mon frère va partir,</i>	My brother is going out.
<i>Aller aux voix,</i>	To put to the vote.
<i>Il va pleuvoir, neiger,</i>	It will rain, snow.
<i>Il y va de la vie,</i>	Life is at stake.
<i>Cela va sans dire,</i>	That is understood.
<i>Aller pied à pied, pas à pas,</i>	To act deliberately.
<i>Il y va de mon honneur,</i>	My honour is concerned in it.
<i>Vous ne faites qu'aller et venir,</i>	You are ever running up and down.
<i>Il va venir,</i>	He is coming.
<i>Allez-vous sortir ?</i>	Are you going out ?

*Idiomatical Significations of avoir.**

Avoir besoin de quelque chose,	To want something.
Avoir bonne mine,	To look well.

* The verbs used in the infinitive present, in some idiomatical significations, may be used in all other tenses and persons in the same sense.

Avoir mauvaise mine,	To look ill.
Avoir affaire de quelque chose,	To have occasion for some thing.
Avoir le cœur sur les lèvres,	To be free and open.
Avoir des affaires par dessus les yeux,	To be full of business.

Idiomatical Significations of donner.

The verb *donner*, besides its signification of *to give*, is used in many other senses, as appears by the following Examples :

Se donner des airs,	To take a great deal upon one's self.
Donner dans le piège,	To be caught in the snare.
En donner à garder à quelqu'un,	To make a fool of somebody.
Se donner du bon temps,	To pass one's time merrily.
Se donner de garde de faire telle chose,	To be sure not to do such a thing.
Donner sur l'ennemi,	To fall upon the enemy.
Ce vin porte à la tête,	That wine flies up to the head.
Ne savoir où donner de la tête,	To know not what way to turn.
Donner carte blanche,	To give full powers.

Idiomatical Significations of faire.

Faire grâce à quelqu'un,	To forgive somebody.
Faire le malade,	To sham sickness.
Faire fond sur quelqu'un,	To rely upon somebody.
Faire faire une montre,	To bespeak a watch.
Faire voile, or mettre à la voile,	To set sail.
Se faire des amis,	To get friends.
Se faire des affaires,	To bring one's self into trouble.
Se faire à la fatigue,	To inure one's self to hardships.
Faire bien ses affaires.	To prosper.
Faire des contes à dormir debout.	To tell idle stories.
Faire un pas de clerc,	To take a false step.
Faire des armes,	To fence.
Faire la sourde oreille,	To give a deaf ear.
Faire bonne mine à quelqu'un,	To receive one kindly.
Faire l'homme d'importance,	To pretend to great matters.

Several Significations of jouer.

Jouer des instruments,	To play upon instruments.
Jouer à quelque jeu,	To play at some game.
Jouer une pièce de théâtre,	To act a play.
Jouer un tour à quelqu'un,	To serve one a trick.
Jouer à quitte ou double,	To run all chance.
Jouer de son reste,	To use one's last shifts.
Jouer au plus fin,	To vie in cunning.

Idiomatical Significations of mourir.

Mourir de faim,	To be starved.
Mourir de soif,	To be choked with thirst.
Mourir de froid,	To starve with cold.
Mourir de chaud,	To be extremely hot.
Mourir de peur,	To be frightened to death.
Mourir de chagrin,	To grieve one's self to death.
Mourir de douleur,	To have one's heart broken.

Idiomatical Significations of the Word main.

Donner la main à un malheureux,	To relieve an unfortunate.
Donner un coup de main,	To help.
Donner à pleines mains,	To give largely.
Donner de main en main,	To handle about.
Faire main basse sur l'ennemi,	To put the enemy to the sword.
Faire un coup de main,	To do a bold action.
Faire quelque chose sous main,	To do something secretly.
Mettre l'épée à la main,	To draw the sword.
Prendre de toutes mains,	To catch every way.
En venir aux mains,	To fight.

SECTION III.

A Series of the most curious French Idioms.

Aller à bride abattue,	To go full speed.
Avoir le pied sur le bord de la tombe,	To have already one foot in the grave.
Avoir la tête près du bonnet,	To take fire presently.
Boire le calice jusqu'à la lie,	To drink the cup to the dregs.
C'est la mer à boire,	It is an endless business.
Chercher à pied et à cheval,	To look every where.
Couper la parole à quelqu'un,	To interrupt one who speaks.
Découvrir le pot aux roses,	To find out the mystery.
Dormir la grasse matinée,	To sleep very late.
Elever quelqu'un jusqu'aux nues,	To praise one to excess.
Etre à deux doigts de sa perte,	To be on the brink of ruin.
Etre tendre à la mouche,	To be very captious.
Jeter de la poudre aux yeux,	To cast a mist before one's eyes.
Jeter feu et flamme,	To fret and fume.
Manger son blé en herbe,	To eat the calf in the cow's belly.
Mettre de l'eau dans son vin,	To allay one's passion.
Mettre les fers au feu,	To fall stoutly to work.
Mettre une armée sur pied,	To raise an army.
Ne demander que plaies et bosses,	To think the more mischief the better sport.
Ne savoir sur quel pied danser,	Not to know which way to turn.
Opiner du bonnet,	To assent blindly.

Partager le gâteau,	<i>To share the profit.</i>
Passer quelqu'un au fil de l'épée,	<i>To put somebody to the sword.</i>
Prendre l'air du bureau,	<i>To feel people's pulse.</i>
Prendre quelqu'un au pied levé,	<i>To snap one up.</i>
Remuer ciel et terre,	<i>To leave no stone unturned.</i>
Risquer le tout pour le tout,	<i>To set all at stake.</i>
River le clou à quelqu'un,	<i>To give one as good as he brings.</i>
Rompre la paille avec quelqu'un,	<i>To fall out with one.</i>
Tirer au court fêtu,	<i>To draw cuts.</i>
Tirer son épingle du jeu,	<i>To slip one's neck out of the collar.</i>
Trouver chaussure à son pied,	<i>To be well fitted.</i>
Trouver son maître,	<i>To meet with one's match.</i>
Venir à bout de ses desseins,	<i>To succeed in one's designs.</i>

CHAP. XXII.

A SERIES OF PROVERBS MOST USED IN FRENCH.

Abondance de bien ne nuit pas,	<i>A store is no sore.</i>
A force de forger, on devient forgeron,	<i>Assiduity makes all things easy.</i>
A l'impossible nul n'est tenu,	<i>There is no fence against the flail.</i>
A méchant chien, court lien,	<i>A curst cur must be tied short.</i>
Ami au prêt, ennemi au rendre,	<i>I lose my money, and my friend.</i>
Apprenti n'est pas maître,	<i>You must spoil before you spin.</i>
Après la mort le médecin,	<i>After death comes the physician.</i>
A qui veut mal, mal arrive,	<i>Evil be to him that evil thinks.</i>
Argent comptant porte médecine,	<i>Ready money is a remedy.</i>
Aux grands maux les grands remèdes,	<i>A desperate disease must have a desperate cure.</i>
Beau parler n'écorche pas la langue,	<i>Fair words cost nothing.</i>
Beaucoup de bruit, et peu d'effet,	<i>Great cry and little wool.</i>
Bon avocat, mauvais voisin,	<i>A good lawyer and evil neighbour.</i>
Bonne renommée vaut mieux que ceinture dorée,	<i>A good name is better than riches.</i>
Ce n'est pas pour vous que le four chauffe,	<i>There is nothing for you.</i>
Ce n'est pas l'habit qui fait le moine,	<i>It is not the cowl that makes the friar.</i>
Celui qui cherche le danger y périra,	<i>Harm watch, harm catch.</i>
Ce qui abonde ne vicie pas,	<i>Excess of right is no wrong.</i>
Ce qui est différé n'est pas perdu,	<i>All is not lost that is delayed.</i>
C'est de la moutarde après diné,	<i>After dinner comes mustard.</i>
C'est là où gît le lièvre,	<i>There is the point.</i>

- Charité bien ordonnée commence *Charity begins at home.*
 par soi-même,
- Chien qui aboie ne mord pas, *Barking dogs seldom bite.*
 Dans les petits pots sont les bonnes *Short and sweet.*
 épices,
- De tout s'avise à qui pain faut, *Necessity is the mother of invention.*
 De deux maux il faut choisir le *Of two evils choose the least.*
 moindre,
- Faire d'une pierre deux coups, *To kill two birds with one stone.*
 Familiarité engendre mépris, *Familiarity breeds contempt.*
 Faute de parler, on meurt sans *Spare to speak and spare to speed.*
 confession,
- Faute d'un point Martin perdit *A miss is as good as a mile.*
 son âne,
- Fin contre fin n'est pas bon à faire *Diamond cut diamond.*
 doublure,
- Grands vanteurs, petits faiseurs, *Great boast, little roast.*
 Il a les yeux plus grands que le *His eyes are bigger than his belly.*
 ventre,
- Il a plus de bonheur qu'un hon- *He is more lucky than wise.*
 nête homme,
- Il a plus de peur que de mal, *He is more afraid than hurt.*
 Il est comme l'oiseau sur la *He is in a wavering situation.*
 branche,
- Il est comme le poisson dans l'eau, *The dog's head is in the porridge*
pot.
 Il crie avant qu'on l'écorche, *He halts before he is lame.*
 Il en fait ses choux gras, *He feathers his nest by it.*
 Il ennuie à qui attend, *Waiting is tedious.*
 Il fait bon pêcher en eau trouble, *It is good fishing in troubled waters.*
 Il faut battre le fer quand il est *Strike the iron while it is hot.*
 chaud,
- Il faut faire vie qui dure, *Old young and old long.*
 Il ne faut pas juger des gens par *One must not hang a man by his*
 la mine, *looks.*
 Il n'a ni bouche ni éperon, *He has neither wit nor courage.*
 Il n'est sauce que d'appétit, *Good stomach is the best sauce.*
 Il n'est si bon charretier qui ne *That is a good horse that never*
 verse, *stumbles.*
 Il n'est pire eau que celle qui dort, *Smooth water runs deep.*
 Il n'est point de roses sans épines, *No rose without a thorn.*
 Il n'y a point de feu sans fumée, *Where is the smoke, there is the fire.*
 Il n'y a que la première peine qui *The first step over, the rest is easy.*
 coûte,
- Il sent bien où le bât le blesse, *He feels where the shoe pinches.*
 Il vaut mieux faire envie que pitié, *It is better to be envied than pitied.*
 Il vaut mieux plier que de rompre, *It is better to bend than break.*
 Il vaut mieux tard que jamais, *Better late than never.*
 La clef d'or ouvre toutes les ser- *Bribe can get in without knocking.*
 rures,
- La faim chasse le loup hors du *Hunger will break through a stone*
 bois, *wall.*

La fin couronne l'œuvre,	<i>All's well that ends well.</i>
La nécessité est la mère de l'industrie,	<i>Necessity is the mother of invention.</i>
La nuit tous chats sont gris,	<i>When candles are out, all cats are grey.</i>
La patience est un remède à tous maux,	<i>Patience is a plaster for all sores.</i>
Le bien mal acquis ne profite jamais,	<i>Ill gotten goods never prosper.</i>
Le jeu n'en vaut pas la chandelle,	<i>The business will not quit cost.</i>
Le renard prêche aux poulets,	<i>The devil rebukes sin.</i>
Le sage entend à demi mot,	<i>A word to the wise is enough.</i>
Les bons comptes font les bons amis,	<i>Short reckonings make long friends.</i>
Les honneurs changent les mœurs,	<i>Honour changes manners.</i>
Les petits ruisseaux font les grandes rivières,	<i>Many drops make a shower.</i>
Les plus courtes folies sont les meilleures,	<i>The shortest follies are the best.</i>
L'occasion fait le larron,	<i>Opportunity makes the thief.</i>
L'oisiveté est la mère de tous les vices,	<i>Idleness is the root of all evil.</i>
Marchand qui perd ne peut rire,	<i>Let him laugh that wins.</i>
Mauvaise herbe croît toujours assez,	<i>Ill weeds grow apace.</i>
Marchandise qui plaît est à moitié vendue,	<i>Good wares make quick markets.</i>
Nécessité n'a point de loi,	<i>Necessity has no law.</i>
Ne réveillez pas le chat qui dort,	<i>When sorrow is asleep awake it not.</i>
Nouveaux rois, nouvelles lois,	<i>New lords, new laws.</i>
On n'a jamais bon marché de mauvaise marchandise,	<i>The best the cheapest.</i>
On n'a rien sans peine,	<i>No pain, no profit.</i>
On ne fait pas marché du premier mot,	<i>More words than one go to the bargain.</i>
On ne saurait faire boire un âne s'il n'a soif,	<i>A man may lead his horse to water, but he cannot make him drink, unless he lists.</i>
Où il n'y a rien, le roi perd ses droits,	<i>Where nothing is to be had the king loses his right.</i>
Paris n'a pas été fait en un jour,	<i>Rome was not built in a day.</i>
Parmi les aveugles les borgnes sont rois,	<i>Among the blind the one-eyed is a king.</i>
Pas à pas on va bien loin,	<i>Fair and soft goes fast.</i>
Point d'argent point de Suisse,	<i>No money no pater-noster.</i>
Promettre et tenir sont deux,	<i>It is one thing to promise, and another to perform.</i>
Porter de l'eau à la mer,	<i>To carry coals to Newcastle.</i>
Quand on emprunte on ne choisit pas,	<i>Beggars must not be choosers.</i>
Qui fera bien, bien trouvera,	<i>Do well, and have well.</i>
Qui menace a souvent peur,	<i>Swaggerers are great cowards.</i>

Qui répond paye,	<i>The bail must pay.</i>
Qui ne hasarde rien n'a rien,	<i>Nothing venture, nothing have.</i>
Qui trop embrasse mal étreint,	<i>Covet all, lose all.</i>
Qui se fait brebis, le loup le mange,	<i>Who makes himself a sheep, him the wolf eateth.</i>
Selon ta bourse gouverne ta bouche,	<i>Cut your coat according to your cloth.</i>
Tirer d'un sac deux moutures,	<i>To take double fees.</i>
Toujours pêche qui en prend un,	<i>Still he fishes that catches one.</i>
Tout ce qui brille n'est pas or,	<i>All is not gold that glitters.</i>
Toute vérité n'est pas bonne à dire,	<i>Truth is not to be spoken at all times.</i>
Un bon chien chasse de race,	<i>Cat after kind.</i>
Un honnête homme n'a que sa parole,	<i>An honest man is as good as his word.</i>
Un malheur ne vient jamais seul,	<i>One misfortune comes on the neck of another.</i>
Une souris qui n'a qu'un trou est bientôt prise,	<i>It is good to have two strings to one's bow.</i>
Un tiens vaut mieux que deux tu l'auras,	<i>A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush.</i>

EXERCISE UPON THE GALLICISMS.

RULE 178.—To be expressed by avoir.

1. Some whales are a hundred feet long, their tails are more
baleine , *pie* 35 *queue* sing.
 than twelve feet in circumference, and their fins are about seven
de circonférence *nageoire* *environ*
 feet long.—6. How old was your father when he died?—He was
 35 *quel âge a* 65 *mourir* c 149
 seventy. And your mother?—she was almost eighty.—
soixante-dix ans 65 *près de quatre-vingts*
 2. I do not remember to have ever been so thirsty as I was yesterday.
se souvenir 135 *jamais* *si soif* *que* c *hier*
 —3. Warm yourself, if you are cold; my feet are not cold, because
se chauffer *froid*
 I have walked much, but my hands are so cold, that I cannot
si froid *pouvoir* (ir)
 write. — 1. There are some walks in our park which are three
 169 7 *allée* *parc*
 hundred feet long. — 4. You are in the wrong, and he is in the
tort
 right.
raison

5. It is in vain for you to ask money from a miser, he never will
demand *à* *avare*
 give you any. — 6. How old is your daughter? she will be eighteen
donner *en* 58 *quel âge* 65 *dix-huit*

next March. I did not think she *was* more than fifteen. —
au mois de Mars prochain *croire* 83 159 *de*
 4. When we heard that your coach had been stopped by some
apprendre 150 *carrosse* *arrêter* 7
 ruffians, we were afraid they would have murdered you. — *Are*
voleur *peur que* 126 164 *tuer* 57
 your feet cold? No, (on the) contrary, they are very warm; but my
piéd *au* *contraire* *j'y ai* *chaud*
 hands are cold.

RULE 179.—to be expressed by *faire*.

Is it cold this morning? — Yes, sir, it is very cold; however, I do
matin *oui* *très* *cependant*
 not think it is quite so cold as it was yesterday. The
croire (ir) 83 159 *tout-à-fait si* *B* *hier*
 weather is very inconstant; it was hot yesterday, it is cold to-
temps *B* *chaud* *au-*
 day; it rained this morning; it is fine weather now, but perhaps
jourd'hui pleuvoir 158 *matin* *peut-être*
 it will rain again before it be night. If it be fine weather
encore avant que 158 *nuît*
 to-morrow, I will go to the play, but if it be bad weather, I shall
demain aller (ir) *comédie* *mauvais*
 not go. When I was in the country, it was very bad weather;
B *à* *campagne* *B*
 now I am come to town it is very fine weather, and if I was
à présent que *en ville* ***
 to return into the country, I fear it would be bad weather
retournais à *craindre* 126 *a*
 again.
encore 172

RULE 180.—to be expressed by *se porter*.

How do you do this morning? I am very well, I thank you. And
comment *matin* *bien remercier*
 how does your sister do? — She is not well; she (has been) ill
 65 92 *A* *malade*
 for these two months, and I fear she will never be well
depuis *** *mois* *craindre* 126
 again. And your brothers, how are they? — the youngest is very
 65 *plus jeune*
 well, but I do not know how the eldest does, because we have
mais *savoir (ir)* *aîné* 92 *parce que*
 not heard of him for these two months; he was very well when
entendu parler *depuis* *** *quand*
 he wrote to us last.
écrire c *la dernière fois*

RULE 181.—*il en est de*, it is with.

It is with the diseases of the heart as with those of the body,
maladie 76
 some are real and some imaginary. *It is with* (men of
quelques-unes réel d'autres —naire
 learning) as with ears of corn; they raise their heads while they are
savant épis blé lever la tête tant que
 empty, and when they are full, they begin to droop. *It is with*
vide plein commencer 136 pencher
 your son as with other children. I do not think *it will be with my*
croire 159
 son as it was with yours.

153

RULE 182.—to have, expressed by *être*.

The Amazons *have* made themselves famous by their courage in
Amazones f rendre 143 se 57 fameux
 war. If you *had* risen an hour sooner this morning, you would
la guerre 152 se lever plus tôt
have embarked with the others. If I *had* (been awake), I would
s'embarquer 152 s'éveiller
have risen. Why *have* you deviated from the road which you *had*
se lever s'écarter route f
 begun to follow? — I *have* often repented not having fol-
commencer 144 à suivre (ir) se repentir
 lowed your advice.
avis

My father *has* arrived an hour sooner than you. I would not *have*
arriver plus tôt
 come this morning, if I *had* not received a letter from you yesterday.
venir 152 173
 You would not *have* fallen from your horse, if you *had* not galloped.
*tomber de * cheval 152 galoper*
 I *have* walked in the garden before you were up. Why *have*
se promener avant que 158 levé
 you complained of me? I *have* (got a cold) this morning. He *has*
se plaindre s'enrhumer
 distrusted every body.
se défier de

RULE 183.—*avoir mal à*.

I have great pain in my side. He has sore eyes. Have you the
bien mal côté mal yeux
 stomach-ach? He has a sore foot. My lips are sore. She *had*
estomac mal pied lèvres 149
 the tooth-ach yesterday, now she has the head-ach; to-morrow

perhaps, she will have a bad leg. When I was young, I often
peut-être *jambe* *jeune* *souvent* 172
 had the head-ach.
 149

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISE UPON THE GALLICISMS.

Why do you not eat if you are hungry? I am not very hungry,
manger 178 *faim* 178 *très*
 I can wait till (dinner-time), but I am very thirsty, and I will
attendre * *le dîner* 178 *soif*
 thank you for a glass of wine. It is very cold to-day. It
prier *de me donner verre m* *vin* 179 *froid*
 was cold yesterday. It will be hot soon. I am thirsty. He is
 179 179 *chaud bientôt* 178 *soif* 178
 hungry. My sister is not well, she has not been well for these three
faim 180 *bien* 180 *depuis* *
 weeks, she has the head-ach to-day. At what o'clock did you
semaine 183 *quelle heure* 153 *se*
 rise this morning?
lever 183

It is in vain for you to say so, I do not believe you. It is with
 178 *dire le* 57 *croire (ir)* 181
 my brother as with yours. How old is your son? — He is almost
 89 178 *près de*
 nineteen. And your daughter? — She will be fifteen next Christmas.
à 31 *Noël*
 What weather is it this morning? — It is fine weather. I hope it
 179 179 *espérer*
 will be fine weather to-morrow. Why? — Because if it be fine
 179 *parce que* 179
 weather we shall go into the country, my brother and I; but if it be
à *campagne* *f* 45 179
 bad weather, we shall stay at home.
rester maison

How far is your house from the chapel? How old was your
 169 *de* *à* *chapelle* *quel âge* 178 65
 father when he died? How old were you when you married? —
quand mourir 150 178 182 *se marier* 153
 I was thirty. How old are you now? — I shall be fifty next
 178 178 178 *au mois*
 April.
d'Avril prochain

It is in vain for us to bury ourselves in obscurity; nothing
s'enfoncer — *et* 118
 protects us against the persecutions of malignity; nothing shel-
mettre *à couvert des poursuites* *méchanceté* *met-*
 ters from the darts of envy.
tre à l'abri *traits*

What weather is it to-day? I do not know; I have not (been
 179 *savoir (ir)* 182 sor-
 out), but I think it is very cold. If it be cold, I shall not
tir *croire (ir)* 179 179
 (go out), because I fear to get a cold? I never drink unless
sortir *craindre de m'enrhumer* *boire (ir) à moins que*
 I am thirsty.
 158 127 *soif*

How do your children do? — They are all very well, I thank you.
 180 180 *remercier*
 And your mother? — She is not well; she had the tooth-ach yester-
 65 180 183
 day, and she told me this morning she had the head-ach. Is it cold?
dire 153 183 179 *froid*
 Are you cold? It is not cold. I am not cold. Your brother will
 178 179 178 *froid*
 not be well till he is twenty.
 180 *jusqu'à ce que* 158 178 *vingt ans.*

CHAP. XXIII.

OF THE CONCORD, DISPOSITION, AND REPETITION OF WORDS IN A SENTENCE.

SECTION I.

WHAT PARTS OF SPEECH AGREE TOGETHER IN FRENCH.

1. *Articles.*

THE three articles, *definite*, *indefinite*, and *partitive*, agree in gender and number with their substantive. Examples:

The father, mother, and children are in the country;
Le père, la mère, et les enfants sont à la campagne.
 I have a good garden and a fine house near London;
J'ai un bon jardin, et une belle maison près de Londres.
 Give me some bread, some meat, and some eggs;
Donnez-moi du pain, de la viande, et des œufs.

2. *Adjectives.*

All adjectives agree in gender and number with the

substantives to which they are united or related. Examples :

A learned man ; a learned woman ; learned girls.

Un homme savant ; une femme savante ; des filles savantes.

3. Pronouns.

All pronouns, *personal, possessive, demonstrative, relative, and interrogative*, agree in gender and number with their substantive. Examples :

1. My brother wishes to marry your sister, yet I think he does not know her ;

Mon frère veut épouser votre sœur, cependant je crois qu'il ne la connaît pas.

2. His son, daughter, and sisters will come here to-night ;

Son fils, sa fille, et ses sœurs viendront ici ce soir.

3. This book is new ; this house is old ; these pens are good ;

Ce livre est neuf ; cette maison est vieille ; ces plumes sont bonnes.

4. The vice against which I speak ; the reasons I rely-upon are without reply ;

Le vice contre lequel je parle ; les raisons sur lesquelles je me fonde, sont sans réplique.

5. What is his crime, and what is his excuse ?

Quel est son crime, et quelle est son excuse ?

4. Verbs.

All personal verbs agree in number and person with their subject. Examples :

I speak, we speak ; *Je parle, nous parlons.*

Man is mortal, men are mortal ;

L'homme est mortel, les hommes sont mortels.

He says the truth, they say the truth ;

Il dit la vérité, ils disent la vérité.

SECTION II.

OF COLLOCATION.

The Order in which the Words of a Sentence must be placed.

RULE 1. The articles, the possessive, demonstrative, and interrogative pronouns, always precede in French, as in English, the substantive to which they are joined ;

as may be observed in the examples of the preceding section.

RULE 2. The adjectives of number, as, *un, deux, trois, quatre, &c.*, and also the following, *beau, bon, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, and petit*, precede their substantive, but others are usually placed after; as *un bon homme, un grand homme*; a good man, a great man.

RULE 3. The relative pronouns, *qui, que, dont, le quel, &c.* come immediately after the noun or pronoun to which they have reference. Example: Do not reject advice, the utility of which you know; *Ne rejetez pas un avis dont vous connaissez l'utilité.*

RULE 4. The prepositions always come before the word which they govern. Example: What do you complain of? *De quoi vous plaignez-vous?*

RULE 5. The adverb is usually put after the verb, in a simple tense—as, he answers well, *il répond bien*; and after the auxiliary in a compound one—as, he has well answered, *il a bien répondu.*

RULE 6. The subject of a verb precedes it in an affirmative sentence: as, my father is come, he has given me some money; *mon père est venu, il m'a donné de l'argent.*

If the sentence be interrogative, and the subject of the verb be any of the following pronouns, *je, tu, il, elle, nous, vous, ils, elles, ce, or on*, it is placed after the verb when it is a simple tense, and after the auxiliary when it is a compound one. Examples: *Parle-t-il? A-t-il parlé? Dit-on? A-t-on dit?*

If the subject be a substantive, or any other pronoun than those before mentioned, it precedes the verb in an interrogative sentence, but then the personal pronouns *il* or *elle, ils* or *elles*, must be used after the verb or its auxiliary. Examples: Is your father come? Is your mother at home? *Votre père est-il venu? Votre mère est-elle à la maison?*

RULE 7. The personal pronouns are placed immediately after the verb they are governed by, when it is in the imperative affirmative: as, give it me, *donnez-le-moi*; sell it us, *vendez-le-nous.*

When the verb is not in the imperative affirmative, the governed pronouns are put immediately before it in a simple tense, and immediately before the auxiliaries *avoir* or *être*, in a compound one : as, he will give them to you ; *il vous les donnera* ; he has sold them to us, *il nous les a vendus* ; he has promised them to me, *il me les a promis* ; do not return it to him, *ne le lui rendez pas*, &c.

If a verb governs two or more pronouns, they are placed before it in this order—*me, te, se, nous, vous*, go before *le, la, les* ; *le, la, les*, go before *lui* and *leur* ; *lui* and *leur* go before *y* and *en* ; and *y* goes before *en*. Examples : he will lend them to you, *il vous les prêterà* ; he will lend them to him, *il les lui prêterà* ; I will send you some there, *je vous y en enverrai* ; I have sent them some there, *je leur y en ai envoyé* ; he will carry some thither, *il y en portera*.

RULE 8. If the sentence be negative, *ne* precedes the verb and the governed pronouns ; the other word of negation, such as *pas, jamais, rien*, &c. usually comes after the verb in a simple tense, and after its auxiliary in a compound one. Examples : I will never believe it, *je ne le croirai jamais* ; he has not seen them, *il ne les a pas vus* ; there is nothing finer, *il n'y a rien de plus beau*.

If the verb be in the infinitive, both the negative words go before it, and even before the governed pronouns : the preposition, if there be any, precedes the negation and the pronouns. Example : I will do it not to displease you, *je le ferai, pour ne pas vous déplaire*.

The other parts of speech not mentioned in these eight rules usually follow the same order in French as in English.

SECTION III.

WHAT WORDS MUST BE REPEATED IN A SENTENCE.

1. *Articles repeated.*

The article must be repeated in French before every substantive. Example :

The heart, the mind, and manners, are formed by education ;
Le cœur, l'esprit, et les mœurs se forment par l'éducation.

2. Pronouns repeated.

The possessive and demonstrative pronouns are repeated in French before every noun, though they are not repeated in English. Examples :

We must govern *our* taste, expenses, and pleasures ;
Il faut régler son goût, sa dépense, et ses plaisirs.
 This man and woman are very unfortunate ;
Cet homme et cette femme sont très-malheureux.

The personal pronouns of the first and second persons are generally repeated before every verb of which they are the subject ; those of the third are also repeated before verbs which are in various tenses, and when the first is affirmative and the other negative, or *vice versa*. Examples :

I say, and will always say, that you were in the wrong ;
Je dis, et je dirai toujours que vous aviez tort.
 He says so, but he does not believe it, I assure you ;
Il le dit, mais il ne le croit pas, je vous assure.

All personal pronouns must be repeated in French before every verb they are governed by, though they are not in English. Examples :

My brother esteems and honours you ;
Mon frère vous estime et vous honore.

3. Verbs repeated.

A verb is repeated in a sentence of two parts, if one is negative and the other affirmative. Example :

We must expect every thing from God, and nothing from men ;
Il faut tout attendre de Dieu, et ne rien attendre des hommes.

In answer to a question, we often repeat the same verb the question is asked by ; the English repeat only the auxiliary. Example :

Have you seen the king ? Yes, sir, I have ;
Avez-vous vu le roi ? Oui, monsieur, je l'ai vu.

4. Prepositions repeated.

The prepositions—*de*, *à*, *en*, and *pour*, are usually repeated before every noun or verb which they serve to connect with a common source, or general term. Example :

Brazil produces a great quantity of indigo, sugar, pepper, and saltpetre ;

Le Brésil produit une grande quantité d'indigo, de sucre, de poivre, et de salpêtre.

The prepositions *avec*, *contre*, *sans*, &c., are repeated before nouns of different significations. Example :

He is angry with you, but not with your money ;

Il est fâché contre vous, mais non pas contre votre argent.

SECTION IV.

WORDS WHICH MAY BE ELEGANTLY REPEATED.

1. Substantives elegantly repeated.

La vue de l'esprit a plus d'étendue que la vue du corps. BOSSUET.

Ce qui sert à la vanité n'est que vanité, tout ce qui n'a que le monde pour fondement, se dissipe et s'évanouit avec le monde. FLECHIER.

C'est le privilège de M. de Turenne d'avoir pu vaincre l'envie ; le mérite l'avait fait naître ; le mérite la fit mourir. FLECHIER.

Romains, souffrirez-vous qu'on vous immole un homme

Sans qui Rome aujourd'hui cesserait d'être Rome ?

Dis, Valère, dis-nous, puisqu'il faut qu'il périsse,

Où penses-tu choisir un lieu pour son supplice ?

Sera-ce entre ces murs que mille et mille voix

Font résonner encore du bruit de ses exploits ?

Sera-ce hors des murs, au milieu de ces places,

Qu'on voit fumer encor du sang des Curiaces ? CORNEILLE.

2. Adjectives elegantly repeated.

Il y a une infinité de choses, qui ne dépendent que d'une lumière humaine, d'une expérience humaine, d'une pénétration humaine.

Dès qu'on sort de la nature, tout devient faux dans l'éloquence ; la chaleur de ses mouvements les plus passionnés n'est qu'une fausse chaleur ; l'éclat de ses figures n'est qu'un faux éclat.

L'amour propre est plus habile que le plus habile homme du monde.

3. The Verb elegantly repeated.

J'oublie que je suis malheureux, quand je songe que vous ne m'avez pas oublié.

La reine sanctifia sa cour en se sanctifiant elle-même. FLECHIER.

Il s'est efforcé de connaître Dieu, qui par sa grandeur est inconnu aux hommes, et de connaître l'homme, qui par sa vanité est inconnu à lui-même. FLECHIER.

En quittant le monde, on ne quitte le plus souvent ni les erreurs, ni les folles passions du monde.

BOURDALOUE.

The following verses of Lusignan to Zaire contain several repetitions of substantives and verbs :

Ma fille, tendre objet de mes dernières peines,
 Songe au moins, songe au sang qui coule dans tes veines;
C'est le sang de vingt rois, tous Chrétiens comme moi;
C'est le sang des héros défenseurs de ma loi;
C'est le sang des martyrs. — O fille encor trop chère!
 Connais-tu ton destin? sais-tu quelle est ta mère?
 Sais-tu bien qu'à l'instant que son flanc mit au jour
 Ce triste et dernier fruit d'un malheureux amour,
 Je la vis massacrer par la *main* forcenée,
 Par la *main* des brigands à qui tu t'es donnée?
 Tes frères, ces martyrs égorgés à mes yeux,
 T'ouvrent leurs bras sanglants, tendus du haut des cieux:
 Ton Dieu que tu trahis, ton Dieu que tu blasphèmes,
 Pour toi, pour tes péchés est mort en *ces lieux* mêmes,
 En *ces lieux* où mon bras le servit tant de fois,
 En *ces lieux* où son sang te parle par ma voix.
 Vois ces murs, vois ce temple envahi par tes maîtres;
 Tout annonce le Dieu qu'ont vengé tes ancêtres.
 Tourne les yeux; sa tombe est près de ce palais;
 C'est ici la montagne où, lavant nos forfaits,
 Il voulut expirer sous les coups de l'impie;
 C'est là que de sa tombe il rappela sa vie;
 Tu ne saurais marcher dans cet auguste lieu,
 Tu n'y *peux* faire un pas, sans y trouver ton Dieu;
 Et tu n'y *peux* rester sans renier ton père,
 Ton honneur qui te parle, et ton Dieu qui t'éclaire.

VOLTAIRE.

CHAP. XXIV.

DISTINCTION IN FRENCH BETWEEN MANY WORDS WHICH ARE EXPRESSED IN THE SAME MANNER IN ENGLISH.

1. AN, — ANNÉE, — Year.

THE word *year* is expressed by *année* when it is considered as a duration of twelve months, and by *an* when we mean only to express one or more units of a twelve-month, at whatever part of the year it may begin. Examples :

It is two years since my father died ; My father died the first year of this century ;

Il y a deux ans que mon père est mort ; and, Mon père mourut la première année de ce siècle-ci.

The whole year has been cold ; *Toute l'année a été froide.*

I go every year to France ; *Je vais tous les ans en France.*

Every year of his life has been marked by some misfortune ;

Toutes les années de sa vie ont été marquées par quelque malheur.

2. JOUR,——JOURNÉE,——*Day.*

3. MATIN,——MATINÉE,——*Morning.*

4. SOIR,——SOIRÉE,——*Evening.*

The word *day* is expressed by *jour* ; *morning*, by *matin* ; and *evening* by *soir*, when we speak of any part of them : they are expressed by *journée*, *matinée*, and *soirée*, when we express the whole duration. Examples :

2. { I have been sick all the *day* long ;
J'ai été malade toute la journée.
 { The *days* are short now ; *Les jours sont courts à présent.*

3. { I go a hunting every *morning* ;
Je vais à la chasse tous les matins.
 { It has rained all the *morning* ;
Il a plu toute la matinée.

4. { I will go and see you to-morrow *evening* ;
J'irai vous voir demain au soir.
 { I will spend the *evening* with you ;
Je passerai la soirée avec vous.

5. BATTRE,——FRAPPER,——*to Beat.*

The verb *to beat*, is rendered by *frapper*, in speaking of a single blow, and by *battre* when several are implied ; thus, *on peut frapper sans battre, mais on ne peut battre sans frapper.*

6. COMBAT,——BATAILLE,——*Battle.*

The word *battle* is expressed in French by *combat*, when it denotes a partial action, such as happens at the passage of a river, at the intercepting of a convoy, &c. It is expressed by *bataille*, when it denotes a general action of two armies, such as *la bataille de Pharsale, la bataille de Fontenoi, la bataille de Jemmapes, &c.*

7. CASSER,——ROMPRE,——*to Break.*

The verb *to break* is expressed by *casser* when we speak

of something brittle, and by *rompre*, when the object is not brittle. Thus we say,—

You have *broken* my glass, you have *broken* my stick ;

Vous avez cassé mon verre, vous avez rompu mon bâton.

Not *vous avez rompu mon verre, et cassé mon bâton.*

8. CONNAÎTRE,——SAVOIR,——to Know.

The verb *to know* is always expressed by *connaître* when it signifies *to be acquainted with* ; and most commonly by *savoir* in all other circumstances. Thus we say,—

Do you *know* that lady ? *Connaissez-vous cette dame-là ?*

Do you *know* your lesson ? *Savez-vous votre leçon ?*

9. MARCHER,——SE PROMENER,——to Walk.

The verb *to walk* is expressed in French by *marcher*, when we walk for business, and by *se promener* when we walk for pleasure. Thus we say,—

I have been obliged *to walk* much to-day ;

J'ai été obligé de marcher beaucoup aujourd'hui.

I have been *walking* in the garden with my brother ;

Je me suis promené dans le jardin avec mon frère.

N.B. It must be observed that the French verb *se promener* does not mean properly *to walk*, though it be often translated so in English, but *to take a diversion* either by walking, or riding, or in a boat, &c. So we say, *se promener à cheval, en carrosse, sur un âne, en bateau, dans une gondole, en mer*, all expressions which would be ridiculous if translated by *to walk*.

10. AMENER,——APPORTER,——to Bring.

The verb *to bring* is expressed in French by *amener*, when the object can walk, and by *apporter* when it cannot. Thus we say,—

Bring your wife with you ; *Amenez votre épouse avec vous.*

Bring me my books ; *Apportez-moi mes livres.*

11. MENER,——PORTER,——to Carry.

The verb *mener* is used in French when the object can walk, and *porter* when it cannot. Thus we say,

Take that dog to the stable ; *Menez ce chien à l'écurie.*

Carry that hat to your brother ; *Portez ce chapeau à votre frère*

12. NEUF,——NOUVEAU,——*New*.

The word *new* is most commonly expressed by *neuf* or *neuve*, when we speak of something which has been recently made, or has not been used since it was made, and by *nouveau* or *nouvelle*, when we speak of something of a new kind, a new shape, a new fashion, or different from another used before. Thus we say,—

He lives in a new house ;

Il demeure dans une maison neuve — if we mean a new-built house

Il demeure dans une nouvelle maison — if we mean that a person has removed, and lives in another house.

13. AVANT,——DEVANT,——*Before*.

The word *before* is expressed in French by *avant*, when it denotes a priority, and by *devant*, when it signifies in presence of. Examples :

I shall have done *before* noon ; *J'aurai fini avant midi*.

I dared not appear *before* you ; *Je n'osais paraître devant vous*.

The contrary of *avant* is *après* ; that of *devant* is *derrière*.

14. DANS,——EN,——*In*.

The preposition *in*, when speaking of a place, is rendered in French by *dans*, when we mean to express in a definite manner the inclusion, and by *en*, when we express in a vague manner the situation. Thus we say :

He lives *in* a furnished house, near St. James's palace ;

Il demeure dans une maison garnie, près le palais de St. Jacques.

It is more convenient for me to live *in* a furnished lodging ;

Il est plus commode pour moi de vivre en chambre garnie.

When speaking of time, *dans* expresses the epoch, and *en* the duration. Example :

Death arrives *in* the moment we think least of it, and we pass *in* an instant from this world into the next ;

La mort arrive dans le moment qu'on y pense le moins, et l'on passe en un instant de ce monde à l'autre.

When speaking of the state or qualification, *dans* is used in a particularised sense, and *en* in a general sense. Thus we say,—

To live *in* liberty, to be *in* a fury, to fall *into* a lethargy ;

Vivre en liberté, être en fureur, tomber en léthargie.

To live in an entire liberty ;
Vivre dans une entière liberté.

To be in an extreme fury ;
Etre dans une extrême fureur.

To fall into a profound lethargy ;
Tomber dans une profonde léthargie.

15. PLUS,——DAVANTAGE,——*More.*

The word *more* is always expressed by *plus*, when it is not at the end of a sentence, and by *davantage* when it is at the end of an affirmative sentence. Examples :

I am younger than you ;
Je suis plus jeune que vous, — not, davantage jeune.

You have no bread, will you have some more ?
Vous n'avez pas de pain, en voulez-vous davantage ? — not, en voulez-vous plus.

When the word *more* is at the end of a negative sentence, it is often indifferently expressed by *plus*, or by *pas davantage*. Example :

I will not eat any more ;
Je ne mangerai plus — or, je ne mangerai pas davantage.

16. POUR,——PENDANT,——*For.*

The word *for* is expressed in French by *pendant*, when it is followed by a word which denotes a certain duration of time, and when it could be expressed by *during*. It is expressed by *pour* in other circumstances. Example :

I study for two hours every day — or, during two hours.
J'étudie pendant deux heures tous les jours — not pour deux heures.
 I lend it you for two hours ;
Je vous le prête pour deux heures — not pendant deux heures.

17. SUR,——DESSUS,——*Upon.*

18. SOUS,——DESSOUS,——*Under.*

When the words *upon* and *under* are followed by a noun, they are prepositions, and expressed, *upon* by *sur*, and *under* by *sous*. Examples :

Your book is upon the table ; *Votre livre est sur la table.*
 Your shoes are under the bed ; *Vos souliers sont sous le lit.*

When the words *upon* and *under* are not followed by a

noun, they are adverbs, and expressed, *upon* by *dessus*, and *under* by *dessous*. Examples :

You thought the dog *under* the bed, and he was *upon* it ;
Vous croyiez le chien sous le lit, et il était dessus.
 Your handkerchief is not *upon* the chair, but it is *under* it ;
Votre mouchoir n'est pas sur la chaise, mais dessous.

19. EN CAMPAGNE, — A LA CAMPAGNE.

We make use of *en campagne*, only when we speak of the army, or the motion of troops : as,

L'armée se mettra bientôt en campagne.

We must make use of *à la campagne*, when we speak of going or living in the country. Example :

Venez nous voir à la campagne

FREE EXERCISES.*

I. THE TWO BEES.

On a fine morning in May, two bees (set forward) in quest
dans *matinée de Mai* *partir* *aller chercher*
 of honey; the one wise and temperate, the other careless and
sobre *négligent*
 extravagant. They soon arrived at a garden enriched with aro-
prodigue *dans*
 matic herbs, the most fragrant flowers, and the most delicious
odoriférant
 fruits. They regaled themselves for a time on the various
** quelque de différent*
 dainties that were spread before them; the one loading his thigh
met délicat étaler
 at intervals with provisions for the hive against
de temps en temps afin de s'en nour-
 the distant winter, the other revelling with sweets, without (re-
rir pendant l'hiver s'enivrer de
 gard to any thing but) his present gratification. At length they
songer qu'à satisfaction
 found a large-mouthed phial, (that hung) beneath the bough
à large ouverture suspendu une branche
 of a peach-tree, filled with honey ready tempered, and exposed
** tout clarifié qui s'offrait*
 to their taste in the most alluring manner. The thoughtless epi-
de attrayant épi-
 cure, in spite of all his friend's remonstrances, plunged headlong
*curieuse malgré **
 into the vessel, resolving to indulge himself in all the pleasures of
*vase résolu se livrer * à*
 sensuality. The philosopher, on the other hand, sipped a little with
f en goûter
 caution; but (being suspicious) of danger, flew off to
soupçonner prendre son essor vers
 fruits and flowers; where, by the moderation of his meals, he (im-
sobriété repas f se

* In the following Exercises the rules will be no more indicated, as the pupils must know them well enough to apply them by themselves.

proved his relish for the true enjoyment of them). In the evening, *ménager le plaisir d'y trouver toujours un nouveau goût vers* however, he (called upon) his friend to inquire whether he would *aller trouver f lui demander f* return to the hive; but found him surfeited in sweets, which he was *gorgé de* as unable to leave as to enjoy. (Clogged in his wings), (enfeebled *hors d'état de d'en les ailes collées* in his feet), and (his whole frame) totally enervated, he (was but just *les pattes affaiblies tout le corps n'avoir que la* able) to bid his friend adieu, and to lament (with his) *force reconnaître avec douleur en rendant le* latest breath, that, though a taste of pleasure might quicken *soupir en effleurant le on pouvoir rendre* the relish of life, (an unrestrained indulgence) is *plus vif jouissance pl en s'y livrant sans mesure on court* inevitable destruction. *à une*

II. RESPECT PAID BY THE LACEDÆMONIANS TO OLD AGE. *rendre Lacédémoniens*

It happened at Athens, during a public representation of some *qui se* play exhibited in honour of the commonwealth, that an (old *donnait au théâtre* gentleman) came too late for a place suitable to his age and *vieillard pour trouver* quality. Many of the young gentlemen, who observed the difficulty *gens embarras* and confusion he was in, made signals to him that they would *où signe sing* accommodate him, if he came where they sat: the (good man) *céder une place à être assis vieillard* bustled through the crowd accordingly; but when he came to the *percer ** seats (to which) he was invited, the jest was to (sit close) and *banc où on se faire un jeu de se serrer* expose him to the whole audience, when he stood, (out *la risée de assemblée tandis que être debout tout* of countenance). The frolic went round all the (Athenians' *décontenancé ce badinage passer de banc en banc parmi les* benches). But on those occasions there were also particular places *Athéniens duns* assigned for foreigners: when the (good man) skulked to- *destiné à * vieillard étant allé se cacher* wards the seats appointed for the Lacedæmonians, that honest *bancs marqué* people, more virtuous than polite, rose up all to a man, and *gens pl policé * jusqu'au dernier*

with the greatest respect received him among them. The Athenians, being suddenly touched with a sense of the Spartan virtue and their own degeneracy, gave a thunder of applause, and the old man cried out: "The Athenians understand what is good, but the Lacedæmonians practise it."—*Spectator*.

III. PÆTUS AND ARRIA.

In the reign of Claudius, the Roman emperor, Arria, the wife of Cecinna Pætus, was an illustrious pattern of magnanimity and conjugal affection.

It happened that her husband and her son were both, at the same time, attacked with a dangerous illness. The son died. He was a youth endowed with every quality of mind and person which could endear him to his parents. His mother's heart was (torn with all the anguish of grief); yet she resolved to conceal the distressing event from her husband. She prepared and conducted his funeral so privately, that Pætus did not know of his death. Whenever she came into her husband's bedchamber, she pretended her son was better, and (as often as) he inquired after his health, would answer, that he had rested well, or had eaten with appetite. When she found that she could not longer retain her grief, but her tears (were gushing out), she would leave the room, and having given vent to her passion, returned again with dry eyes, and a serene countenance, as if she had left her sorrow behind her at the door of the chamber.

Camillus Scribonianus, the governor of Dalmatia, having taken up arms against Claudius, Pætus joined himself to his party, and was soon after taken prisoner, and brought to Rome. When the guards were going to put him on board the ship, Arria besought

them (that she might be permitted) to go with him. "Certainly,"
de lui permettre
 said she, "you cannot refuse a (man of consular dignity), (as he
à personnage consulaire comme
 is), a few attendants to (wait upon) him; but, if you will
*lui * quelque domestique servir vouloir*
 take me, I alone will perform their office." This favour, how-
remplir fonction pl
 ever, was refused: upon which she hired a small (fishing vessel),
barque de pêcheur
 and boldly ventured to follow the ship.
se hasarder

Returning to Rome, Arria met the wife of Scribonianus in the
de retour
 emperor's palace, who pressing her to discover all that she knew
 of the insurrection—"What!" said she, "shall I regard thy
avoir égard à
 advice, who saw thy husband murdered in thy very arms, and
toi as vu propre
 yet survivest him?"
qui

Pœtus being condemned to die, Arria formed a deliberate reso-
mort ferme
 lution to share his fate, and made no secret of her intention. Thrasea,
 who married her daughter, attempting to dissuade her from her
avait vouloir
 purpose, among other arguments which he used, said to her:
 "(Would you then), (if my life were to be taken from me),
quoi donc si l'on était sur le point de m'ôter la vie
 advise your daughter to die with me?" "Most certainly I would,"
le faire
 she replied, if she had lived as long, and in as much harmony with
grand
 you, as I have lived with Pœtus."

Persisting in her determination, she found means to (provide herself
se procurer
 with) a dagger: and one day, when she observed (a more than
que plus de tristesse
 usual gloom) on the countenance of Pœtus, and perceived
qu'à l'ordinaire visage qu'elle
 that death by the hand of the executioner appeared to him more
bourreau
 terrible than in the field of glory; perhaps, too, sensible that it
à lit honneur sentant
 was chiefly for (her sake) that he wished to live; she drew the dag-
elle
 ger from her side, and stabbed herself before his eyes. Then in-
à
 stantly plucking the weapon from her breast, she presented it to her
fer
 husband, saying: "My Pœtus, it is not painful."—Pliny.
cela douloureux

IV. VALENTINE AND UNNION.

At the siege of Namur by the allies, there was in the ranks of the company commanded by captain Pincent, in colonel Frederic Hamilton's regiment (one Unnion, a corporal), and (one Valentine, a *un caporal, nommé Unnion* *un simple soldat,* private sentinel): there happened between these two men a dispute *nommé Valentine* *survenir*

about an affair of love, which, upon some aggravations, grew *pour* *à raison de* *provocation dégénérer* to an irreconcilable hatred. Unnion, being the officer of Valentine, *en* *caporal*

took all opportunities even to strike his rival, and profess the spite *occasion* *de* *témoigner* and revenge which moved him to it. The sentinel bore it without *porter* *soldat*

resistance; but frequently said he would die to (be revenged) *mourrait volontiers* *se venger*

of that tyrant. They had spent whole months in this manner, the one injuring, the other complaining; when in the midst *commettant des outrages*

of this rage towards each other, they were commanded upon the attack of the castle, where the corporal received a shot *pour* *coup de feu à* in the thigh, and fell. The French (pressing on), and Unnion expecting

to be (trampled to death), he called out to his enemy: "Ah, *les serrant de près* *s'attendre* *écrasé sous les pieds* * *

Valentine! can you leave me here?" Valentine immediately ran *aussitôt revenir*

back, and in the midst of a thick fire of the French, took *sur ses pas* *roulant*

the corporal upon his back, and brought him through all that danger as far as the abbey of Saltine, where a cannon-ball took off his head: his body fell under his enemy whom he was carrying off. Unnion immediately forgot his wound, rose up, tearing his hair, and then threw himself upon the bleeding carcase, crying: "Ah, Valen- *sanglant cadavre*

time! was it for me, who have so barbarously used thee, that thou hast died? I will not (live after) thee." (He was not by any means *vouloir survivre* *il n'y eut pas moyen de*

to be forced) from the body, but (was removed with it bleeding) *l'arracher* *cadavre* *on l'enleva le tenant tout sanglant* in his arms, and attended with tears by all their comrades who *accompagné des* *de*

knew their enmity. (When he was) brought to a tent, his wounds *ayant été* *dans* were dressed by force; but the next day, still calling upon Valen- *panser malgré lui*

tine, and lamenting his cruelties to him, he died in the pangs of
déplore *envers* *tourment*
 remorse. — *Tatler*.

V. MULY MOLUC.

When Don Sebastian, king of Portugal, (had invaded) the
—tien 150
 territories of Muly Moluc, emperor of Morocco, in order to de-
état *Maroc*
 throne him, and set his crown upon the head of his nephew, Moluc
 (was wearing away with) a distemper which he himself knew was
se mourir de *être*
 incurable. However, he prepared (for the reception of) so formidable
recevoir
 an enemy. He was indeed so far spent with his sickness, that he
** épuisé par*
 did not expect to live out the whole day; but knowing the fatal
*s'attendre passer * journée*
 consequences that would happen to his children and his people, in
résulter pour
 case he should die before he put an end to that war, he commanded

 his principal officers, that if he died during the engagement, (they
combat
 should conceal) his death from his army, and (that they should ride
de cacher *de se rendre*
 up) to the litter in which his corpse was carried, under pretence of
corps *z*
 receiving orders from him as usual. Before the battle began, he
à l'ordinaire
 was carried through all the ranks of his army in open litter,
dans *découvert*
 (as they stood drawn up in array), encouraging them
pendant que les troupes étaient rangées en bataille
 to fight valiantly in defence of their religion and country.
pour la
 Finding afterwards the battle to go against him, though he was
voir *tourner*
 very near his last agonies, he threw himself out of his litter, rallied
** sing.*
 his army, and led them on to the charge, which afterwards ended in
*** *ce qui* *par*
 a complete victory on the side of the Moors. He had no sooner
de *Maure*
 brought his men to the engagement, but finding himself utterly
troupes *combat* *que*
 spent, he was again replaced in his litter, where laying his finger on
mettre
 his mouth, to enjoin secrecy to his officers, who stood about him, he
 died a few moments after in that posture.—*Spectator*.

VI. DIONYSIUS THE TYRANT.

Dionysius, the tyrant of Sicily, showed how far he was from being
Denis
 happy even whilst he was abounding in riches, and all the pleasures
avait en abondance des
 which riches can procure. Damocles, one of his flatterers, was
 complimenting him upon his power, his treasures, and the magnificence
 (of his royal state), and affirming, that no monarch ever was greater
qui l'entourait assurait
 or happier than he. (Have you a mind), Damocles, says the king,
voulez-vous
 to taste this happiness, and know by experience what my enjoyments
 are, of which you have so high an idea? Damocles gladly accepted
 the offer : upon which the king ordered, that a royal banquet should
festin
 be prepared, and a gilded couch placed for him, covered with
 98 *qu'on* *lit* 152
 rich embroidery, and side-boards loaded with gold and silver plate
buffet *vaisselle*
 of immense value. Pages of extraordinary beauty were ordered to
eurent ordre
 (wait on) him at table, and to obey his commands with the greatest
servir
 readiness, and the most profound submission. Neither ointments,
promptitude *pâtes ni*
 chaplets of flowers, nor rich perfumes were wanting. The table
guirlande *éparné*
 was loaded with the most exquisite delicacies of every kind. Damocles
 fancied himself amongst the gods. In the midst of all this happiness
croire
 he sees, (let down) from the roof over his head, a glittering sword
descendre *plafond*
 hung by a single hair. The sight of destruction thus threatening
suspendu *mort*
 him, soon (put a stop to) his joy and revelling. The pomp of his
interrompre *plaisir pl*
 attendants, and the glitter of the carved plate, gave him no longer
serveur pl *brillant* *cisé*
 any pleasure. He dreads to (stretch forth) his hand to the table.
craindre *porter*
 He throws off the chaplet of roses. He hastens to (remove from) his
quitter
 dangerous situation, and at last begs the king to restore him to his
 former humble condition, (having no desire) to enjoy (any
précédent 31 30 *ne désirant pas* *plus*
 longer) such a dreadful kind of happiness.
longtemps * *

VIL. DAMON AND PYTHIAS.

Damon and Pythias (of the Pythagorean sect in philosophy) lived
philosophes de la secte de Pythagore
 (in the) time of Dionysius, the tyrant of Sicily. Their mutual
du Denis
 friendship was so strong, that they were ready to die for one another.
 One of the two (for it is not known which) being condemned to
 death by the tyrant, obtained leave to go into his own country, to
 settle his affairs, on condition that the other should consent to be
 imprisoned in his stead, and put to death for him, if he did not
 return before the day of execution. The attention of (every one),
chacun
 and especially of the tyrant himself, (was excited to the highest pitch);
était dans la plus grande attente
 as every body was curious to see what should be the event of so
étant issue
 strange an affair. When the time was almost elapsed, and he who
écoulé
 was gone did not appear, the rashness of the other whose sanguine
parti
 friendship (had put him upon running) (so seemingly desperate a
avait fait courir un danger en apparence si
 hazard), was universally blamed. But he still declared that he
inévitable 98 *persistait à soutenir*
 had not (the least shadow of) doubt (in his mind) of his friend's
le plus léger
 fidelity. The event showed how well he knew him. He came in
que
 due time, and (surrendered himself) to that fate which he had
se soumettre une destinée
 no reason to think he should escape, and which he did not wish
sujet pût éviter à laquelle
 to escape by leaving his friend to suffer it in his place. Such fide-
échapper subir
 lity softened even the savage heart of Dionysius himself. He
farouche
 pardoned the condemned. He gave the two friends to
à celui qui avait été condamné remit dans
 one another; and (begged that they would take him-
les bras l'un de l'autre les pria de l'admettre en tiers dans leur
 self in for a third.)
amitié

 VIII. DESTRUCTION OF THE ALEXANDRIAN LIBRARY.
d'Alexandrie

When Alexandria was taken by the Mahometans, Amrus, their
 —drie f —

commander, found there Philoponus, whose conversation highly
chef pleased him, as Amrus (was a lover of) letters, and Philoponus *beaucoup*
aimer was a learned man. On a certain day Philoponus said to him : " You
 have visited all the repositories or public warehouses in Alexandria,
depôt and you have sealed up (things of every sort) that (are found)
mettre le scellé sur les différents objets there. As to those things that may be useful to you, I presume to
se trouver say nothing ; but as to things of no service to you, some of
qui ne vous sont d'aucun usage them may (be more suitable to me)." Amrus said to him : " And
me convenir davantage what is it you want ? " " The philosophical books," replied he,
vouloir " preserved in the royal libraries." " This," said Amrus, " is a
déposés request upon which I cannot decide. You desire a thing where
demande I can issue no orders, till I have leave from Omar, the commander
donner of the faithful." Letters were accordingly written to Omar,
on écrit informing him of what Philoponus had said ; and (an answer was
—mer returned by Omar to the following purpose :) " As to the books of
Omar répondit en ces termes which you have made mention, if (there be contained in them what)
ce qu'ils contiennent accords with the book of God, meaning the Koran, there is with-
c'est-à-dire out them, in the book of God, all that is sufficient. But if there is
on trouve any thing in them repugnant to that book, we (in no respect) want
de contraire them. Order them therefore to be all destroyed." Amrus upon
faites this ordered (them to be dispersed) through the baths of
cette réponse qu'on les distribuât dans Alexandria, and to be there burnt (in making the baths warm).
qu'on les y brûlât pour chauffer les bains After this manner, in the space of six months, they were all consumed.
de Thus ended this noble library ; and thus began, if it had not begun
superbe sooner, the age of barbarism and ignorance.
pl

IX. THE ADVANTAGES OF A GOOD EDUCATION.

I consider a human soul without education like marble in the quarry, which shows none of its inherent beauties, until the skill of the polisher fetches out the colours, makes the surface² shine¹, and discovers every (ornamental cloud), spot, and vein, (that runs through the body of it). Education³, (after the same manner)¹, when it works upon a noble mind, (draws out to view) every latent virtue and perfection, which, without such helps, are never able (to make their appearance.)

If my reader will (give me leave) to change so soon the allusion upon him, I shall (make use) of the same instance, to illustrate the force of education, which Aristotle has brought to explain his doctrine of substantial forms, when he tells us that a statue lies hid in a block of marble, and the art of the statuary only clears away the superfluous matter, and removes the rubbish. The figure is in the stone, and the sculptor only finds it. What sculpture is to a block of marble, education is to a human soul. The philosopher, the saint, or the hero; the wise, the good, or the great man; very often lie hid, and concealed in a plebeian, which a proper education might have disinterred, and have brought to light. I am therefore much delighted with reading the accounts of savage nations, and with contemplating those virtues which are wild and uncultivated; to see courage exerting itself in fierceness, resolution in obstinacy, wisdom in cunning, patience in sullenness and despair.

Men's passions operate variously, and appear in different kinds of actions, according as they are more or less rectified and swayed by

reason. When one hears of negroes, who upon the death of their masters, or upon changing their service, hang themselves upon the next tree, as it frequently happens in our American plantations, who can forbear admiring their fidelity, though it expresses itself in so dreadful a manner? What might not that savage greatness of soul, which appears in these poor wretches on many occasions, (be raised to), were it rightly cultivated? And what colour of excuse can there be for the contempt with which we treat this part of our species; (that we should not) put them upon the common foot of humanity; (that we should only set) an insignificant fine upon (the man) who murders them; nay, (that we should, as much as in us lies, cut them off from) the prospects of happiness in another world, as well as in this, and denying them that which we (look upon) as the proper means for attaining it?

considérer à parvenir y

It is therefore an unspeakable blessing to be born in those parts of the world where wisdom and knowledge flourish; though it must be confessed there are, even in these parts, several poor uninstructed persons, who are but little above those nations of which I (have been here) speaking; as those who have had the advantages of a more liberal education, rise above one another by several different degrees of perfection. For, to return to our statue in the block of marble, we see it sometimes only begun to be chipped, sometimes rough-hewn, and but just sketched into a human figure; sometimes we see the man appearing distinctly in all his limbs and features; sometimes we find the figure wrought up to great elegance; but we seldom meet with any to which the hand of a Phidias or a Praxiteles could not give several (nice touches and finishings). —

avec beaucoup de Spectator.

X. DIGNITY OF HUMAN NATURE.

In forming our notions of human nature, we are very apt
les notions que nous nous formons *porté*
 to make comparison betwixt men and animals, which are the only
une
 creatures endowed with thought, that fall under our senses. Cer-
idées
 tainly this comparison is very favourable to mankind; on the one
espèce humaine
 hand, we see a creature, whose thoughts are not limited by any
idée
 narrow bounds, either of place or time; who carries his researches
*borne * lieu*
 into the most distant regions of this globe, and beyond this globe,
jusque dans
 to the planets and heavenly bodies; looks back to consider the
jusqu'à
 first origin of the human race; casts his eyes forward to see the
qui
 influence of his actions upon posterity, and the judgments which will
qui porter regard
 be formed of his character a thousand years hence: a creature who
dans
 traces causes and effects to great lengths and
examine l'enchaînement des *dans toute son étendue*
 intricacy, extracts general principles from particular
dans tous ses détours qui tirer
 appearances, improves upon his discoveries, corrects his mistakes,
*qui perfectionner **
 and makes his very errors profitable. On the other hand, we (are
mettre même 31 à profit
 presented) with a creature the very reverse of this; limited in its
*trouver **
 observations and reasonings to a few sensible objects which surround
quelque
 it, without curiosity, without a foresight, blindly conducted by
 instinct, and arriving in a very short time at its utmost perfection,
** peu de*
 beyond which it is never able to advance a single step. What a
de
 difference is there betwixt these creatures, and how exalted a notion
*quelle haute * idée*
 must we entertain of the former, in comparison of the latter!—
devoir avoir

Hume's Essays.

XI. DETACHED SENTENCES.

There is an heroic innocence as well as an heroic courage.
 It is wiser to prevent a quarrel beforehand, than to revenge it afterwards.

No revenge is more heroic, than that which torments envy by doing good.

A contented mind, and a good conscience, will make a man happy in all conditions.

He knows not how to fear, who dares to die.

There is but one way of fortifying the soul against all gloomy presages and terrors of the mind ; and that is, by securing to ourselves the friendship and protection of that Being, who disposes of events, and governs futurity.

Without a friend the world is but a wilderness.

A man may have a thousand intimate acquaintances, and not a friend among them. If you have one friend, think yourself happy.

Prosperity gains friends, and adversity tries them.

Ingratitude is a crime so shameful, that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge himself guilty of it.

By others' faults wise men correct their own.

The prodigal robs his heir, the miser robs himself.

Though a man may become learned by another's learning, he can never be wise but by his own wisdom.

Men are sometimes accused of pride, merely because their accusers would be proud themselves if they were in their place.

The difference there is betwixt honour and honesty seems to be chiefly in the motive. The honest man does that from duty which the man of honour does for the sake of character.

A man should never be ashamed to own he has been in the wrong ; which is but saying in other words, that he is wiser to-day than he was yesterday.

Complaisance renders a superior amiable, an equal agreeable, and an inferior acceptable.

Excess of ceremony shows want of breeding. That civility is the best which excludes all superfluous formality.

Truth is born with us, and we must do violence to nature, to shake off our veracity.

There cannot be a greater treachery, than first to raise a confidence and then deceive it.

It is as great a point of wisdom to hide ignorance, as to discover knowledge.

Custom is the plague of wise men, and the idol of fools.

As to be perfectly just is an attribute of the divine nature, to be so to the utmost of our abilities, is the glory of men.

Anger may glance into the breast of a wise man, but rests only in the bosom of a fool.

To err is human : to forgive, divine.

We should take a prudent care for the future, but so as to enjoy the present. It is no part of wisdom, to be miserable to-day, because we may happen to be so to-morrow.

He that is truly polite knows how to contradict with respect, and to please without adulation ; and is equally remote from an insipid complaisance, and a low familiarity.

The pupil, having been through the grammar, should learn to distinguish the difference between a few words and expressions which may appear synonymous. We here give some of the most familiar, to serve as an exercise :

C'est à vous à.	Faire observer.
C'est à vous de.	Faire remarquer.
Aider à quelqu'un.	Oublier à.
Aider quelqu'un.	Oublier de.
Anoblir.	Participer à.
Ennobler.	Participer de.
Assurer quelqu'un.	Se plaindre de ce que.
Assurer à quelqu'un.	Se plaindre que.
Atteindre à.	Plus de.
Atteindre quelque chose.	Plus que.
Ennuyant.	Rapport au.
Ennuyeux.	Rapport avec.
Imposer.	Suppléer.
En imposer.	Suppléer à.
Matinal.	Retrancher à.
Matineux.	Retrancher de.
Insulter quelqu'un.	Ne servir à rien.
Insulter à.	Ne servir de rien.
Joindre à.	Succomber à.
Joindre avec.	Succomber de, &c. &c.
Mêler à.	
Mêler avec.	



THE END.

LONDON:
SPOTTISWOODES and SHAW,
New-street-Square.

APPROVED SCHOOL BOOKS.

I.

KEY TO THE EXERCISES IN LAMBERT'S EDITION OF HAMEL'S FRENCH GRAMMAR. By N. LAMBERT. 12mo. 4s. bound.

II.

NEW UNIVERSAL FRENCH GRAMMAR; being an accurate System of French Accidence and Syntax, on a Methodical Plan. By N. HAMEL, Graduate in the University of Caen, and Rector of the Town of L'Aigle, in Normandy. New Edition, carefully corrected and greatly improved. 12mo. 4s. bound.

III.

FRENCH GRAMMATICAL EXERCISES; adapted to the New Universal French Grammar. By N. HAMEL, Graduate in the University of Caen, and Rector of the Town of L'Aigle, in Normandy. New Edition, carefully revised and greatly improved, 12mo. 4s.

KEY, 12mo. 3s. bound.

IV.

THE WORLD IN MINIATURE; containing a faithful Account of the Situation, Extent, Productions, Government, Population, Manners, Curiosities, &c. of the different Countries of the World. For Translation into French. By N. HAMEL, Graduate in the University of Caen, and Rector of the Town of L'Aigle, in Normandy. New Edition, corrected and brought down to the present time, 12mo. 4s. 6d. bound.

V.

A GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE: with Practical Exercises. By N. WANOSTROCHT, LL.D. New Edition, revised and enlarged by J. C. TARVER, Eton College; 12mo. 4s. bound.

Also, by M. WANOSTROCHT,
FRENCH VOCABULARY. 12mo. 3s.

KEY to the GRAMMAR. 12mo. 3s.

TELEMAQUE. 12mo. 4s. 6d.

RECUEIL CHOISI. 12mo. 3s.

NUMA POMPILIUS. 12mo. 4s.

GIL BLAS. 12mo. 5s.

LIVRE des ENFANS. 12mo. 2s.

VI.

TARDY'S EXPLANATORY FRENCH PRONOUNCING DICTIONARY: wherein the exact Sound and Articulation of every syllable is distinctly marked, according to the principles of French pronunciation. New Edition, corrected and enlarged by J. C. J. Tarver, French Master, Eton. Fcp. 8vo. 7s. bound.

"The feature which distinguishes this dictionary from its thousand and one contemporaries, is the manner in which the explanation of the pronunciation is given. Mr. Tarver has justly assumed that there are certain sounds of French letters which cannot be represented by English Combinations of letters; and he therefore explains them by French analogies. This is a bold and happy innovation, and must — if anything can, short of a residence in France, or long intercourse with the natives of the country — assist the student to a correct orthoepy." — *Court Journal*.

VII.

ROWAN'S NEW MODERN FRENCH READING-BOOK. Morceaux Choisis des Auteurs Modernes, à l'usage de la Jeunesse. With a Translation of the new and difficult words and idiomatic phrases which occur in the work. By Miss F. M. ROWAN. Fcp. 8vo. 6s. bound.

"A valuable assistant to teachers at seminaries, and to all those who are studying the French Language." — *Bell's Messenger*.

"In this volume we have many good specimens of the style of Balzac, Dumas, Léon Goslan, Jules Janin, Lamartine, Capefigue, Sue, Soulié, and other popular French writers. The selection is well made; and there is, at the end of the work, a translation of the numerous words and phrases which have crept into use of late years, and for which none of the school lexicographers make provision. It is worth all the *recueils choisis*." — *Court Journal*.

VIII.

NUGENT'S POCKET DICTIONARY of the FRENCH and ENGLISH LANGUAGES; in Two Parts. 1. French and English; 2. English and French. Containing the following Additions and Improvements: — 1. New Words in general Use in each Language. 2. Examples and Phrases, to facilitate the Reading of modern Writers, but especially composing in French. 3. Directions as to the Choice to be made of the French Word best adapted to express the idea of the Writer or Speaker. 4. Prepositions annexed to the French Verbs and Adjectives, showing what Case they govern. New Edition, carefully revised and arranged. By J. C. TARVER, French Master to Eton College; 18mo. 5s. 6d. bound.

IX.

NUGENT'S FRENCH-ENGLISH and ENGLISH-FRENCH DICTIONARY. Edited by J. OUISSKAU, A.M. New Edition, printed in large type. Square 12mo. 7s. 6d. bound.

X.

L'INTERLOCUTORE ITALIANO; ossia, Moderni Colloquii Italiani, in una Serie di Conversazioni Familiari ed Interessantissime, ad uso della Gioventù amante della bella ed armoniosa Favella Toscana: intersperse di Aneddoti e Ragguagli. Con un Vocabolario contenente tutte le Parole che vi si trovano. Da GIULIA A. BENELACHI. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

LONDON:

LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, AND LONGMANS.
(AND THE OTHER PROPRIETORS.)

LONDON : 39, PATERNOSTER ROW :
MARCH 31, 1861.

A Select Catalogue of
BOOKS ON EDUCATION,

PRINTED FOR
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, & LONGMANS.

THE ENGLISH LANGUAGE.

Grammars, Reading Books, and Miscellaneous Works.

The History of England, in Gleig's School Series.

First Book of History—England. Forming the First Work of a New School Series, edited by the Rev. G. R. GLEIG, M.A., Inspector-General of Military Schools. New Edition. 18mo. 2s. 6d. cloth; or in Two Parts, One Shilling each, sewed.

The British Colonies, in Gleig's School Series.

Second Book of History—The British Colonies. Being the Second Work of a New School Series, edited by the Rev. G. R. GLEIG, M.A., Inspector-General of Military Schools. New Edition. 18mo. One Shilling, sewed.

History of British India, in Gleig's School Series.

Third Book of History—British India. Being the Third Work of a New School Series, edited by the Rev. G. R. GLEIG, M.A., Inspector-General of Military Schools. New Edition. 18mo. One Shilling, sewed.

Sacred History, in Gleig's School Series.

Fourth Book of History—Sacred History. In Two Parts. By the Rev. G. R. GLEIG, M.A., Chaplain General to the Forces and Prebendary of St. Paul's. Forming the Fourth Work of the New School Series. 18mo. 2s. 6d. cloth; or in Two Parts, One Shilling each, sewed.

The Rev. Mr. G. R. Gleig's New School Series.

A New Series of Elementary Works, each forming a small volume, complete in itself, price One Shilling. Edited by the Rev. G. R. GLEIG, M.A., Inspector-General of Military Schools. Assisted by

W. J. BRODERIP, F.L.S., Z.S.;

WILLIAM HUGHES, F.R.G.S., late Professor of Geography in the College for Civil Engineers;

W. M'LEOD, Head Master of the Model School, and Master of Method in the Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea;

W. J. REYNOLDS, B.A., Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea;

THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham;

And other Eminent Persons.

Works preparing for immediate Publication.

An Explanatory English Grammar	} By W. M'LEOD.
A Graduated Series of Copy Books	
Mechanics	} By T. TATE.
Hydrostatics, Hydraulics, and Pneumatics	
Astronomy and Use of the Globes	
Light, Heat, and Magnetism	
Electricity, &c.	} By W. HUGHES
The Steam Engine	
General Geography	
Geography of the British Empire	
Algebra	By W. J. REYNOLDS.

School Register Book, on Mr. Moseley's plan.

A Register Book for Elementary Schools. On the plan recommended in the Report of the Rev. H. Moseley to the Committee of Council on Education for 1846 (*Minutes*, 1846, vol. i. p. 184). So arranged as to shew the progress of each child through the School; and ruled to contain Five Hundred Pupils' Names. Oblong folio, 7s. 6d. bound.

The Rev. R. Dawes's Elementary Reading Book.

Lessons and Tales: a Reading Book for the use of Children from Six to Ten Years of age; but chiefly intended for the Junior Classes in Elementary Schools. Edited by the Rev. RICHARD DAWES, M.A., Dean of Hereford. 18mo. with Woodcuts, One Shilling, sewed.

Lessons on Industrial Education.

For the use of Female Schools. By a Lady. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

The Rev. John Hunter's English Grammar.

Text-Book of English Grammar: a Treatise on the Etymology and Syntax of the English Language; including Exercises in Parsing, Punctuation, and the Correction of Improper Diction; an Etymological Vocabulary of Grammatical Terms, &c. By Rev. J. HUNTER, M.A., Vice-Principal of the Training College, Battersea. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Hunter: Exercises in English Parsing,

Progressively arranged. New Edition, remodelled and enlarged; and adapted to the Author's Text-book of English Grammar. With Questions, suggesting a Course of Oral Instruction for Junior Pupils; and an Appendix. By the Rev. JOHN HUNTER, M.A. 12mo. 6d. sewed.

Progressive Exercises in English Composition.

By the Rev. R. G. PARKER, A.M. New Edition. 12mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

Graham's Art of English Composition.

English; or, The Art of Composition explained in a series of Instructions and Examples. By G. F. GRAHAM. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 6s. cloth.

Carpenter's Spelling Book.

The Scholar's Spelling Assistant; wherein the Words are arranged according to their principles of Accentuation. By T. CARPENTER. New Edition, corrected throughout. 12mo. 1s. 6d. bound.

Mavor's Spelling Book.

The English Spelling-Book; accompanied by a Progressive Series of easy and familiar Lessons: intended as an Introduction to the Reading and Spelling of the English Language. By Dr. MAVOR. New Edition. 12mo. with Frontispiece, and 44 Wood Engravings, 1s. 6d. bound.

Ross: An Elementary Etymological Manual of the

English Language, for the use of Schools. To which are prefixed, Practical Observations on Teaching Etymology. By WILLIAM ROSS, Inspector of Schools for the Manchester Education Society. New Edition. 18mo. 6d. sewed.

Mr. M'Leod's Elementary Reading Book.

A First Reading Book: for the use of Families and Schools. By W. M'LEOD, Head Master of the Model School, Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea. New Edition. 18mo. with Woodcuts, 3d. sewed.—Or, as Reading Lessons, for Children's Schools; in 30 Broadside Sheets, printed from a very bold type, with Woodcuts, price 3s.

Mr. M'Leod's Second Poetical Reading Book.

The Second Poetical Reading-Book. Compiled for the use of Families and Schools; with Introductory Descriptions, Explanatory Notes, and Exercises in Spelling and Etymology. By WALTER M'LEOD, Head Master of the Model School, Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea. 12mo. 1s. 8d. sewed in cloth.

The Rev. F. C. Cook's First School Poetry.

A First Book of Poetry; for Elementary Schools. By the Rev. F. C. Cook, M.A., one of Her Majesty's Inspectors of Church Schools. New Edition. 18mo. price 9d. sewed.

The Rev. F. C. Cook's Select School Poetry.

Poetry for Schools; intended to serve as an Introduction to the Study of the Great Classical Poets of England. Selected from Beattie, Collins, Cowper, Goldsmith, Gray, Milton, Shakspeare, and Spenser; with a few brief Foot-notes. By the Rev. F. C. Cook, M.A. 12mo. 2s. cloth.

The Modern Poetical Speaker :

A Collection of Pieces adapted for Recitation, carefully selected from the English Poets of the Nineteenth Century. By Mrs. Palliser. Dedicated, by permission, to the Right Hon. the Dowager Lady Lyttelton. New Edition. 12mo. 6s. bound.

Sewell : The New Speaker & Holiday Task Book.

Selected from classical Greek, Latin, and English writers:—Domosthenes, Thucydides, Homer, Sophocles, Cicero, Livy, Virgil, Lucretius, Shakspeare, Milton, Burke, Bacon, &c. By the Rev. W. SEWELL, B.D. 12mo. 6s. bound.

Maunder's Universal Class Book :

A New Series of Reading Lessons (original and selected) for Every Day in the Year: each Lesson recording some important Event in General History, Biography, &c., or detailing, in familiar language, interesting facts in Science. By SAMUEL MAUNDER. New Edition, revised. 12mo. 8s. bound.

Mrs. Marcet's Mary's Grammar.

Mary's Grammar: interspersed with Stories, and intended for the use of Girls. By JANE MARCET. New Edition. 18mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Mrs. Marcet's Willy's Grammar.

Willy's Grammar: interspersed with Stories, and intended for the use of Boys. By JANE MARCET. New Edition. 18mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

English Synonymes classified and explained :

With Practical Exercises, designed for Schools and Private Tuition. By G. F. GRAHAM. Fcp. 8vo. 7s. cloth.

English and Latin School Books.

By RICHARD HILEY, Head Master of the Leeds Collegiate School.

The Child's First English Grammar: divided into Easy and Progressive Lessons, copious Questions and Exercises. 18mo. 1s. sewd.

The Child's First Geography. For the use of Elementary Classes. New Edition. 18mo. 9d.

Abridgment of Hiley's English Grammar; together with appropriate Questions and Exercises. New Edit. 18mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

Practical English Composition. Part I.; or Junior Series: consisting of Four Courses of Exercises, progressively arranged and divided. New Edition. 12mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

English Grammar, Style, Rhetoric, and Poetry: to which are added, Preparatory Logic, and Advice on the Improvement of the Understanding. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Progressive Geography,

Consisting of Four Courses, divided into appropriate Lessons; with numerous Exercises appended to each. New Edition. 18mo. 2s. cloth.

English Exercises

adapted to Hiley's English Grammar, progressively arranged. New Edition improved, and adapted to the current Edition of the Grammar. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.—KEY. 12mo. 3s. cloth.

The Arithmetical Companion :

Intended, by miscellaneous Examples, to perfect the Pupil in a knowledge of Arithmetic. New Edition, considerably improved. 18mo. 2s. cloth.—KEY. 18mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

The Elements of Latin Grammar, for the use of Schools. New Edition; with selections from Zumpt, Kühner, Trebs, Schiller, Ruddiman, and Adams. 12mo. 3s. cloth.

Graham's Helps to English Grammar.

Helps to English Grammar; or, Easy Exercises for Young Children Illustrated by Engravings on Wood. By G. F. GRAHAM. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. cloth.

Graham's English Spelling Book.

English Spelling: with Rules and Exercises. Intended as a Class-Book for Schools or Home Teaching. By G. F. GRAHAM, Author of "English, or the Art of Composition;" "Helps to English Grammar," &c. 12mo. 1s.6d. cloth.

Stow's Training System.

The Training System, the Moral Training School, and the Normal Seminary. By David Stow, Esq., Honorary Secretary to the Glasgow Normal Free Seminary; Author of "Moral Training," &c. Eighth Edition, corrected and enlarged. Fcap 8vo. with Plates and Woodcuts, 6s. cloth.

**GEOGRAPHY AND ATLASES.****Goldsmith's Grammar of Geography improved.**

Goldsmith's Grammar of General Geography, for the use of Schools and Young Persons. An entirely New Edition (1861), carefully corrected to the present time, enlarged and improved: with the Physical Geography of each of the great Continents and of the Globe incorporated; a new set of Maps and Diagrams, including a large coloured *Physical Map of the World*; and an entirely new series of illustrative Plates. Edited by EDWARD HUGHES, F.R.G.S., Head Master of the Royal Naval Lower School, Greenwich Hospital. Fcp. 8vo. 3s. 6d. bound.

Bishop Butler's Modern and Ancient Geography.

A Sketch of Modern and Ancient Geography. By SAMUEL BUTLER, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Lichfield, formerly Head Master of Shrewsbury School. An entirely New Edition (1861), carefully revised throughout, with such Alterations introduced as continually progressive Discoveries and the latest Information have rendered necessary. Edited by the Author's Son, the Rev. THOMAS BUTLER, Rector of Langar. 8vo. 9s. boards.

Bishop Butler's Atlas of Modern Geography.

An Atlas of Modern Geography, comprising Twenty-eight full-coloured Maps, and a complete Index of all the Names, referred to their Latitude and Longitude. By SAMUEL BUTLER, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Lichfield. An entirely New Edition (1861), nearly all re-engraved, enlarged, and greatly improved; with Corrections from the Government Surveys, and the most recent Sources of Information. Edited by the Author's Son, the Rev. THOMAS BUTLER. Royal 8vo. 12s. half-bound.

Each Map may be had *separately*, price 3d. plain; 4d. coloured.

Bishop Butler's Atlas of Ancient Geography.

An Atlas of Ancient Geography, comprising Twenty-three full-coloured Maps, and a complete Index of all the Names, referred to their Latitude and Longitude. By SAMUEL BUTLER, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Lichfield. An entirely New Edition (1861), nearly all re-engraved, enlarged, and greatly improved; with Corrections from the new French Survey of the Morea, Sprünker's large Atlas Antiquus, and the works of Dr. Robinson, Col. Chesney, Sir W. Gell, Layard, and Kiepert. Edited by the Author's Son, the Rev. THOMAS BUTLER. Royal 4to. 12s. half-bound.

Butler's Atlas of Ancient and Modern Geography.

A General Atlas of Modern and Ancient Geography, comprising Fifty-one full-coloured Maps, and complete Indexes of all the Names, referred to their Latitude and Longitude. By SAMUEL BUTLER, D.D., late Lord Bishop of Lichfield. An entirely New Edition (1861), nearly all re-engraved, re-arranged, enlarged, and greatly improved; with several additional Maps, and very copious Corrections, in both the Ancient and Modern Divisions, from all the most recent sources of authentic information. Edited by the Author's Son, the Rev. THOMAS BUTLER. Royal 4to. 24s. half-bound.

Butler's Outline Geographical Copy-Books.

New Editions of the Two Collections of Map Projections or Outline Maps, altered to correspond with the new and improved Editions of Bishop Butler's Ancient and Modern Atlas; the Ancient Copy-Book consisting of Twenty-three Outlines, and the Modern Copy-Book of Twenty eight Outlines, intended to be filled up and coloured by the Pupils. Engraved by S. HALL. Oblong 4to. price 4s. each collection, or 7s. together.

*. Each Modern Outline Map may be had *separately*, price Twopence.

S. Hall's First School Atlas. Price 1s. 6d.

A First or Elementary Atlas, for the use of Schools. Containing Ten Maps, engraved by S. Hall. New Edition. Oblong 4to. 1s. 6d. coloured.

Bowman's Questions on Hall's First Atlas.

Questions adapted to S. Hall's First or Elementary Atlas, for the use of Schools, Compiled by Thomas Bowman, B.A., late Head Master of the Cheltenham New Proprietary School. 12mo. 2s. cloth.

S. Hall's Geographical Copy-Book;

Or, Map Projections: adapted to S. Hall's *First or Elementary Atlas*, for the use of Schools. Intended to be filled up and coloured by the Pupils. Engraved by S. Hall. Oblong 4to. price One Shilling, sewed.

*. Each Map Projection may be had *separately*, price One Penny.

S. Hall's First Geographical Copy-Book;

Or, Outline Maps. Being a Series of Outline Maps adapted to S. Hall's *First or Elementary Atlas*. Intended to be filled up and coloured by the Pupils. Engraved by S. Hall. Containing the Coast Line, and intended as an Introduction to the "Map Projections adapted to S. Hall's Elementary Atlas." Oblong 4to. price One Shilling, sewed.

*. Each Outline Map may be had *separately*, price One Penny.

The Geography of Palestine or the Holy Land,

Including Phœnicia and Philistia: with a Description of the Towns and Places in Asia Minor visited by the Apostles. By W. M'Leod, Head Master of the Model School, and Master of Method in Royal Military Asylum, Chelsea. New Edition. 12mo. with Map, 1s. 6d. cloth.

Hughes's New School Physical Atlas.

A New School Atlas of Physical, Political, and Commercial Geography. With Descriptive Letterpress. By EDWARD HUGHES, F.R.G.S.; Assoc. Inst. C.E.; Head Master of the Royal Naval Lower School, Greenwich Hospital. In One Volume, medium 8vo. [Preparing for publication.]

Mangnall's Geography, revised.

A Compendium of Geography; for the use of Schools, Private Families, &c. By R. MANGNALL. A new Edition, revised and corrected throughout. 12mo. 7s. 6d. bound.

Hartley's Geography, and Outlines.

Geography for Youth. By the Rev. J. HARTLEY. New Edition, containing the latest Changes. 12mo. 4s. 6d. bound.—By the same Author,

Outlines of Geography: the First Course for Children. New Edit. 16mo. 9d. ad.

**EDITIONS OF LATIN CLASSIC AUTHORS.****The Rev. J. T. White's Edition of Tacitus.**

The Germany and Agricola of Tacitus. With English Notes. By the Rev. John T. White, M.A. Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital, London; Editor of Xenophon's *Anabasis*, and of Bradley's School Editions of *Eutropius*, *Cornelius Nepos*, *Phædrus*, and *Ovid's Metamorphoses*. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

Bradley's Cornelius Nepos improved by White.

Cornelius Nepos: with English Notes and Questions. By the Rev. C. BRADLEY, M.A. A New Edition, corrected and considerably enlarged by the addition of Explanatory and Grammatical Notes, by the Rev. J. T. WHITE, M.A., Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Bradley's Eutropius improved by White.

Eutropii Historiæ Romanæ Libri Septem. The First Seven Books of Eutropius's Epitome of the History of Rome: with English Notes and Questions, and a copious Vocabulary. By the Rev. C. BRADLEY, M.A. New Edition, corrected and considerably enlarged, by the Rev. J. T. WHITE, M.A.; Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Hickie's Livy.

The First Five Books of Livy: with English Explanatory Notes, and Examination Questions. By D. B. HICKIE, LL.D. New Edit. Post 8vo. 8s. 6d. boards.

C. Crispi Sallustii Opera.

With an English Commentary, and Geographical and Historical Indexes, by CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. cloth.

C. Julii Cæsaris Commentarii de Bello Gallico.

Ex recensione FR. OUDENDORPII. With Explanatory Notes, and Historical, Geographical, and Archæological Indexes. By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. New Edition. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

Barker's Cicero de Amicitia, &c.

Cicero's Cato Major, and Lælius: with English Explanatory and Philological Notes; and with an English Essay on the Respect paid to Old Age by the Egyptians, the Persians, the Spartans, the Greeks, and the Romans. By the late E. H. BARKER. New Edition. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

M. Tullii Ciceronis Orationes Selectæ.

Ex recensione Jo. AUG. ERNESTI. With an English Commentary, and Historical, Geographical, and Legal Indexes. By CHARLES ANTHON, LL.D. New Edition. 12mo. 6s. cloth.

Bradley's Phædrus improved by White.

Bradley's Select Fables from Phædrus, for the use of Schools. With English Notes, Questions, and Vocabulary. A New Edition, corrected, and considerably enlarged by the addition of Grammatical and Explanatory Notes. By the Rev. J. T. WHITE, M.A., Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital, London. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Bradley's Ovid's Metamorphoses improved by White.

Ex Ovidii Metamorphoseon Libris Fabulæ Quædam in usum Scholarum excerptæ. Bradley's Selections from Ovid's Metamorphoses, for the use of Schools, with English Notes and Questions. A New Edition, carefully revised and improved by the Rev. J. T. WHITE, M.A., Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital, London. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

Valpy's Ovid's Epistles and Tibullus.

Electa ex Ovidio et Tibullo: cum Notis Anglicis. By the Rev. F. E. J. VALPY, M.A. Master of Burton-on-Trent School. New Edition. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

Valpy's Edition of Virgil.

P. Virgilli Maronis Bucolica, Georgica, Æneis. Accedunt, in gratiam Juventutis, Notæ quædam Anglicæ scriptæ. Edited by A. J. VALPY, M.A. New Edition. 18mo. 7s. 6d. bound; the TEXT only, 3s. 6d. bound.

Virgil, with 6,000 Marginal References, by Pycroft.

The Æneid, Georgics, and Bucolica of Virgil: with Marginal References, and concise Notes from Wagner, Heyne, and Anthon. Edited, from the Text of Wagner, by the Rev. JAS. PYCROFT, B.A. Trin. Coll. Oxford. Fap. 8vo. 7s. 6d. bound; without Notes, 3s. 6d. bound.

Valpy's Horace.

Q. Horatii Flacci Opera. Ad fidem optimorum exemplarium castigata; cum Notulis Anglicis. Edited by A. J. VALPY, M.A. New Edition. 18mo. 6s. bound; without Notes, 3s. 6d. bound.

Girdlestone and Osborne's Horace.

The Works of Horace. Adapted to the Use of Young Persons, by the Omission of Offensive Words and Passages; and illustrated by original English Notes, embodying the most recent Philological Information. By the Rev. C. GIRDLESTONE, M.A. and Rev. W. A. OSBORNE, M.A. 12mo. 7s. 6d. bound.

Reinhardt's Terence, by Dr. Hickie.

P. Terentii Afri Comedie Sex. Ex Editione TH. FRID. GOD. REINHARDT. With English Explanatory Notes, a Life and Chronology of Terence, and Excursuses. By D. B. HICKIE, LL.D. New Edition. 12mo. 9s. 6d. cloth.



ELEMENTARY LATIN WORKS.

Mr. C. D. Yonge's New Latin Gradus.

A Gradus ad Parnassum of the Latin Language; containing every Word used by the Poets of good authority; and in which the words are classed according to their age, their different Meanings carefully distinguished, the Phrases selected solely from the purest Authors, and the Authorities accurately cited. For the use of Eton, Westminster, Winchester, Harrow, and Charterhouse Schools; King's College, London; and Marlborough College. By C. D. YONGE, B.A. Post 8vo. 9s. bound.

The Illustrated Companion to the Latin Dictionary

and Greek Lexicon: forming a Glossary of all the words representing Visible Objects, connected with the Arts, Manufactures, and Every-day Life of the Ancients. With Representations of nearly Two Thousand Objects from the Antique. By ANTHONY RICH, Jun. B.A. late of Caius College, Cambridge. Post 8vo. with 2,000 Wood Engravings, 21s. cloth.

Riddle's large Latin-English Lexicon.

A copious and critical Latin-English Lexicon, founded on the German-Latin Dictionaries of Dr. William Freund. By the Rev. J. E. RIDDLE, M.A. of St. Edmund Hall, Oxford. Uniform with "Yonge's English-Greek Lexicon." Post 4to. 50s. cloth.

Riddle's Complete Latin Dictionary.

A Complete Latin-English and English-Latin Dictionary. For the use of Colleges and Schools. By the Rev. J. E. RIDDLE, M.A. New Edition, corrected and enlarged. 8vo. 31s. 6d. cloth.

Separately { The English-Latin Dictionary, 10s. 6d. cloth.
The Latin-English Dictionary, £1. 1s. cloth.

Riddle's Young Scholar's Latin Dictionary.

The Young Scholar's Latin-English and English-Latin Dictionary; being the Rev. Mr. Riddle's Abridgment of his larger Dictionary. New Edition, corrected and enlarged. Square 12mo. 12s. bound.

Separately { The Latin-English Dictionary, 7s. bound.
The English-Latin Dictionary, 6s. 6d. bound.

Riddle and Arnold's English-Latin Lexicon.

A Copious English-Latin Lexicon, founded on the German-Latin of Dr. C. E. Georges. By the Rev. J. E. Riddle, M.A. Author of "A Complete Latin-English Dictionary," &c.; and the Rev. T. K. Arnold, M.A., Rector of Lyndon, late Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge. New Edition. 8vo. 25s. cloth.

Zumpt's Grammar of the Latin Language.

Translated from the Enlarged Edition of the original, and adapted for the use of English students, by L. SCHMITZ, Ph. D. Rector of the High School of Edinburgh; with new Additions and Corrections, communicated to Dr. SCHMITZ by Prof. ZUMPT. New Edit. 8vo. 14s. cloth.

Zumpt's School Grammar of the Latin Language.

Translated by Dr. LEONHARD SCHMITZ. 12mo. 4s. cloth.

Valpy's Latin Grammar.

The Elements of Latin Grammar: with Notes. By R. VALPY, D.D. New Edition, with numerous Additions and Corrections. 12mo. 2s. 6d. bound.

Pycroft's Latin Grammar Practice.

Latin Grammar Practice: 1. Lessons in Vocabulary, Nouns, Adjectives, and Verbs, in Grammatical Order; 2. Latin, made out of each column, for Translation; 3. English, for re-translation. By the Rev. JAMES PYCROFT, B.A. New Edition. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Yonge's Latin Prose Exercises.

Exercises in Latin Prose Composition. For the use of Eton, Winchester, Westminster, Harrow, and King's College, London. By Charles Duke Yonge, B.A. Author of "A New Latin Gradus," and "A New English-Greek Lexicon." 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Kennedy: The Child's Latin Primer;

Or, First Latin Lessons: Extracted (with Model Questions and Exercises) from "An Elementary Latin Grammar," by the Rev. B. H. KENNEDY, D.D. Head Master of Shrewsbury School. 12mo. 2s. cloth.

Dr. Kennedy's Latin Vocabulary.

A Latin Vocabulary, arranged on Etymological Principles, as an Exercise-Book, and first Latin Dictionary for the use of the Lower Classes in Schools. By the Rev. B. H. KENNEDY, D.D. Head Master of Shrewsbury School. 12mo. 2s. 6d.

Dr. Kennedy's First Latin Reading Book.

Tirocinium; or, a First Latin Reading Book. Adapted to the Author's "Child's Latin Primer." By the Rev. B. H. KENNEDY, D.D. Head Master of Shrewsbury School. 12mo. 2s. cloth.

Dr. Kennedy's Second Latin Reading Book.

Palaestra Latina; or, a Second Latin Reading Book. Adapted to the Author's "Elementary Latin Grammar." By the Rev. B. H. KENNEDY, D.D., Head Master of Shrewsbury School. 12mo. 3s. cloth.

Dr. Kennedy's Latin Grammar.

An Elementary Grammar of the Latin Language, for the use of Schools, by the Rev. B. H. KENNEDY, D.D. Head Master of Shrewsbury School. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Moody's Eton Latin Grammar in English.

The New Eton Latin Grammar, with the Marks of Quantity and the Rules of Accent; containing the Eton Latin Grammar as used at Eton, and its Translation into English: with Notes and Additions. By Rev. CLEMENT MOODY, M.A. New Edition. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth. The Accidence, separately, price 1s.

Valpy's Latin Delectus, and Key.

Delectus Sententiarum et Historiarum; ad usum Tironum accommodatus: cum Notulis et Lexico. Auctore R. VALPY, D.D. New Edition. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth. KEY. New Edition, carefully revised. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

containing Rules and Exercises intended to illustrate the Manners, Customs, and Opinions, mentioned by the Roman Poets, and to render familiar the principal Idioms of the Latin Language. By the late CHRISTOPHER RAPIER, A.B. — New Edition, revised by the Rev. T. K. ARNOLD, M.A. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.—KEY, 2s. 6d. sewed.

Progressive Exercises in Latin Elegiac Verse. Adapted, with References throughout, to the Syntax of Dr. Kennedy's Latin Grammar; and accompanied by Marginal References to the Works of the best Latin Poets. By the Rev. E. WALFORD, M.A. Scholar of Balliol College, Oxford, and Assistant-Master of Tunbridge School. New Edition, corrected. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Introductory Latin Exercises to those of Clarke, Ellis, Turner, and others: designed for the Younger Classes. By NATHANIEL HOWARD. New Edition. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Xenophon's Expedition of Cyrus into Upper Asia: principally from the Text of Schneider. With English Notes, for the use of Schools. By the Rev. J. T. WHITE, M.A., Junior Upper Master of Christ's Hospital. 12mo. 7s. 6d. bound.

Xenophon's Memorabilia of Socrates. From the text of Kuhner. With Notes, Critical and Explanatory, from the best Commentators, and by the Editor; Questions for Examination; and Indices. By D. B. HICKIE, LL.D. New Edition. Post 8vo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

The Anabasis of Xenophon. Chiefly according to the Text of Hutchinson. With Explanatory Notes, and Illustrations of Idioms from Viger, &c. copious Indexes, and Examination Questions. By F. C. BALFOUR, M.A. Oxon. F.R.A.S. LL.D. New Edition. Post8vo. 8s. 6d. boards.

Sophoclis Tragediarum superstites. Recensuit et brevi Annotatione instruxit
G. LINWOOD, M.A. *Ædis Christi apud Oxonienses Alumnus.* 8vo. 16s. cloth.

Sophocles, complete. From the Text of Hermann, Erfurd, &c.; with original Explanatory English Notes, Questions, and Indices. By Dr. BRASSE, Mr. BURNS, and Rev. F. VALPY. 2 vols. post8vo. 34s. cloth.

Æsopides. From the Text, and with a Translation of the Notes, Preface, and Supplement, of Porson; Critical and Explanatory Remarks, original and selected; Illustrations and Idioms from Matthis, Dawes, Viger, &c.; and a Synopsis of Metrical Systems. By DA. MASON. 8vo. 24s. cloth.

Homer's Iliad, complete: English Notes, and Questions to first Eight Books.
Text of Heyne. By the Rev. E. VALPY, B.D. late Master of Norwich School.
New Edition. 8vo. 10s. 6d. bound.—The Text only; 8vo. 6s. 6d. bound.

ELEMENTARY GREEK WORKS.

Yonge: An English-Greek Lexicon.

Containing all the Greek Words used by Writers of good authority; citing the Authorities in Chronological Order for every Word used; explaining the Construction; and giving the Declension or Conjugation of each word when irregular; and marking the Quantities of all doubtful Syllables. By C. D. YONGE, B.A. Post 4to. 21s. cloth.

Brasse's Greek Gradus.

A Greek Gradus; or, a Greek, Latin, and English Prosodial Lexicon: containing the Interpretation, in Latin and English, of all words which occur in the Greek Poets, from the Earliest Period to the time of Ptolemy Philadelphus. By the late Rev. Dr. BRASSE. With a Synopsis of the Greek Metres, by the Rev. J. R. Major, D.D. New Edit. revised by the Rev. F. E. J. Valpy, M.A. 8vo. 15s. cloth.

Giles's Greek and English Lexicon.

A Lexicon of the Greek Language, for the use of Colleges and Schools; containing —1. A Greek-English Lexicon, combining the advantages of an Alphabetical and Derivative Arrangement; 2. A copious English-Greek Lexicon. By the Rev. J. A. GILES, LL.D. New Edition. 8vo. 21s. cloth.

, The English-Greek Lexicon, separately. 7s. 6d. cloth.

Dr. Kennedy's Greek Grammar.

Græcæ Grammaticæ Institutio Prima. Rudimentis Etonensibus quantum potuit immutatis Syntaxin de suo addidit B. H. KENNEDY, S.T.P. New Edition. 12mo. 4s. 6d. cloth.

Valpy's Greek Grammar.

The Elements of Greek Grammar: with Notes. By R. VALPY, D.D. New Edit. 8vo. 6s. 6d. boards; bound, 7s. 6d.

Yonge's Greek Prose Exercises.

Exercises in Greek Prose Composition. For the use of Eton, Winchester, Harrow, and King's College, London. By CHARLES DUXE YONGE, B.A., Author of "An English-Greek Lexicon," "A Gradus of the Latin Language," "Exercises in Latin Prose Composition," and "Exercises for Latin Verse out of 'Own Sense.'" 12mo. 6s. 6d. cloth.

Pycroft's Greek Grammar Practice.

Three Parts: 1. Lessons in Vocabulary, Nouns, Adjectives, and Verbs in Grammatical order; 2. Greek, made out of each column for translation; 3. English for re-translation. By the Rev. J. PYCROFT, B.A. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cl.

Moody's Eton Greek Grammar in English.

The New Eton Greek Grammar; with the Marks of Accent, and the Quantity of the Penult: containing the Eton Greek Grammar in English, and the Syntax and Prosody as used at Eton; with numerous Additions. By the Rev. CLEMENT MOODY, A.M. New Edition. 12mo. 4s. cloth.

Valpy's Greek Delectus, and Key.

Delectus Sententiarum Græcarum, ad usum Tironum accommodatus: cum Notulis et Lexico. Auctore R. VALPY, D.D. Editio Novæ, eademque aucta et emendata. 12mo. 4s. cloth.—KEY. 12mo. 2s. 6d. sewed.

Valpy's Second Greek Delectus.

New Edition. 8vo. 9s. 6d. bound.

Valpy's Third Greek Delectus.

8vo. 15s. 6d. bound.

PART 1. PROSE. 8vo. 6s. 6d. bound.—PART 2. POETRY. 8vo. 9s. 6d. bound.

Howard's Introductory Greek Exercises, and Key.

Introductory Greek Exercises to those of Huntingford, Dunbar, Neilson, and others; arranged under Models, to assist the learner. By N. HOWARD. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. 6d. cloth.—KEY, 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Donaldson's Theatre of the Greeks.

The Theatre of the Greeks; or, a Series of Papers relating to the History and Criticism of the Greek Drama. Sixth Edition, revised and improved. With an Original Introduction and Notes by JOHN WILLIAM DONALDSON, B.D. 8vo. with Frontispiece and Wood Engravings, 15s. cloth.



WORKS BY THE REV. S. T. BLOOMFIELD, D.D.

Bloomfield's Greek Lexicon to the New Testament.

Greek and English Lexicon to the New Testament; especially adapted to the use of Colleges and the higher Classes in the Public Schools, but also intended as a convenient Manual for Biblical Students in general. New Edition, enlarged and improved. Fcp. 8vo. 10s. 6d. cloth.

Bloomfield's College and School Greek Testament.

The Greek Testament: with brief English Notes, Philological and Explanatory. Especially formed for the use of Colleges and the Public Schools, but also adapted for general purposes, where a larger work is not requisite. New Edition, enlarged and improved. Fcp. 8vo. 10s. 6d. cloth.

Bloomfield's Greek Testament.

The Greek Testament: with copious English Notes, Critical, Philological, and Explanatory. New Edition, enlarged and improved. 2 vols. 8vo. with Map of Palestine, £2. cloth.

Bloomfield's Annotations on the Greek Testament.

Additional Annotations, Critical, Philological, and Explanatory, on the New Testament: being a Supplemental Volume to the "Greek Testament with English Notes, in 2 vols. 8vo." By the Rev. S. T. BLOOMFIELD, D.D. of Cambridge and Oxford, and Vicar of Bisbrooke, Rutland. In One large Volume, of 460 pages, printed in double columns, uniformly with Dr. Bloomfield's larger Edition of the Greek Testament with English Notes; and so arranged as to be divisible into Two Parts, each of which may be bound up with the Volume to which it refers. 8vo. 15s. cloth.

Robinson's Lexicon to the Greek Testament.

A Greek and English Lexicon of the New Testament. By EDWARD ROBINSON, D.D. LL.D. Professor of Biblical Literature in the Union Theological Seminary, New York. A New Edition, revised and in great part rewritten; in One large Volume. 8vo. 18s. cloth.



HISTORY, CHRONOLOGY, AND MYTHOLOGY.

Thirlwall's History of Greece abridged.

A History of Greece, from the Earliest Time to the Taking of Corinth by the Romans, A.D. 146; mainly based upon Bishop Thirlwall's History of Greece. By Dr. LEONHARD SCHMITZ, F.R.S.E., Rector of the High School of Edinburgh. New Edition. 12mo. 7s. 6d. cloth.

Mr. Farr's Elementary History of England.

A School History of England, from the Earliest Period, to the Eleventh Year of the Reign of Queen Victoria; containing a Narrative of Civil and Military Transactions, and exhibiting a view of the Religion, Government and Laws, Literature, Arts, Commerce, Manners and Customs, &c. of the different Periods. By EDWARD FARR, Esq. F.S.A. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. 6d. bound.

The Rev. B. G. Johns' History of the Jews.

A Sketch of the History of the Jews, from the end of the captivity to the coming of the Messiah: with an Appendix of the Names of remarkable Persons and Places mentioned. By the Rev. B. G. JOHNS, Head Master of the Grammar School, College of God's Gift, Dulwich; late Normal Master of St. Mark's College, Chelsea. 12mo. with Map, 1s. 6d. cloth.

The Rev. J. Sedgwick's School History of France.

A History of France; from the Earliest Period to the Revolution of 1848. For the use of Young Persons and Schools. Edited by the Rev. JOHN SEDGWICK, M.A. Demy of Magdalen College, Oxford; and one of the Masters in the Ordnance School, Carshalton. Fcp. 8vo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Lempriere's Classical Dictionary, abridged.

For Public and Private Schools of both Sexes. By the late E. H. BARKER, Trinity College, Cambridge. New Edition, revised and corrected throughout, by J. CADVIN. 8vo. 12s. bound.

Blair's Chronological and Historical Tables.

From the Creation to the Present Time: with Additions and Corrections from the most Authentic Writers; including the Computation of St. Paul, as connecting the Period from the Exode to the Temple. Under the superintendence of Sir HENRY ELLIS, K.H. Imp. 8vo. 3ls. 6d. half-bound morocco.

Mrs. Slater's School Chronology, and Chart.

Sententim Chronologicæ; or, a Complete System of Ancient and Modern Chronology, contained in Familiar Sentences: intended for the use of Schools and Private Students. By Mrs. JOHN SLATER. New Edition, corrected to the present time. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.—Also,

A Chronological Chart, designed to accompany the "Sententim Chronologicæ," and corrected to correspond with the New Edition of that work. On 2 large sheets, coloured, price 6s.; or mounted on linen on a roller, 9s. 6d.

Mangnall's Questions.—THE ONLY GENUINE & COMPLETE EDITION.

Historical and Miscellaneous Questions, for the Use of Young People; with a Selection of British and General Biography, &c. &c. By R. MANGNALL. New Edition, with the Author's last Corrections, and other very considerable Additions and Improvements. 12mo. 4s. 6d. bound.

Corner's Sequel to Mangnall's Questions.

Questions on the History of Europe: a Sequel to Mangnall's Historical Questions; comprising Questions on the History of the Nations of Continental Europe not comprehended in that work. By JULIA CORNER. New Edition. 12mo. 6s. bound.

Hort's Pantheon.

The New Pantheon; or, an Introduction to the Mythology of the Ancients, in Question and Answer: compiled for the Use of Young Persons. With an Accented Index, Questions for Exercise, and Poetical Illustrations of Grecian Mythology, from Homer and Virgil. By W. J. HORT. New Edition, enlarged. 18mo. with 17 Plates, 6s. 6d. bound.

Hort's Chronology.

An Introduction to the Study of Chronology and Ancient History: in Question and Answer. By W. J. HORT. New Edition. 18mo. 4s. bound.

School Chronology; or, the Great Dates of History.

Drawn up for the use of the Collegiate Schools, Liverpool. New Edition. Square 12mo. 1s. stitched.

Valpy's Poetical Chronology.

Poetical Chronology of Ancient and English History: with Historical and Explanatory Notes. By R. VALPY, D.D. New Edition. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.



GEOMETRY, ARITHMETIC, LAND-SURVEYING,*&c. &c.***Colenso's School Trigonometry.**

Plane Trigonometry. Part I.; with the use of Logarithms. By the Rev. J. W. Colenso, M.A., Rector of Forncett St. Mary, Norfolk, and late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. 12mo. 3s. 6d. boards.—KEY, price 3s. 6d. *in the press.*

Sandhurst College Arithmetic and Algebra.

Elements of Arithmetic and Algebra. By W. SCOTT, Esq. A.M. and F.R.A.S. Examiner in Mathematics of Candidates for Commissions in Her Majesty's Service, and Professor of Mathematics in Sandhurst Military College. New Edition. 8vo. 16s. bound.

Sandhurst College Elements of Euclid.

Elements of Geometry: consisting of the first four, and the sixth, Books of Euclid, chiefly from the Text of Dr. Robert Simson; with the principal Theorems in Proportion, a Course of Practical Geometry on the Ground, &c. By JOHN NARRIEN, F.R.S. and R.A.S. Professor of Mathematics, &c. in Sandhurst Military College. New Edition. 8vo. 10s. 6d. bound.

Sandhurst College Trigonometry.

Plain Trigonometry and Mensuration. By W. SCOTT, Esq. A.M. and F.R.A.S. 8vo. 9s. 6d. bound.

Sandhurst College Astronomy and Geodesy.

Practical Astronomy and Geodesy: including the Projections of the Sphere and Spherical Trigonometry. For the use of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. By JOHN NARRIEN, F.R.S. & R.A.S. 8vo. 14s. bound.

Sandhurst College Analytical Geometry.

Analytical Geometry: with the Properties of Conic Sections: and an Appendix, containing a Treatise on Descriptive Geometry. For the use of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. By J. NARRIEN, F.R.S. and R.A.S. 8vo. 8s. 6d.

Mr. Hodge's Elementary Fortification.

A Catechism of Fortification. Designed for the use of Students preparing for the Examination required by the Commander-in-Chief. By THOMAS HODGE, First Class Prizeman in Fortification at the Royal Military Academy, Woolwich, and Tutor for the Army. Fcp. 8vo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Professor Thomson's Elementary Algebra.

An Elementary Treatise on Algebra, Theoretical and Practical. By JAMES THOMSON, LL.D. Professor of Mathematics in the University of Glasgow. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. cloth.—KEY, 4s. 6d. cloth.

Nesbit: a Complete Treatise on Practical Land

Surveying. For the use of Schools and Students. With 250 Practical Examples. By A. NESBIT. New Edition, corrected and greatly enlarged. To which are now added, Plane Trigonometry, including the use of the Theodolite and Railway Surveying; and Railway Engineering, including the Principles and Practice of Levelling, Planning, Laying out Curves, Cutting and Embanking, Tunnelling, Viaducts, &c. By T. BAKER, Land-Surveyor and Civil Engineer. 8vo. with woodcuts, plates, and an engraved Field-book, 12s. cloth.

Nesbit's Mensuration, and Key.

A Treatise on Practical Mensuration: containing the most approved Methods of drawing Geometrical Figures; Mensuration of Superficies; Land Surveying; Mensuration of Solids; the Use of the Carpenter's Rule; Timber Measure, &c. By A. NESBIT. New Edition. 12mo. with 300 Woodcuts. 6s. bound. KEY. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. bound.

Keith's Treatise on the Use of the Globes.

New Edition, greatly enlarged and improved, by Dr. ALFRED S. TAYLOR, F.R.S. Lecturer on Chemistry, &c. in Guy's Hospital; R. A. LE MESURIER, B.A. Scholar of Corpus Christi College, Oxford; and J. MIDDLETON, Esq. Professor of Astronomy. 12mo. with Plates and Diagrams, 6s. 6d. bound.
 KEY. Adapted to the New Edition, by Prof. MIDDLETON. 12mo. 2s. 6d. cloth.

Keith's Trigonometry.

An Introduction to the Theory and Practice of Plane and Spherical Trigonometry, and the Stereographic Projection of the Sphere, including the Theory of Navigation. By THOMAS KEITH. New Edition, corrected by S. MAYNARD. 8vo. 14s. cloth.

Crocker's Land Surveying.

Crocker's Elements of Land Surveying. New Edition, corrected throughout, and considerably improved and modernized, by T. G. BUNT, Land-Surveyor, Bristol. To which are added, Tables of Six-figure Logarithms, superintended by RICHARD FARLEY, of the Nautical Almanac Establishment. Post 8vo. with Plans, Field-book, &c. 12s. cloth.

Moseley: Illustrations of Practical Mechanics.

By the Rev. H. MOSELEY, M.A. Professor of Natural Philosophy and Astronomy in King's College, London. New Edit. Fcp. 8vo. with Woodcuts, 8s. cloth.

Tate: Exercises on Mechanics and Natural Phi-

losophy; or, an easy introduction to Engineering; containing various Applications of the Principle of Work; the Theory of the Steam Engine with Simple Machines; Theorems and Problems on Accumulated Work, &c. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. New Edition. Fcp. 8vo. 2s. cloth.

Tate's Sequel to his "Exercises on Mechanics."

The Principles of Mechanical Philosophy applied to Industrial Mechanics. Forming a Sequel to the Author's Exercises on Mechanics and Natural Philosophy. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. 12mo. with Wood Engravings. [Nearly ready.]

Mr. Tate's Elementary Work on Mechanism.

The Elements of Mechanism; containing a Familiar Explanation of the Construction of various kinds of Machinery, &c. For the use of Schoolmasters and Private Students. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham; late Mathematical Professor and Lecturer on Chemistry in the National Society's Training College, Battersea. With numerous Wood Engravings. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Tate: Principles of Geometry, Mensuration, Trigo-

nometry, Land-Surveying, and Levelling: containing familiar Demonstrations and Illustrations of the most important Propositions in Euclid's Elements; Proofs of all the useful Rules and Formule in Mensuration and Trigonometry, with their application to the Solution of Practical Problems in Estimation, Surveying, and Railway Engineering. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. New Edition. 12mo. with 317 Diagrams and Woodcuts, 3s. 6d. cloth.

Mr. Thomas Tate's Algebra made Easy.

Algebra made Easy. Chiefly intended for the use of Schools. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. New Edit. 12mo. 2s. cloth.

Tate: Treatise on First Principles of Arithmetic,

after the method of Pestalozzi. Designed for the use of Teachers and Monitors in Elementary Schools. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. New Edition, enlarged and improved. 12mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

Mr. Thomas Tate's Elements of Euclid.

The First Three Books of Euclid's Elements of Geometry; from the Text of Dr. Simson: together with various useful Theorems and Problems, as Geometrical Exercises on each Book. By THOMAS TATE, of Kneller Training College, Twickenham. 12mo. 1s. 6d. cloth.

Colenso's School Arithmetic.

A rithmetic, designed for the use of Schools. By the Rev. J. W. COLLENSO, M.A. Rector of Fornett St. Mary, Norfolk; and late Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. New Edition. Fcp 8vo. 4s. 6d. boards.

KEY. By SAMUEL MAYNARD. 12mo. 6s. boards.

Molineux's Arithmetic, and Key.

An Introduction to Practical Arithmetic; in Two Parts: with various Notes, and occasional Directions for the use of Learners. By T. MOLINEUX, many years Teacher of Accounts and the Mathematics in Macclesfield. In Two Parts. Part 1. 12mo. 2s. 6d. bound.—Part 2. 12mo. 2s. 6d. bound.

KEY to Part 1, 6d.—KEY to Part 2, 6d.

Joyce's Arithmetic, and Key.

A System of Practical Arithmetic, applicable to the present state of Trade and Money Transactions: illustrated by numerous Examples under each Rule. By the Rev. J. JOYCE. New Edition, corrected and improved by S. MAYNARD. 12mo. 3s. bound.—KEY. 18mo. 3s. bound.

Crosby's Walkingame, improved by Maynard.

Crosby's Walkingame's Tutor's Assistant: being a Compendium of Arithmetic, and a complete Question-Book. Containing Arithmetic in Whole Numbers; Vulgar and Decimal Fractions; Practice, Simple and Compound Interest, Alligation, Position, and Arithmetical and Geometrical Progression; Extraction of the Square, Cube, or any Root whatever; Duodecimals, supplemental to Multiplication and Division: with a Collection of Miscellaneous Arithmetical Questions. New Edition, corrected and improved, with considerable additions, by SAMUEL MAYNARD. 12mo. 2s. cloth.—KEY. 12mo. 3s. 6d. cloth.

Nesbit's Arithmetic, and Key.

A Treatise on Practical Arithmetic. By A. NESBIT. New Edition. 12mo. 5s. bd.

A KEY to the same. 12mo. 5s. bound.

PART II. of Nesbit's Practical Arithmetic; containing Fractions, Decimals, Logarithms, Chain-Rule, &c.—KEY to Part II. 12mo. 7s. bound.

Thomson: School Chemistry;

Or, Practical Rudiments of the Science. By ROBERT DUNDAS THOMSON, M.D. Master in Surgery in the University of Glasgow; Lecturer on Chemistry in the same University; and formerly in the Medical Service of the Honourable East India Company. Fcp. 8vo. with Woodcuts, 7s. cloth.

Peschel's Elements of Physics.

The Elements of Physics. By C. F. PESCHEL, Principal of the Royal Military College, Dresden. Translated from the German, with Notes, by E. WMSR. 3 vols. fcp. 8vo. with Woodcuts and Diagrams, 21s. cloth.

Separately { Part 1. The Physics of Ponderable Bodies. Fcp. 8vo. 7s. 6d.
Part 2. Imponderable Bodies (Light, Heat, Magnetism, Electricity, and Electro-Dynamics). 2 vols. fcp. 8vo. 13s. 6d.

Mrs. Lee's Natural History for Schools.

Elements of Natural History; or, First Principles of Zoology: comprising the Principles of Classification, interspersed with amusing and instructive Original Accounts of the most remarkable Animals. By MRS. E. LEE. New Edition, revised and enlarged. 12mo. with numerous Woodcuts, 7s. 6d. bound.



THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

Sandhurst College French Grammar.

A Grammar of the French Tongue. Prepared, by Authority, for the use of the Senior and Junior Departments of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. By G. CAMBIER, Bachelor of Arts in the University of France; Professor of French at the Royal Military College. 12mo. 5s. bound.

Sandhurst College French Reading Book.

Recueil en Prose et en Vers de Morceaux tirés des meilleurs Auteurs Français. Prepared, by Authority, for the use of the Senior and Junior Departments of the Royal Military College, Sandhurst. By G. CAMBIER, Bachelor of Arts in the University of France; Professor of French at the Royal Military College. 12mo. 6s. bound.

Tarver's Eton French Grammar:

Introduction à la Langue usuelle et aux Eléments de la Grammaire Française. By J. C. TARVER, French Master, Eton College. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. bd.

Tarver's Eton French Exercises:

Familiar and Conversational French Exercises, for Writing and viva-voce Practice. By J. C. TARVER, French Master, Eton College. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. 6d. bound.—KEY, 12mo. 3s. bound.

Tarver's French Phraseology.

Phraseologie Expliquée et comparée: in explanation of Idiomatical Phrases, and to serve as Conversational Lessons. By J. C. TARVER, French Master, Eton College. New Edition. 12mo. 3s. bound.

Tarver's Eton French Reading Book.

Choix en Prose et en Vers: suivi de la Phraseologie expliquée et comparée; et précédé de Remarques sur la Construction des Vers Français. By J. C. TARVER, French Master, Eton College. New Edition. 12mo. 7s. 6d. bound.

Separately, { Part I. Choix en Prose, 3s. 6d. bound.
Part II. Choix en Vers, 3s. 6d. bound.
Part III. Phraseologie, 3s. bound.

Tardy's French Dictionary, improved by Tarver.

Tardy's Explanatory Pronouncing Dictionary of the French Language, in French and English; wherein the exact Sound and Articulation of every Syllable is distinctly marked, according to the Principles of the French Pronunciation, developed in a short Treatise. New Edition, corrected and much enlarged. By J. C. TARVER, French Master, Eton. Fcp. 8vo. 7s.

Miss Rowan's Modern French Reading Book.

Morceaux Choisis des Auteurs Modernes, à l'usage de la Jeunesse. With a Translation of the New and Difficult Words and Idiomatic Phrases which occur in the Work. By F. M. ROWAN. Foolscap 8vo. 6s. bound.

Hamel's French Grammar & Exercises, by Lambert.

Hamel's French Grammar and Exercises. A New Edition, in one volume. Carefully corrected, greatly improved, enlarged, and re-arranged, by N. LAMBERT. 12mo. 5s. 6d. bound.

Hamel's French Grammar: the Original Edition.

A New Universal French Grammar; being an accurate System of French Accidence and Syntax. By N. HAMLET. New Edit. improved. 12mo. 4s. bound.

Hamel's French Exercises, Key, and Questions.

French Grammatical Exercises. By N. HAMLET. New Edition, carefully revised and greatly improved. 12mo. 4s. bound.—KEY, 12mo. 3s. bound.

Wilson and Ogilvy, Skinner Street, Snowhill, London.

